



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES



3 3433 07489241 9

LEDOX LIBRARY



15  
Dugckinch Collection.  
Presented in 1878.

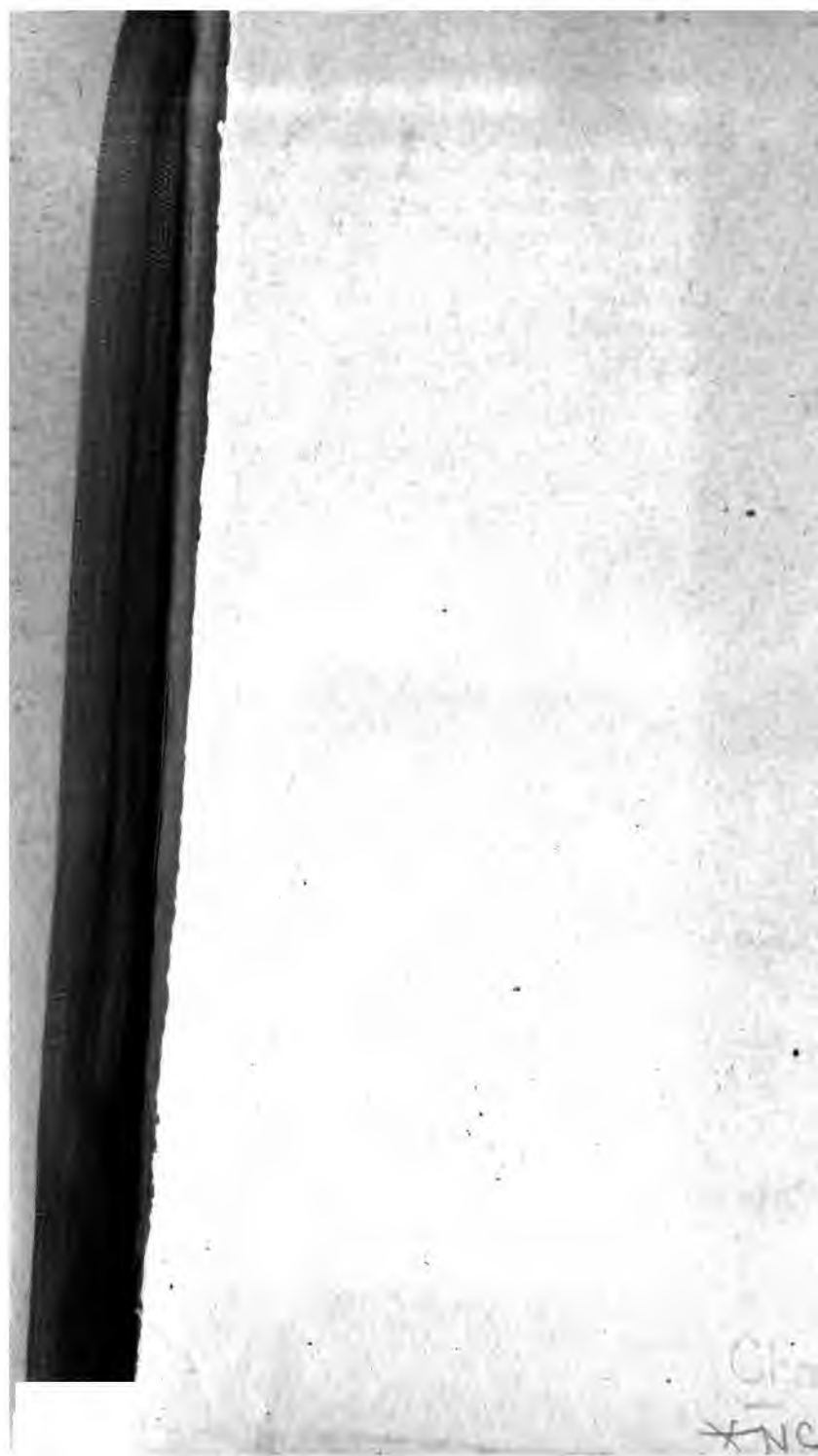




LEDOX LIBRARY

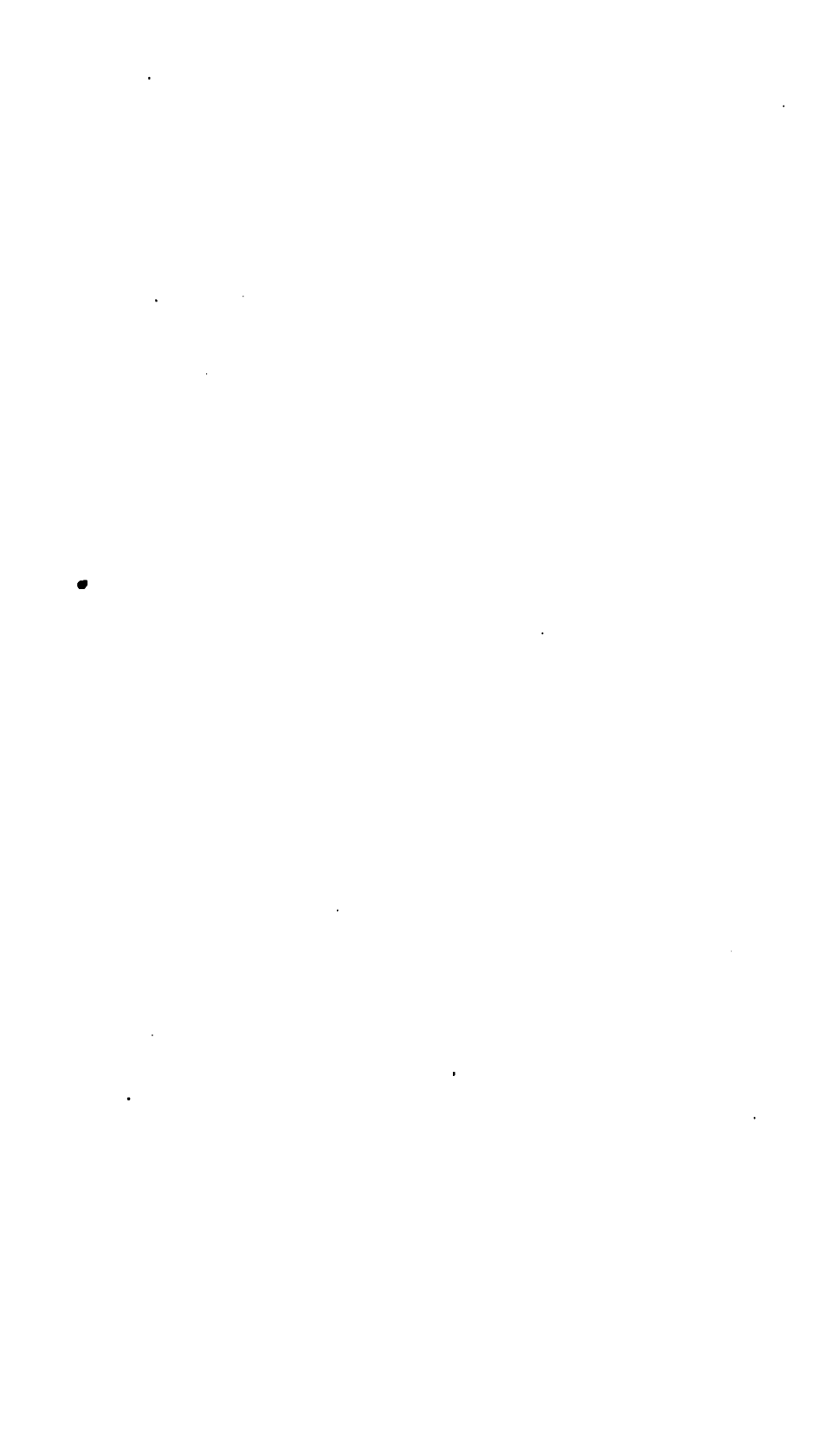


75  
Duxekinck Collection.  
Presented in 1878.









ANCM  
C 43









**THE**  
**P L A Y S**  
**OF**  
**WILLIAM SHAKSPEARE.**

C. Baldwin, Printer,  
New Bridge-street, London.

THE  
P L A Y S  
OF  
WILLIAM SHAKSPEARE,

Accurately printed from the Text of the corrected Copy left by the late

GEORGE STEEVENS, Esq.

WITH

A SERIES OF ENGRAVINGS,

FROM ORIGINAL DESIGNS OF

HENRY FUSELI, Esq. R.A. PROFESSOR OF PAINTING:

AND A SELECTION

OF EXPLANATORY AND HISTORICAL NOTES,

From the most eminent Commentators;

*A History of the Stage, a Life of Shakspeare, &c.*

BY ALEXANDER CHALMERS, A.M.

---

A NEW EDITION.

---

IN NINE VOLUMES.

---

VOLUME IX.

CONTAINING  
ROMEO AND JULIET.  
HAMLET.  
OTHELLO.

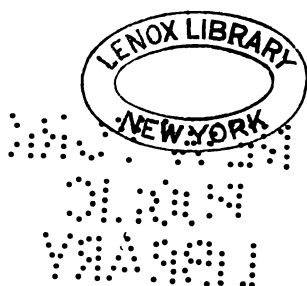
---

LONDON:

Printed for J. Nichols and Son; F. C. and J. Rivington; J. Stockdale;  
W. Lowndes; G. Wilkie and J. Robinson; T. Egerton; J. Walker  
W. Clarke and Son; J. Barker; J. Cuthell; R. Lea; Lackington and  
Co.; J. Deighton; J. White and Co.; B. Crosby and Co.; W. Earle;  
J. Gray and Son; Longman and Co.; Cadell and Davies; J. Harding;  
R. H. Evans; J. Booker; S. Bagster; J. Mawman; Black and Co.;  
J. Richardson; J. Booth; Newman and Co.; R. Pheney; R. Scholey;  
J. Asperne; J. Faulder; R. Baldwin; Cradock and Joy; J. Mackin-  
lay; J. Johnson and Co.; Gale and Curtis; G. Robinson; and Wilson  
and Son, York.

---

1811.



# ROMEO AND JULIET.\*

THE  
FAMOUS  
PASSION  
PLAY

**VOL. IX.**

**B**

2000 2000  
2000 2000  
2000 2000

\* **ROMEO AND JULIET.**] The original relater of the story on which this play is formed, was Luigi da Porto, a gentleman of Vicenza, who died in 1529. His novel did not appear till some years after his death; being first printed at Venice in 1535, under the title of *La Giuletta*. A second edition was published in 1539; and it was again reprinted at the same place in 1553, (without the author's name,) with the following title: *Historia nuovamente ritrovata di due nobili Amanti, con la loro pietosa morte; intervenuta già nella città di Verona, nell tempo del Signor Bartolomeo della Scala. Nuovamente stampata.*

In 1554 Bandello published, at Lucca, a novel on the same subject; [Tom. II. Nov. ix.] and shortly afterwards Boisteau exhibited one in French, founded on the Italian narratives, but varying from them in many particulars. From Boisteau's novel the same story was, in 1562, formed into an English poem, with considerable alterations and large additions, by Mr. Arthur Brooke. This piece was printed by Richard Tottle with the following title, written probably, according to the fashion of that time, by the bookseller: *The Tragicall Hystory of Romeus and Juliet, containing a rare Example of true Constancie: with the subtile Counsels, and Practises of an old Fryer, and their ill event.* It was again published by the same bookseller in 1582. Painter in the second volume of his *Palace of Pleasure*, 1567, published a prose translation from the French of Boisteau, which he entitled *Rhomeo and Julietta*. Shakspeare had probably read Painter's novel, having taken one circumstance from it or some other prose translation of Boisteau; but his play was undoubtedly formed on the poem of Arthur Brooke. This is proved decisively by the following circumstance. 1. In the poem the prince of Verona is called *Escalus*; so also in the play.—In Painter's translation from Boisteau he is named *Signor Escala*; and sometimes *Lord Bartholomew of Escala*. 2. In Painter's novel the family of Romeo are called the *Montesches*; in the poem and in the play, the *Montagues*. 3. The messenger employed by friar Lawrence to carry a letter to Romeo to inform him when Juliet would awake from her trance, is in Painter's translation called *Anselme*: in the poem, and in the play, friar *John* is employed in this business. 4. The circumstance of Capulet's writing down the names of the guests whom he invites to supper, is found in the poem and in the play, but is not mentioned by Painter, nor is it found in the original Italian novel. 5. The residence of the Capulets, in the original, and in Painter, is called *Villa Franca*; in the poem and in the play *Freetown*. 6. Several passages of *Romeo and Juliet* appear to have been formed on hints furnished by the poem, of which no traces are found either in Painter's novel, or in Boisteau, or the original; and several expressions are borrowed from thence, which will be found in their proper places.



As what has been new stated has been controverted, (for what may not be controverted?) I should enter more largely into the subject, but various passages of the poem furnish such a decisive proof of the play's having been constructed upon it, as not to leave, in my apprehension, a shadow of doubt upon the subject. The question is not, whether Shakspeare had read other novels, or other poetical pieces, founded on this story, but whether the poem written by Arthur Brooke was the basis on which this play was built.

With respect to the name of Romeo, this also Shakspeare might have found in the poem; for in one place that name is given to him: or he might have had it from Painter's novel, from which or from some other prose translation of the same story he has, as I have already said, taken one circumstance not mentioned in the poem. In 1570 was entered on the Stationers' books by Henry Bynneman, *The Pitifull Hystory of ij. lovyng Italians*, which I suspect was a prose narrative of the story on which our author's play is constructed.

Breval says in his travels, that on a strict inquiry into the histories of Verona, he found that Shakspeare had varied very little from the truth, either in the names, characters, or other circumstances of his play. MALONE.

It is plain, from more than one circumstance, that Shakspeare had read this novel, both in its prosaick and metrical form. He might likewise have met with other poetical pieces on the same subject. We are not yet at the end of our discoveries relative to the originals of our author's dramatick pieces. STEEVENS.

## PROLOGUE.

---

Two households, both alike in dignity,  
In fair Verona, where we lay our scene,  
From ancient grudge break to new mutiny,  
Where civil blood makes civil hands unclean.  
From forth the fatal loins of these two foes  
A pair of star-cross'd lovers take their life;  
Whose misadventur'd piteous overthrows  
Do, with their death, bury their parents' strife.  
The fearful passage of their death-mark'd love,  
And the continuance of their parents' rage,  
Which, but their children's end, nought could re-  
move,  
Is now the two hours' traffick of our stage;  
The which if you with patient ears attend,  
What here shall miss, our toil shall strive to mend.'

<sup>1</sup> This prologue, after the first copy was published in 1597, received several alterations, both in respect of correctness and versification. In the folio it is omitted.—The play was originally performed by *the Right Hon. the Lord of Hunsdon his servants*.

In the first of King James I. was made an act of parliament for some restraint or limitation of noblemen in the protection of players, or of players under their sanction. STEEVENS.

Under the word PROLOGUE, in the copy of 1599, is printed *Chorus*, which I suppose meant only that the prologue was to be spoken by the same person who personated the chorus at the end of the first Act.

The original prologue, in the quarto of 1597, stands thus:

- "Two household frends, alike in dignitie,
- "In faire Verona, where we lay our scene,
- "From civil broyles broke into enmitie,
- "Whose civill warre makes civill handes uncleane.
- "From forth the fatall loynes of these two foes
- "A paire of starre-crost lovers tooke their life;
- "Whose misadventures, piteous overthrowes,
- "(Through the continuing of their fathers' strife,
- "And death-markt passage of their parents' rage,)
- "Is now the two howres traffique of our stage.
- "The which if you with patient eares attend,
- "What here we want, weell studie to amend." MALONE.

## PERSONS REPRESENTED.

---

Escalus, *Prince of Verona.*

Paris, *a young Nobleman, Kinsman to the Prince.*

Montague, } *Heads of two Houses, at Variance with*  
Capulet, } *each other.*

*An old Man, Uncle to Capulet.*

Romeo, *Son to Montague.*

Mercutio, *Kinsman to the Prince, and Friend to*  
*Romeo.*

Benvolio, *Nephew to Montague, and Friend to*  
*Romeo.*

Tybalt, *Nephew to Lady Capulet.*

Friar Lawrence, *a Franciscan.*

Friar John, *of the same Order.*

Balthazar, *Servant to Romeo.*

Sampson, } *Servants to Capulet.*  
Gregory, }

Abram, *Servant to Montague.*

*An Apothecary.*

*Three Musicians.*

Chorus. *Boy; Page to Paris; Peter; an Officer.*

*Lady Montague, Wife to Montague.*

*Lady Capulet, Wife to Capulet.*

*Juliet, Daughter to Capulet.*

*Nurse to Juliet.*

*Citizens of Verona; several Men and Women,*  
*Relations to both Houses; Maskers, Guards,*  
*Watchmen, and Attendants.*

*SCENE, during the greater Part of the Play, in*  
*Verona: once in the fifth Act, at Mantua.*

# ROMEO AND JULIET.

---

## ACT I.

### SCENE I. *A publick Place.*

*Enter SAMPSON and GREGORY, armed with Swords and Bucklers.*

*Sam.* Gregory, o'my word, we'll not carry coals.<sup>1</sup>

*Gre.* No, for then we should be colliers.

*Sam.* I mean, an we be in choler, we'll draw.

*Gre.* Ay, while you live, draw your neck out of the collar.

*Sam.* I strike quickly, being moved.

*Gre.* But thou art not quickly moved to strike.

*Sam.* A dog of the house of Montague moves me.

*Gre.* To move, is—to stir; and to be valiant, is—to stand to it: therefore, if thou art moved, thou run'st away.

*Sam.* A dog of that house shall move me to stand: I will take the wall of any man or maid of Montague's.

*Gre.* That shows thee a weak slave; for the weakest goes to the wall.

*Sam.* True; and therefore women, being the weaker vessels, are ever thrust to the wall:—there-

<sup>1</sup> ——— *we'll not carry coals.*] A phrase formerly in use to signify the bearing injuries.

fore I will push Montague's men from the wall,  
and thrust his maids to the wall.

*Gre.* The quarrel is between our masters, and us  
their men.

*Sam.* 'Tis all one, I will show myself a tyrant:  
when I have fought with the men, I will be cruel  
with the maids; I will cut off their heads.

*Gre.* The heads of the maids?

*Sam.* Ay, the heads of the maids, or their maid-  
enheads; take it in what sense thou wilt.

*Gre.* They must take it in sense, that feel it.

*Sam.* Me they shall feel, while I am able to stand:  
and, 'tis known, I am a pretty piece of flesh.

*Gre.* 'Tis well thou art not fish; if thou hadst,  
thou hadst been poor John.<sup>2</sup> Draw thy tool; here  
comes two of the house of the Montagues.<sup>3</sup>

*Enter ABRAM and BALTHASAR.*

*Sam.* My naked weapon is out; quarrel, I will  
back thee.

*Gre.* How? turn thy back, and run?

*Sam.* Fear me not.

*Gre.* No, marry: I fear thee!

*Sam.* Let us take the law of our sides; let them  
begin.

*Gre.* I will frown, as I pass by; and let them  
take it as they list.

*Sam.* Nay, as they dare. I will bite my thumb at  
them; which is a disgrace to them, if they bear it.

*Abr.* Do you bite your thumb at us, sir?

*Sam.* I do bite my thumb, sir.

<sup>2</sup> ——— *poor John.*] is hake, dried, and salted.

<sup>3</sup> ——— *here comes two of the house of the Montagues.*] It should  
be observed, that the partizans of the Montague family wore a  
token in their hats, in order to distinguish them from their ene-  
mies, the Capulets. Hence throughout this play, they are known  
at a distance.

*Abr.* Do you bite your thumb at us, sir?

*Sam.* Is the law on our side, if I say—ay?

*Gre.* No.

*Sam.* No, sir, I do not bite my thumb at you, sir; but I bite my thumb, sir.

*Gre.* Do you quarrel, sir?

*Abr.* Quarrel, sir? no, sir.

*Sam.* If you do, sir, I am for you; I serve as good a man as you.

*Abr.* No better.

*Sam.* Well, sir.

*Enter BENVOLIO, at a Distance.*

*Gre.* Say—better; here comes one of my master's kinsmen.

*Sam.* Yes, better, sir.

*Abr.* You lie.

*Sam.* Draw, if you be men.—Gregory, remember thy swashing blow. *[They fight.]*

*Ben.* Part, fools; put up your swords; you know not what you do. *[Beats down their swords.]*

*Enter TYBALT.*

*Tyb.* What, art thou drawn among these heartless hinds?

Turn thee, Benvolio, look upon thy death.

*Ben.* I do but keep the peace; put up thy sword, Or manage it to part these men with me.

*Tyb.* What, drawn, and talk of peace? I hate the word,

As I hate hell, all Montagues, and thee:

Have at thee, coward. *[They fight.]*

*Enter several Partizans of both Houses, who join the Fray; then enter Citizens, with Clubs.*

1 *Cit.* Clubs, bills,<sup>4</sup> and partizans! strike! beat them down!

Down with the Capulets! down with the Montagues!

*Enter CAPULET, in his Gown; and Lady CAPULET.*

*Cap.* What noise is this?—Give me my long sword, ho!

*La. Cap.* A crutch, a crutch!—Why call you for a sword?

*Cap.* My sword, I say!—Old Montague is come, And flourishes his blade in spite of me.

*Enter MONTAGUE and Lady MONTAGUE.*

*Mon.* Thou villain Capulet,—Hold me not, let me go.

*La. Mon.* Thou shalt not stir one foot to seek a foe.

*Enter Prince, with Attendants.*

*Prin.* Rebellious subjects, enemies to peace,  
Profaners of this neighbour-stained steel,—  
Will they not hear?—what ho! you men, you  
beasts,—

That quench the fire of your pernicious rage  
With purple fountains issuing from your veins,  
On pain of torture, from those bloody hands  
Throw your mis-temper'd weapons<sup>5</sup> to the ground,

<sup>4</sup> Clubs, bills, &c.] When an affray arose in the streets, *clubs* was the usual exclamation.

<sup>5</sup> — mis-temper'd weapons — ] are angry weapons.

And hear the sentence of your moved prince.—  
 Three civil brawls, bred of an airy word,  
 By thee, old Capulet, and Montague,  
 Have thrice disturb'd the quiet of our streets ;  
 And made Verona's ancient citizens  
 Cast by their grave beseeeming ornaments,  
 To wield old partizans, in hands as old,  
 Canker'd with peace, to part your canker'd hate :  
 If ever you disturb our streets again,  
 Your lives shall pay the forfeit of the peace.  
 For this time, all the rest depart away :  
 You, Capulet, shall go along with me ;  
 And, Montague, come you this afternoon,  
 To know our further pleasure in this case,  
 To old Free-town, or common judgment-place.  
 Once more, on pain of death, all men depart.

[*Exeunt Prince, and Attendants; CAPULET,  
 Lady CAPULET, TYBALT, Citizens, and  
 Servants.*]

*Mon* Whoset this ancient quarrel new abroad?—  
 Speak, nephew, were you by, when it began?

*Ben.* Here were the servants of your adversary,  
 And yours, close fighting ere I did approach :  
 I drew to part them ; in the instant came  
 The fiery Tybalt, with his sword prepar'd ;  
 Which, as he breath'd defiance to my ears,  
 He swung about his head, and cut the winds,  
 Who, nothing hurt withal, hiss'd him in scorn :  
 While we were interchanging thrusts and blows,  
 Came more and more, and fought on part and part,  
 Till the prince came, who parted either part.

*La. Mon.* O, where is Romeo!—saw you him  
 to-day?

Right glad I am, he was not at this fray.

*Ben.* Madam, an hour before the worshipp'd sun  
 Peer'd forth the golden window of the east,  
 A troubled mind drave me to walk abroad ;



Where,—underneath the grove of sycamore,  
 That wesward rooteth from the city's side,—  
 So early walking did I see your son :  
 Towards him I made ; but he was 'ware of me,  
 And stole into the covert of the wood :  
 I, measuring his affections by my own,—  
 That most are busied when they are most alone,—  
 Pursu'd my humour, not pursuing his,  
 And gladly shunn'd who gladly fled from me.

*Mon.* Many a morning hath he there been seen,  
 With tears augmenting the fresh morning's dew,  
 Adding to clouds more clouds with his deep sighs :  
 But all so soon as the all-cheering sun  
 Should in the further east begin to draw  
 The shady curtains from Aurora's bed,  
 Away from light steals home my heavy son,  
 And private in his chamber pens himself ;  
 Shuts up his windows, locks fair daylight out,  
 And makes himself an artificial night :  
 Black and portentous must this humour prove,  
 Unless good counsel may the cause remove.

*Ben.* My noble uncle, do you know the cause ?

*Mon.* I neither know it, nor can learn of him.

*Ben.* Have you importun'd him by any means ?

*Mon.* Both by myself, and many other friends :  
 But he, his own affections' counsellor,  
 Is to himself—I will not say, how true—  
 But to himself so secret and so close,  
 So far from sounding and discovery,  
 As is the bud bit with an envious worm,  
 Ere he can spread his sweet leaves to the air,  
 Or dedicate his beauty to the sun.  
 Could we but learn from whence his sorrows grow,  
 We would as willingly give cure, as know.

*Enter ROMEO, at a distance.*

*Ben.* See, where he comes : So please you, step aside ;

I'll know his grievance, or be much denied.

*Mon.* I would, thou wert so happy by thy stay,  
To hear true shrift.—Come, madam, let's away.

*[Exeunt MONTAGUE and Lady.]*

*Ben.* Good morrow, cousin.

*Rom.* Is the day so young ?

*Ben.* But new struck nine.

*Rom.* Ah me ! sad hours seem long.  
Was that my father that went hence so fast ?

*Ben.* It was :—What sadness lengthens Romeo's hours ?

*Rom.* Not having that, which, having, makes them short.

*Ben.* In love ?

*Rom.* Out.—

*Ben.* Of love ?

*Rom.* Out of her favour, where I am in love.

*Ben.* Alas, that love, so gentle in his view,  
Should be so tyrannous and rough in proof !

*Rom.* Alas, that love, whose view is muffled still,  
Should, without eyes, see pathways to his will !<sup>6</sup>  
Where shall we dine ?—O me !—What fray was  
here ?

Yet tell me not, for I have heard it all.

Here's much to do with hate, but more with love :—

Why then, O brawling love ! O loving hate !

O any thing, of nothing first create !

O heavy lightness ! serious vanity !

Mis-shapen chaos of well-seeming forms !

<sup>6</sup> — to his will !] i. e. that the blind god should yet be able to direct his arrows at those whom he wishes to hit, that he should wound whomever he wills, or desires to wound.

Feather of lead, bright smoke, cold fire, sick health!  
 Still-waking sleep, that is not what it is!—  
 This love feel I, that feel no love in this.  
 Dost thou not laugh?

*Ben.* No, coz, I rather weep.

*Rom.* Good heart, at what?

*Ben.* At thy good heart's oppression.

*Rom.* Why, such is love's transgression.<sup>7</sup>—

Griefs of mine own lie heavy in my breast;  
 Which thou wilt propagate, to have it prest  
 With more of thine: this love, that thou hast  
 shown,

Doth add more grief to too much of mine own.

Love is a smoke rais'd with the fume of sighs;

Being purg'd, a fire sparkling in lovers' eyes;

Being vex'd, a sea nourish'd with lovers' tears:

What is it else? a madness most discreet,

A choking gall, and a preserving sweet.

Farewell, my coz. [Going.

*Ben.* Soft, I will go along;

An if you leave me so, you do me wrong.

*Rom.* Tut, I have lost myself; I am not here;

This is not Romeo, he's some other where.

*Ben.* Tell me in sadness,<sup>8</sup> who she is you love.

*Rom.* What, shall I groan, and tell thee?

*Ben.* Groan? why, no;

But sadly tell me, who.

*Rom.* Bid a sick man in sadness make his will:—

Ah, word ill urg'd to one that is so ill!—

In sadness, cousin, I do love a woman.

*Ben.* I aim'd so near, when I suppos'd you lov'd.

*Rom.* A right good marks-man!—And she's fair  
 I love.

*Ben.* A right fair mark, fair coz, is soonest hit.

<sup>7</sup> *Why, such is love's transgression.*] Such is the consequence of unskilful and mistaken kindness.

<sup>8</sup> *Tell me in sadness,*] That is, *gravely*, or *seriously*.

*Rom.* Well, in that hit, you miss: she'll not be hit  
With Cupid's arrow, she hath Dian's wit;  
And, in strong proof of chastity well arm'd,<sup>9</sup>  
From love's weak childish bow she lives unharm'd.  
She will not stay the siege of loving terms,  
Nor bide the encounter of assailing eyes,  
Nor ope her lap to saint-seducing gold:  
O, she is rich in beauty; only poor,  
That, when she dies, with beauty dies her store.

*Ben.* Then she hath sworn, that she will still live  
chaste?

*Rom.* She hath, and in that sparing makes huge  
waste;  
For beauty, starv'd with her severity,  
Cuts beauty off from all posterity.  
She is too fair, too wise; wisely too fair,<sup>1</sup>  
To merit bliss by making me despair:  
She hath forsworn to love; and, in that vow,  
Do I live dead, that live to tell it now.

*Ben.* Be rul'd by me, forget to think of her.

*Rom.* O, teach me how I should forget to think.

*Ben.* By giving liberty unto thine eyes;  
Examine other beauties.

*Rom.* 'Tis the way  
To call hers, exquisite, in question more:<sup>2</sup>

<sup>9</sup> *And, in strong proof, &c.*] As this play was written in the reign of Queen Elizabeth, I cannot help regarding these speeches of Romeo as an oblique compliment to her majesty, who was not liable to be displeased at hearing her chastity praised after she was suspected to have lost it, or her beauty commended in the 67th year of her age, though she never possessed any when she was young. Her declaration that she would continue unmarried, increases the probability of the present supposition. STEEVENS.

<sup>1</sup> — *wisely too fair, &c.*] There is in her too much sanctimonious wisdom united with beauty, which induces her to continue chaste with the hopes of attaining heavenly bliss.

<sup>2</sup> *To call hers, exquisite, in question more :*] More into talk; to make her unparalleled beauty more the subject of thought and conversation.

These happy masks,<sup>3</sup> that kiss fair ladies' brows,  
 Being black, put us in mind they hide the fair;  
 He, that is stricken blind, cannot forget  
 The precious treasure of his eyesight lost:  
 Show me a mistress that is passing fair,  
 What doth her beauty serve,<sup>4</sup> but as a note  
 Where I may read, who pass'd that passing fair?  
 Farewell; thou canst not teach me to forget.

*Ben.* I'll pay that doctrine, or else die in debt.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.

*A Street.*

*Enter CAPULET, PARIS, and Servant.*

*Cap.* And Montague is bound as well as I,  
 In penalty alike; and 'tis not hard, I think,  
 For men so old as we to keep the peace.

*Par.* Of honourable reckoning are you both;  
 And pity 'tis, you liv'd at odds so long.  
 But now, my lord, what say you to my suit?

*Cap.* But saying o'er what I have said before:  
 My child is yet a stranger in the world,  
 She hath not seen the change of fourteen years;  
 Let two more summers wither in their pride,  
 Ere we may think her ripe to be a bride.

*Par.* Younger than she are happy mothers made.

*Cap.* And too soon marr'd are those so early made.  
 The earth hath swallow'd all my hopes but she,  
 She is the hopeful lady of my earth:<sup>5</sup>

<sup>3</sup> These *happy masks*, &c.] i. e. the masks worn by female spectators of the play.

<sup>4</sup> What doth her beauty serve,] i. e. what end does it answer?

<sup>5</sup> She is the hopeful lady of my earth:] This is a Gallicism: *Fille de terre* is the French phrase for an heiress.

But woo her, gentle Paris, get her heart,  
 My will to her consent is but a part ;<sup>6</sup>  
 An she agree, within her scope of choice  
 Lies my consent and fair according voice.  
 This night I hold an old accustom'd feast,  
 Whereto I have invited many a guest.  
 Such as I love ; and you, among the store,  
 One more, most welcome, makes my number more.  
 At my poor house, look to behold this night  
 Earth-treading stars, that make dark heaven light :  
 Such comfort, as do lusty young men feel  
 When well apparell'd April on the heel  
 Of limping winter treads, even such delight  
 Among fresh female buds shall you this night  
 Inherit at my house ;<sup>7</sup> hear all, all see,  
 And like her most, whose merit most shall be :  
 Such, amongst view of many, mine, being one,  
 May stand in number, though in reckoning none.  
 Come, go with me ;—Go, sirrah, trudge about  
 Through fair Verona ; find those persons out,  
 Whose names are written there, [*Gives a Paper.*]  
 and to them say,  
 My house and welcome on their pleasure stay.

[*Exeunt CAPULET and PARIS.*]

*Serv.* Find them out, whose names are written here? It is written—that the shoemaker should meddle with his yard, and the taylor with his last, the fisher with his pencil, and the painter with his nets ; but I am sent to find those persons, whose names are here writ, and can never find what names the writing person hath here writ. I must to the learned :—In good time.

<sup>6</sup> *My will to her consent is but a part ;*] To, in this instance, signifies in comparison with, in proportion to.

<sup>7</sup> *Inherit at my house ;*] To inherit, in the language of Shakespeare's age, is to possess.

*Enter BENVOLIO and ROMEO.*

*Ben.* Tut, man! one fire burns out another's  
burning,

One pain is lessen'd by another's anguish;

Turn giddy, and be holp by backward turning;

One desperate grief cures with another's languish:

Take thou some new infection to thy eye,

And the rank poison of the old will die.

*Rom.* Your plantain leaf is excellent for that.\*

*Ben.* For what, I pray thee?

*Rom.* For your broken shin.

*Ben.* Why, Romeo, art thou mad?

*Rom.* Not mad, but bound more than a madman  
is:

Shut up in prison, kept without my food,

Whipp'd, and tormented, and—Good-e'en, good  
fellow.

*Serv.* God gi' good e'en.—I pray, sir, can you  
read?

*Rom.* Ay, mine own fortune in my misery.

*Serv.* Perhaps you have learn'd it without book:

But I pray, can you read any thing you see?

*Rom.* Ay, if I know the letters, and the language.

*Serv.* Ye say honestly; Rest you merry!

*Rom.* Stay, fellow: I can read. [*Reads.*

*Signior Martino, and his wife, and daughters;  
County Anselme, and his beauteous sisters; The lady  
widow of Vitruvio; Signior Placentio, and his lovely  
nieces Mercutio, and his brother Valentine; Mine  
uncle Capulet, his wife, and daughters; My fair  
niece Rosaline; Livia; Signior Valentio, and his  
cousin Tybalt; Lucio, and the lively Helena.*

\* *Your plantain leaf is excellent for that,*] The plantain leaf is  
a blood-stauncher, and was formerly applied to green wounds.

A fair assembly ; [*Gives back the Note.*] Whither should they come ?

*Serv.* Up.

*Rom.* Whither ?

*Serv.* To supper ; to our house.

*Rom.* Whose house ?

*Serv.* My master's.

*Rom.* Indeed, I should have asked you that before.

*Serv.* Now I'll tell you without asking: My master is the great rich Capulet ; and if you be not of the house of Montagues, I pray, come and crush a cup of wine.<sup>9</sup> Rest you merry. [*Exit.*]

*Ben.* At this same ancient feast of Capulet's  
Supps the fair Rosaline, whom thou so lov'st ;  
With all the admired beauties of Verona :  
Go thither ; and, with unattainted eye,  
Compare her face with some that I shall show,  
And I will make thee think thy swan a crow.

*Rom.* When the devout religion of mine eye  
Maintains such falsehood, then turn tears to fires !  
And these,—who, often drown'd, could never die,—  
Transparent hereticks, be burnt for liars !  
One fairer than my love ! the all-seeing sun  
Ne'er saw her match, since first the world begun.

*Ben.* Tut ! you saw her fair, none else being by,  
Herself pois'd with herself in either eye :  
But in those crystal scales, let there be weigh'd  
Your lady's love<sup>1</sup> against some other maid  
That I will show you, shining at this feast,  
And she shall scant show well, that now shows best.

*Rom.* I'll go along, no such sight to be shown,  
But to rejoice in splendour of mine own. [*Exeunt.*]

<sup>9</sup> — crush a cup of wine,] This cant expression seems to have been once common among low people. We still stay, in cant language—to crack a bottle.

<sup>1</sup> Your lady's love—] Your lady's love is the love you bear to your lady.



## SCENE III.

*A Room in Capulet's House.**Enter Lady CAPULET and Nurse.*

*La. Cap.* Nurse, where's my daughter? call her forth to me.

*Nurse.* Now, by my maiden-head,—at twelve year old,—

I bade her come.—What, lamb! what, lady-bird!—God forbid!—where's this girl?—what, Juliet!

*Enter JULIET.*

*Jul.* How now, who calls?

*Nurse.* Your mother.

*Jul.* Madam, I am here.

What is your will?

*La. Cap.* This is the matter:—Nurse, give leave awhile,

We must talk in secret.—Nurse, come back again; I have remember'd me, thou shalt hear our counsel. Thou know'st, my daughter's of a pretty age.

*Nurse.* Faith, I can tell her age unto an hour.

*La. Cap.* She's not fourteen.

*Nurse.* I'll lay fourteen of my teeth,  
And yet, to my teen<sup>a</sup> be it spoken, I have but four,—

She is not fourteen—How long is it now  
To Lammas-tide?

*La. Cap.* A fortnight, and odd days.

*Nurse.* Even or odd, of all days in the year,  
Come Lammas-eve at night, shall she be fourteen.  
Susan and she,—God rest all Christian souls!—

<sup>a</sup> — to my teen—] To my sorrow.

Were of an age.—Well, Susan is with God;  
 She was too good for me: But, as I said,  
 On Lammas-eve at night shall she be fourteen;  
 That shall she, marry; I remember it well.  
 'Tis since the earthquake now eleven years;  
 And she was wean'd,—I never shall forget it,—  
 Of all the days of the year, upon that day:  
 For I had then laid wormwood to my dug,  
 Sitting in the sun under the dove-house wall,  
 My lord and you were then at Mantua:—  
 Nay, I do bear a brain:<sup>3</sup>—but, as I said,  
 When it did taste the wormwood on the nipple  
 Of my dug, and felt it bitter, pretty fool!  
 To see it tetchy, and fall out with the dug.  
 Shake, quoth the dove-house: 'twas no need, I trow,  
 To bid me trudge.

And since that time it is eleven years:  
 For then she could stand alone; nay, by the rood,  
 She could have run and waddled all about.  
 For even the day before, she broke her brow:  
 And then my husband—God be with his soul!  
 'A was a merry man;—took up the child:  
*Yea, quoth he, dost thou fall upon thy face?*  
*Thou wilt fall backward, when thou hast more wit;*  
*Wilt thou not, Jule?* and, by my holy dam,  
 The pretty wretch left crying, and said—*Ay:*  
 To see now, how a jest shall come about!  
 I warrant, an I should live a thousand years,  
 I never should forget it; *Wilt thou not Jule?* quoth  
 he:

And, pretty fool, it stinted,<sup>4</sup> and said—*Ay.*

*La. Cap.* Enough of this; I pray thee, hold thy  
 peace.

<sup>3</sup> *Nay, I do bear a brain:]* That is, I have a perfect remembrance or recollection.

<sup>4</sup> — *it stinted,*] i. e. it stopped, it forbore from weeping.

*Nurse.* Yes, madam; yet I cannot choose but laugh,

To think it should leave crying, and say—*Ay*:

And yet, I warrant, it had upon its brow

A bump as big as a young cockrel's stone;

A parlous knock; and it cried bitterly.

*Yea*, quoth my husband, *fell'st upon thy face?*

*Thou wilt fall backward, when thou com'st to age;*

*Wilt thou not, Jule?* it stinted, and said—*Ay*.

*Jul.* And stint thou too, I pray thee, nurse, say I.

*Nurse.* Peace, I have done. God mark thee to his grace!

Thou wast the prettiest babe that e'er I nurs'd:

An I might live to see thee married once,

I have my wish.

*La. Cap.* Marry, that marry is the very theme

I came to talk of:—Tell me, daughter Juliet,

How stands your disposition to be married?

*Jul.* It is an honour that I dream not of.

*Nurse.* An honour! were not I thine only nurse, I'd say, thou hadst suck'd wisdom from thy teat.

*La. Cap.* Well, think of marriage now; younger than you,

Here in Verona, ladies of esteem,

Are made already mothers: by my count,

I was your mother much upon these years

That you are now a maid. Thus then, in brief;—

The valiant Paris seeks you for his love.

*Nurse.* A man, young lady! lady, such a man, As all the world—Why, he's a man of wax.<sup>s</sup>

*La. Cap.* Verona's summer hath not such a flower.

*Nurse.* Nay, he's a flower; in faith, a very flower.

*La. Cap.* What say you? can you love the gentleman?

<sup>s</sup> — a man of wax.] Well made, as if he had been modelled in wax.

This night you shall behold him at our feast :  
 Read o'er the volume of young Paris' face,  
 And find delight writ there with beauty's pen;  
 Examine every married lineament,  
 And see how one another lends content ;  
 And what obscur'd in this fair volume lies,  
 Find written in the margin of his eyes.<sup>6</sup>  
 This precious book of love, this unbound lover,  
 To beautify him, only lacks a cover :  
 The fish lives in the sea ;<sup>7</sup> and 'tis much pride,  
 For fair without the fair within to hide :  
 That book in many's eyes doth share the glory,  
 That in gold clasps locks in the golden story ;  
 So shall you share all that he doth possess,  
 By having him, making yourself no less.

*Nurse.* No less? nay, bigger ; women grow by men.

*La. Cap.* Speak briefly, can you like of Paris' love?

*Jul.* I'll look to like, if looking liking move :  
 But no more deep will I endart mine eye,  
 Than your consent gives strength to make it fly.

*Enter a Servant.*

*Serv.* Madam, the guests are come, supper served up, you called, my young lady asked for, the nurse cursed in the pantry, and every thing in extremity. I must hence to wait ; I beseech you, follow straight.

*La. Cap.* We follow thee.—Juliet, the county stays.

*Nurse.* Go, girl, seek happy nights to happy days. [*Exeunt.*]

<sup>6</sup> — the margin of his eyes.] The comments on ancient books were always printed in the margin.

<sup>7</sup> The fish lives in the sea ; &c.] i. e. is not yet caught.

## SCENE IV.

*A Street.*

*Enter ROMEO, MERCUTIO, BENVOLIO, with five or six Maskers, Torch-Bearers, and Others.*

*Rom.* What, shall this speech be spoke for our excuse?

Or shall we on without apology?

*Ben.* The date is out of such prolixity:<sup>8</sup>  
We'll have no Cupid hood-wink'd with a scarf,  
Bearing a Tartar's painted bow of lath,  
Scaring the ladies like a crow-keeper;  
Nor no without-book prologue, faintly spoke  
After the prompter, for our entrance:  
But, let them measure us by what they will,  
We'll measure them a measure,<sup>9</sup> and be gone.

*Rom.* Give me a torch,<sup>1</sup>—I am not for this ambling;  
Being but heavy, I will bear the light.

*Mer.* Nay, gentle Romeo, we must have you dance.

*Rom.* Not I, believe me: you have dancing shoes,  
With nimble soles: I have a soul of lead,  
So stakes me to the ground, I cannot move.

*Mer.* You a lover; borrow Cupid's wings,  
And soar with them above a common bound.

*Rom.* I am too sore enpierced with his shaft,  
To soar with his light feathers; and so bound,

<sup>8</sup> *The date is out of such prolixity:]* Introductory speeches are out of date or fashion.

<sup>9</sup> *We'll measure them a measure,]* i. e. a dance.

<sup>1</sup> *Give me a torch,]* A torch-bearer seems to have been a constant appendage on every troop of masks, and was not reckoned a degrading office.

I cannot bound a pitch above dull woe :  
Under love's heavy burden do I sink.

*Mer.* And, to sink in it, should you burden love;  
Too great oppression for a tender thing.

*Rom.* Is love a tender thing? it is too rough,  
Too rude, too boist'rous; and it pricks like thorn.

*Mer.* If love be rough with you, be rough with  
love;  
Prick love for pricking, and you beat love down.—  
Give me a case to put my visage in:

[*Putting on a Mask.*

A visor for a visor!—what care I,  
What curious eye doth quote deformities?<sup>2</sup>  
Here are the beetle-brows, shall blush for me.

*Ben.* Come, knock, and enter; and no sooner in,  
But every man betake him to his legs.

*Rom.* A torch for me: let wantons, light of heart,  
Tickle the senseless rushes with their heels;<sup>3</sup>  
For I am proverb'd with a grandsire phrase,—  
I'll be a candle-holder, and look on,—  
The game was ne'er so fair, and I am done.<sup>4</sup>

*Mer.* Tut! dun's the mouse, the constable's own  
word:

If thou art dun, we'll draw thee from the mire  
Of this (save reverence) love, wherein thou stick'st  
Up to the ears.—Come, we burn day-light, ho.

*Rom.* Nay, that's not so.

*Mer.* I mean, sir, in delay  
We waste our lights in vain, like lamps by day.

<sup>2</sup> ——— doth quote deformities? To quote is to observe.

<sup>3</sup> Tickle the senseless rushes with their heels; It has been already  
observed, that it was anciently the custom to strew rooms with  
rushes, before carpets were in use.

<sup>4</sup> I'll be a candle-holder, and look on,—

The game was ne'er so fair, and I am done.] An allusion to  
an old proverbial saying, which advises to give over when the  
game is at the fairest.

Take our good meaning ; for our judgment sits  
Five times in that, ere once in our five wits.

*Rom.* And we mean well, in going to this mask ;  
But 'tis no wit to go.

*Mer.* Why, may one ask ?

*Rom.* I dreamt a dream to-night.

*Mer.* And so did I.

*Rom.* Well, what was yours ?

*Mer.* That dreamers often lie.

*Rom.* In bed, asleep, while they do dream things  
true.

*Mer.* O, then, I see, queen Mab hath been with  
you.

She is the fairies' midwife ;<sup>5</sup> and she comes  
In shape no bigger than an agate-stone  
On the fore-finger of an alderman,  
Drawn with a team of little atomies<sup>6</sup>  
Athwart men's noses as they lie asleep :  
Her waggon-spokes made of long spinners' legs ;  
The cover, of the wings of grasshoppers ;  
The traces, of the smallest spider's web ;  
The collars, of the moonshine's wat'ry beams :  
Her whip, of cricket's bone ; the lash, of film :

<sup>5</sup> *She is the fairies' midwife ;*] I apprehend, and with no violence of interpretation, that by " the fairies' midwife," the poet means, *the midwife among the fairies*, because it was her peculiar employment to steal the new-born babe in the night, and to leave another in its place. The poet here uses her *general* appellation, and character, which yet has so far a proper reference to the present train of fiction, as that her illusions were practised on persons in bed or asleep ; for she not only haunted women in childbed, but was likewise the incubus or night-mare. Shakspeare, by employing her here, alludes at large to her midnight pranks performed on sleepers : but denominates her from the most notorious one, of her personating the drowsy midwife, who was insensibly carried away into some distant water, and substituting a new birth in the bed or cradle. It would clear the appellation to read the *fairy midwife*. The poet avails himself of Mab's appropriate province, by giving her this nocturnal agency. T. WARTON.

<sup>6</sup> *— of little atomies —*] An obsolete substitute for *atoms*.

Her waggoner, a small grey-coated gnat,  
 Not half so big as a round little worm  
 Prick'd from the lazy finger of a maid :  
 Her chariot is an empty hazel-nut,  
 Made by the joiner squirrel, or old grub,  
 Time out of mind the fairies' coach-makers.  
 And in this state she gallops night by night  
 Through lovers' brains, and then they dream of love :  
 On courtiers' knees, that dream on court'sies  
 straight :

O'er lawyers' fingers, who straight dream on fees :  
 O'er ladies' lips, who straight on kisses dream ;  
 Which oft the angry Mab with blisters plagues,  
 Because their breaths with sweet-meats tainted are.  
 Sometime she gallops o'er a courtier's nose,  
 And then dreams he of smelling out a suit :<sup>7</sup>  
 And sometimes comes she with a tithe-pig's tail,  
 Tickling a parson's nose as 'a lies asleep,  
 Then dreams he of another benefice :  
 Sometime she driveth o'er a soldier's neck,  
 And then dreams he of cutting foreign throats,  
 Of breaches, ambuscadoes, Spanish blades,<sup>8</sup>  
 Of healths five fathom deep ; and then anon  
 Drums in his ear ; at which he starts, and wakes ;  
 And, being thus frightened, swears a prayer or two,  
 And sleeps again. This is that very Mab,  
 That plats the manes of horses in the night ;  
 And bakes the elf-locks<sup>9</sup> in foul sluttish hairs,  
 Which, once untangled, much misfortune bodes.  
 This is the hag, when maids lie on their backs,

<sup>7</sup> *And then dreams he of smelling out a suit, &c.*] In our author's time, a court solicitation was called, simply, a *suit*, and a process, a *suit at law*, to distinguish it from the other.

<sup>8</sup> ——— *Spanish blades,*] A sword is called a toledo, from the excellence of the Toletan steel.

<sup>9</sup> *And bakes the elf-locks, &c.*] This was a common superstition; and seems to have had its rise from the horrid disease called the Plica Polonica.



That presses them, and learns them first to bear,  
Making them women of good carriage.

This, this is she—

*Rom.* Peace, peace, Mercutio, peace;  
Thou talk'st of nothing.

*Mer.* True, I talk of dreams;  
Which are the children of an idle brain,  
Begot of nothing but vain fantasy;  
Which is as thin of substance as the air;  
And more inconstant than the wind, who wooes  
Even now the frozen bosom of the north,  
And, being anger'd, puffs away from thence,  
Turning his face to the dew-dropping south.

*Ben.* This wind, you talk of, blows us from ourselves;  
Supper is done, and we shall come too late.

*Rom.* I fear, too early: for my mind misgives,  
Some consequence, yet hanging in the stars,  
Shall bitterly begin his fearful date  
With this night's revels; and expire the term  
Of a despised life, clos'd in my breast,  
By some vile forfeit of untimely death:  
But He, that hath the steerage of my course,  
Direct my sail!—On, lusty gentlemen.

*Ben.* Strike, drum. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE V.

*A Hall in Capulet's House.*

*Musicians waiting. Enter Servants.*

1 *Serv.* Where's Potpan, that he helps not to  
take away? he shift a trencher! he scrape a trencher!

2 *Serv.* When good manners shall lie all in one  
or two men's hands, and they unwashed too, 'tis a  
foul thing.

1 *Serv.* Away with the joint-stools, remove the court-cupboard,<sup>1</sup> look to the plate:—good thou, save me a piece of marchpane;<sup>2</sup> and, as thou lovest me, let the porter let in Susan Grindstone, and Nell.—Antony! and Potpan!

2 *Serv.* Ay, boy; ready.

1 *Serv.* You are looked for, and called for, asked for, and sought for, in the great chamber.

2 *Serv.* We cannot be here and there too.—Cheerly, boys; be brisk a while, and the longer liver take all.  
[*They retire behind.*]

*Enter CAPULET, &c. with the Guests, and the Maskers.*

*Cap.* Gentlemen, welcome! ladies, that have their toes

Unplagu'd with corns, will have a bout with you:—

Ah ha, my mistresses! which of you all

Will now deny to dance? she that makes dainty, she,

I'll swear, hath corns; Am I come near you now?

You are welcome, gentlemen! I have seen the day,

That I have worn a visor; and could tell

A whispering tale in a fair lady's ear,

Such as would please;—'tis gone, 'tis gone, 'tis gone:

You are welcome, gentlemen!—Come, musicians, play.

<sup>1</sup> ——— *court-cupboard,*] The *court-cupboard* perhaps served the purpose of what we call at present the *side-board*. The use which now is made of those *cupboards* is to display at publick festivals the *flaggons, cans, cups, beakers*, and other antique silver vessels of the company, some of which, (with the names of the donors inscribed on them) are remarkably large.

<sup>2</sup> ——— *save me a piece of marchpane;*] *Marchpanes* were composed of filberts, almonds, pistachoes, pine-kernels, and sugar of roses, with a small proportion of flour.

A hall! a hall!<sup>3</sup> give room, and foot it, girls.

[*Musick plays, and they dance.*]

More light, ye knaves; and turn the tables up,<sup>4</sup>

And quench the fire, the room is grown too hot.—

Ah, sirrah, this unlook'd-for sport comes well.

Nay, sit, nay, sit, good cousin Capulet;

For you and I are past our dancing days:

How long is't now, since last yourself and I

Were in a mask?

2 *Cap.* By'r lady, thirty years.

1 *Cap.* What, man! 'tis not so much, 'tis not so much:

'Tis since the nuptial of Lucentio,

Come pentecost as quickly as it will,

Some five and twenty years; and then we mask'd.

2 *Cap.* 'Tis more, 'tis more: his son is elder, sir; His son is thirty.

1 *Cap.* Will you tell me that?

His son was but a ward two years ago.

*Rom.* What lady's that, which doth enrich the hand

Of yonder knight?

*Serv.* I know not, sir.

*Rom.* O, she doth teach the torches to burn bright!

Her beauty hangs upon the cheek of night

Like a rich jewel in an Ethiop's ear:

Beauty too rich for use, for earth too dear!

So shows a snowy dove trooping with crows,

As yonder lady o'er her fellows shows.

The measure done, I'll watch her place of stand,

And, touching hers, make happy my rude hand.

<sup>3</sup> *A hall! a hall!*] An exclamation signifying *make room*.

<sup>4</sup> — *turn the tables up,*] Before this phrase is generally intelligible, it should be observed that ancient tables were flat leaves, joined by hinges, and placed on tressels. When they were to be removed; they were therefore *turned up*.

Did my heart love till now? forswear it, sight!  
For I ne'er saw true beauty till this night.

*Tyb.* This, by his voice, should be a Montague:—  
Fetch me my rapier, boy:—What! dares the slave  
Come hither, cover'd with an antick face,  
To ~~flee~~ and scorn at our solemnity?  
Now, by the stock and honour of my kin,  
To strike him dead I hold it not a sin.

*1 Cap.* Why, how now kinsman? wherefore  
storm you so?

*Tyb.* Uncle, this is a Montague, our foe;  
A villain, that is hither come in spite,  
To scorn at our solemnity this night.

*1 Cap.* Young Romeo is't?

*Tyb.* 'Tis he, that villain Romeo.

*1 Cap.* Content thee, gentle coz, let him alone,  
He bears him like a portly gentleman;  
And, to say truth, Verona brags of him,  
To be a virtuous and well-govern'd youth:  
I would not for the wealth of all this town,  
Here in my house, do him disparagement:  
Therefore be patient, take no note of him,  
It is my will; the which if thou respect,  
Show a fair presence, and put off these frowns,  
An ill-beseeming semblance for a feast.

*Tyb.* It fits, when such a villain is a guest;  
I'll not endure him.

*1 Cap.* He shall be endur'd;  
What, Goodman boy!—I say, he shall;—Go to;—  
Am I the master here, or you? go to.  
You'll not endure him!—God shall mend my  
soul—

You'll make a mutiny among my guests!  
You will set cock-a-hoop! you'll be the man!

*Tyb.* Why, uncle, 'tis a shame.

*1 Cap.* Go to, go to,  
You are a saucy boy:—Is't so, indeed?—

This trick may chance to scath you ;<sup>5</sup>—I know what.  
You must contráry me ! marry, 'tis time—

Well said, my hearts :—You are a princox ; go :<sup>6</sup>—  
Be quiet, or—More light, more light, for shame !—  
I'll make you quiet ; What !—Cheerly, my hearts.

*Tyb.* Patience perforce with wilful choler meeting,  
Makes my flesh tremble in their different greeting.

I will withdraw : but this intrusion shall,  
Now seeming sweet, convert to bitter gall. [*Exit.*

*Rom.* If I profane with my unworthy hand

[*To JULIET.*

This holy shrine, the gentle fine is this,—  
My lips, two blushing pilgrims, ready stand  
To smooth that rough touch with a tender kiss.

*Jul.* Good pilgrim, you do wrong your hand too  
much,

Which mannerly devotion shows in this ;  
For saints have hands that pilgrims' hands do touch,  
And palm to palm is holy palmers' kiss.

*Rom.* Have not saints lips, and holy palmers too ?

*Jul.* Ay, pilgrim, lips that they must use in  
prayer.

*Rom.* O then, dear saint, let lips do what hands do ;  
They pray, grant thou, lest faith turn to despair.

*Jul.* Saints do not move, though grant for prayers'  
sake.

*Rom.* Then move not, while my prayer's effect I  
take.

Thus from my lips, by yours, my sin is purg'd.

[*Kissing her.*<sup>7</sup>

*Jul.* Then have my lips the sin that they have took.

<sup>5</sup> — to scath you ;] i. e. to do you an injury.

<sup>6</sup> — You are a princox ; go :] A *princox* is a coxcomb, or a spoiled child.

<sup>7</sup> [*Kissing her.*] Our poet here, without doubt, copied from the mode of his own time ; and kissing a lady in a publick assembly, we may conclude, was not thought indecorous.

*Rom.* Sin from my lips? O trespass sweetly urg'd!  
Give me my sin again.

*Jul.* You kiss by the book.

*Nurse.* Madam, your mother craves a word with  
you.

*Rom.* What is her mother?

*Nurse.* Marry, bachelor,  
Her mother is the lady of the house,  
And a good lady, and a wise, and virtuous:  
I nurs'd her daughter, that you talk'd withal;  
I tell you,—he, that can lay hold of her,  
Shall have the chinks.

*Rom.* Is she a Capulet?  
O dear account! my life is my foe's debt.

*Ben.* Away, begone; the sport is at the best.

*Rom.* Ay, so I fear; the more is my unrest.

1 *Cap.* Nay, gentlemen, prepare not to be gone;  
We have a trifling foolish banquet towards.\*  
Is it e'en so? Why, then I thank you all;  
I thank you, honest gentlemen; good night:—  
More torches here!—Come on, then let's to bed.  
Ah, sirrah, [*To 2 Cap.*] by my fay, it waxes late;  
I'll to my rest. [*Exeunt all but JULIET and Nurse.*]

*Jul.* Come hither, nurse: What is yon gentleman.

*Nurse.* The son and heir of old Tiberio.

*Jul.* What's he, that now is going out of door?

*Nurse.* Marry, that, I think, be young Petruchio.

*Jul.* What's he, that follows there, that would  
not dance?

*Nurse.* I know not.

*Jul.* Go, ask his name:—if he be married,  
My grave is like to be my wedding bed.

*Nurse.* His name is Romeo, and a Montague;  
The only son of your great enemy.

\* ——— towards.] *Towards* is ready, at hand.

*Jul.* My only love sprung from my only hate!  
Too early seen unknown, and known too late!  
Prodigious birth of love it is to me,  
That I must love a loathed enemy.

*Nurse.* What's this? what's this?

*Jul.* A rhyme I learn'd even now  
Of one I danc'd withal. [*One calls within, JULIET.*

*Nurse.* Anon, anon:—  
Come, let's away; the strangers all are gone.

[*Exeunt.*

*Enter CHORUS.*

Now old desire doth in his death-bed lie,  
And young affection gapes to be his heir;  
That fair,<sup>9</sup> which love groan'd for, and would die,  
With tender Juliet match'd, is now not fair.  
Now Romeo is belov'd, and loves again,  
Alike bewitched by the charm of looks;  
But to his foe suppos'd he must complain,  
And she steal love's sweet bait from fearful hooks:  
Being held a foe, he may not have access  
To breathe such vows as lovers use to swear;  
And she as much in love, her means much less  
To meet her new-beloved any where:  
But passion lends them power, time means to meet,  
Temp'ring extremities with extreme sweet. [*Erit.*

## ACT II.

*SCENE I. An open Place, adjoining Capulet's Garden.*

*Enter ROMEO.*

*Rom.* Can I go forward, when my heart is here?

<sup>9</sup> *That fair,]* *Fair*, it has been already observed, was formerly used as a substantive, and was synonymous to beauty.

Turn back, dull earth, and find thy center out.  
*[He climbs the Wall, and leaps down within it.]*

*Enter BENVOLIO, and MERCUTIO.*

*Ben.* Romeo! my cousin Romeo!

*Mer.* He is wise;  
 And, on my life, hath stolen him home to bed.

*Ben.* He ran this way, and leap'd this orchard wall:

Call, good Mercutio.

*Mer.* Nay, I'll conjure too.  
 Romeo! humours! madman! passion! lover!  
 Appear thou in the likeness of a sigh,  
 Speak but one rhyme, and I am satisfied;  
 Cry but—Ah me! couple but—love and dove;  
 Speak to my gossip Venus one fair word,  
 One nick-name for her purblind son and heir,  
 Young Adam Cupid, he that shot to trim,  
 When king Cophetua lov'd the beggar-maid.<sup>1</sup>—  
 He heareth not, he stirreth not, he moveth not;  
 The ape is dead,<sup>2</sup> and I must conjure him.—  
 I conjure thee by Rosaline's bright eyes,  
 By her high forehead,<sup>3</sup> and her scarlet lip,  
 By her fine foot, straight leg, and quivering thigh,  
 And the demesnes that there adjacent lie,  
 That in thy likeness thou appear to us.

*Ben.* An if he hear thee, thou wilt anger him.

*Mer.* This cannot anger him: 'twould anger him

<sup>1</sup> *When king Cophetua, &c.*] Alluding to an old ballad preserved in the first volume of Dr. Percy's *Reliques of ancient English Poetry*.

<sup>2</sup> *The ape is dead,*] This phrase appears to have been frequently applied to young men, in our author's time, without any reference to the mimicry of that animal. It was an expression of tenderness, like *poor fool*.

<sup>3</sup> *By her high forehead,*] A high forehead was in Shakspeare's time thought eminently beautiful.



To raise a spirit in his mistress' circle  
 Of some strange nature, letting it there stand  
 Till she had laid it, and conjur'd it down;  
 That were some spite: my invocation  
 Is fair and honest, and, in his mistress' name,  
 I conjure only but to raise up him.

*Ben.* Come, he hath hid himself among those  
 trees,

To be consorted with the humorous night:<sup>3</sup>  
 Blind is his love, and best befits the dark.

*Mer.* If love be blind, love cannot hit the mark.  
 Now will he sit under a medlar tree,  
 And wish his mistress were that kind of fruit,  
 As maids call medlars, when they laugh alone.—  
 Romeo, good night;—I'll to my truckle-bed;  
 This field-bed is too cold for me to sleep:  
 Come, shall we go?

*Ben.* Go, then; for 'tis in vain  
 To seek him here, that means not to be found.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.

*Capulet's Garden.*

*Enter ROMEO.*

*Rom.* He jests at scars,<sup>4</sup> that never felt a wound.—  
 [JULIET appears above, at a Window]  
 But, soft! what light through yonder window breaks?  
 It is the east, and Juliet is the sun!—

<sup>3</sup> — the humorous night:] Means humid, the moist dewy night.

<sup>4</sup> He jests at scars,] Mercutio, whose jests he overheard; or perhaps it is an allusion to his having conceived himself so armed with the love of Rosaline, that no other beauty could make any impression on him.

Arise, fair sun, and kill the envious moon,  
 Who is already sick and pale with grief;  
 That thou her maid art far more fair than she:  
 Be not her maid,<sup>s</sup> since she is envious;  
 Her vestal livery is but sick and green;  
 And none but fools do wear it; cast it off.—  
 It is my lady; O, it is my love:  
 O, that she knew she were!—  
 She speaks, yet she says nothing; What of that?  
 Her eye discourses, I will answer it.—  
 I am too bold, 'tis not to me she speaks:  
 Two of the fairest stars in all the heaven,  
 Having some business, do entreat her eyes  
 To twinkle in their spheres till they return.  
 What if her eyes were there, they in her head?  
 The brightness of her cheek would shame those stars,  
 As daylight doth a lamp; her eye in heaven  
 Would through the airy region stream so bright,  
 That birds would sing, and think it were not night.  
 See, how she leans her cheek upon her hand!  
 O, that I were a glove upon that hand,  
 That I might touch that cheek!

*Jul.*

Ah me!

*Rom.*

She speaks:—

O, speak again, bright angel! for thou art  
 As glorious to this night, being o'er my head,  
 As is a winged messenger of heaven  
 Unto the white-upturned wond'ring eyes  
 Of mortals, that fall back to gaze on him,  
 When he bestrides the lazy-pacing clouds,  
 And sails upon the bosom of the air.

*Jul.* O Romeo, Romeo! wherefore art thou Romeo?

Deny thy father, and refuse thy name:  
 Or, if thou wilt not, be but sworn my love,

<sup>s</sup> *Be not her maid,]* Be not a votary to the moon, to Diana.

And I'll no longer be a Capulet.

*Rom.* Shall I hear more, or shall I speak at this?

[*Aside.*

*Jul.* 'Tis but thy name, that is my enemy;—  
Thou art thyself though, not a Montague.  
What's Montague? it is nor hand, nor foot,  
Nor arm, nor face, nor any other part  
Belonging to a man. O, be some other name!  
What's in a name? that which we call a rose,  
By any other name would smell as sweet;  
So Romeo would, were he not Romeo call'd,  
Retain that dear perfection which he owes,  
Without that title:—Romeo, doff thy name;  
And for that name, which is no part of thee,  
Take all myself.

*Rom.* I take thee at thy word:  
Call me but love, and I'll be new baptiz'd;  
Henceforth I never will be Romeo.

*Jul.* What man art thou, that, thus bescreen'd  
in night,  
So stumblest on my counsel?

*Rom.* By a name  
I know not how to tell thee who I am:  
My name, dear saint, is hateful to myself,  
Because it is an enemy to thee;  
Had I it written, I would tear the word.

*Jul.* My ears have not yet drunk a hundred words  
Of that tongue's utterance, yet I know the sound;  
Art thou not Romeo, and a Montague?

*Rom.* Neither, fair saint, if either thee dislike.

*Jul.* How cam'st thou hither, tell me? and where-  
fore?

The orchard walls are high, and hard to climb;  
And the place death, considering who thou art,  
If any of my kinsmen find thee here.

*Rom.* With love's light wings did I o'er-perch  
these walls;

For stony limits cannot hold love out :  
And what love can do, that dares love attempt ;  
Therefore thy kinsmen are no let<sup>6</sup> to me.

*Jul.* If they do see thee, they will murder thee.

*Rom.* Alack ! there lies more peril in thine eye,  
Than twenty of their swords ; look thou but sweet,  
And I am proof against their enmity.

*Jul.* I would not for the world, they saw thee here.

*Rom.* I have night's cloak to hide me from their  
sight ;

And, but thou love me,<sup>7</sup> let them find me here :  
My life were better ended by their hate,  
Than death prorogued, wanting of thy love.

*Jul.* By whose direction found'st thou out this  
place ?

*Rom.* By love, who first did prompt me to in-  
quire ;

He lent me counsel, and I lent him eyes.  
I am no pilot ; yet, wert thou as far  
As that vast shore wash'd with the furthest sea,  
I would adventure for such merchandise.

*Jul.* Thou know'st, the mask of night is on my  
face ;

Else would a maiden blush bepaint my cheek,  
For that which thou hast heard me speak to-night.  
Fain would I dwell on form, fain, fain deny  
What I have spoke ; But farewell compliment !  
Dost thou love me ? I know, thou wilt say—Ay ;  
And I will take thy word : yet, if thou swear'st,  
Thou may'st prove false ; at lovers' perjuries,  
They say, Jove laughs. O, gentle Romeo,  
If thou dost love, pronounce it faithfully :  
Or if thou think'st I am too quickly won,  
I'll frown, and be perverse, and say thee nay,

<sup>6</sup> — no let —] i. e. no stop or hinderance.

<sup>7</sup> And, but thou love me,] And so thou do but love me. Or it  
may mean, unless thou love me.

So thou wilt woo ; but, else, not for the world,  
 In truth, fair Montague, I am too fond ;  
 And therefore thou may'st think my haviour light :  
 But trust me, gentleman, I'll prove more true  
 Than those that have more cunning to be strange.\*  
 I should have been more strange, I must confess,  
 But that thou over-heard'st, ere I was ware,  
 My true love's passion : therefore pardon me ;  
 And not impute this yielding to light love,  
 Which the dark night hath so discovered.

*Rom.* Lady, by yonder blessed moon I swear,  
 That tips with silver all these fruit-tree tops,—

*Jul.* O, swear not by the moon, the inconstant  
 moon

That monthly changes in her circled orb,  
 Lest that thy love prove likewise variable.

*Rom.* What shall I swear by?

*Jul.* Do not swear at all ;  
 Or, if thou wilt, swear by thy gracious self,  
 Which is the god of my idolatry,  
 And I'll believe thee.

*Rom.* If my heart's dear love—

*Jul.* Well, do not swear : although I joy in thee,  
 I have no joy of this contract to-night :  
 It is too rash, too unadvis'd, too sudden ;  
 Too like the lightning, which doth cease to be,  
 Ere one can say—It lightens. Sweet, good night !  
 This bud of love, by summer's ripening breath,  
 May prove a beautiful flower when next we meet.  
 Good night, good night ! as sweet repose and rest  
 Come to thy heart, as that within my breast !

*Rom.* O, wilt thou leave me so unsatisfied ?

*Jul.* What satisfaction canst thou have to-  
 night?

\* — cunning to be strange.] To be strange, is to put on affected coldness, to appear shy.

*Rom.* The exchange of thy love's faithful vow  
for mine.

*Jul.* I gave thee mine before thou didst request it;  
And yet I would it were to give again.

*Rom.* Would'st thou withdraw it? for what purpose, love?

*Jul.* But to be frank, and give it thee again.  
And yet I wish but for the thing I have:  
My bounty is as boundless as the sea,  
My love as deep; the more I give to thee,  
The more I have, for both are infinite.

[Nurse calls within]  
I hear some noise within; Dear love, adieu!  
Anon, good nurse!—Sweet Montague, be true.  
Stay but a little, I will come again. [Exit]

*Rom.* O blessed blessed night! I am afeard,  
Being in night, all this is but a dream,  
Too flattering-sweet to be substantial.

*Re-enten JULIET, above.*

*Jul.* Three words, dear Romeo, and good night,  
indeed.

If that thy bent of love be honourable,  
Thy purpose marriage, send me word to-morrow,  
By one that I'll procure to come to thee,  
Where, and what time, thou wilt perform the rite;  
And all my fortunes at thy foot I'll lay,  
And follow thee my lord throughout the world:

Nurse. [Within.] Madam.

*Jul.* I come, anon:—But if thou mean'st not well,  
I do beseech thee,—

Nurse. [Within.] Madam.

*Jul.* By and by, I come:—

To cease thy suit, and leave me to my grief;  
To-morrow will I send.

*Rom.* So thrive my soul,—

*Jul.* A thousand times good night! *[Exit.*

*Rom.* A thousand times the worse, to want thy light.—

Love goes toward love, as school-boys from their books;

But love from love, toward school with heavy looks.  
*[Retiring slowly.]*

*Re-enter JULIET, above.*

*Jul.* Hist! Romeo, hist!—O, for a falconer's voice,

To lure this tassel-gentle back again!<sup>9</sup>

Bondage is hoarse, and may not speak aloud;

Else would I tear the cave where echo lies,

And make her airy tongue more hoarse than mine

With repetition of my Romeo's name.

*Rom.* It is my soul, that calls upon my name:  
How silver-sweet sound lovers' tongues by night,  
Like softest musick to attending ears!

*Jul.* Romeo!

*Rom.* My sweet!

*Jul.* At what o'clock to-morrow  
Shall I send to thee?

*Rom.* At the hour of nine.

*Jul.* I will not fail; 'tis twenty years till then.  
I have forgot why I did call thee back.

*Rom.* Let me stand here till thou remember it.

*Jul.* I shall forget, to have thee still stand there,  
Rememb'ring how I love thy company.

*Rom.* And I'll still stay, to have thee still forget,  
Forgetting any other home but this.

*Jul.* 'Tis almost morning, I would have thee gone:

<sup>9</sup> *To lure this tassel-gentle back again!*] The *tassel* or *tiercel* (for so it should be spelt) is the male of the *goshawk*; so called, because it is a *tierce* or *third* less than the female. This is equally true of all birds of prey.

And yet no further than a wanton's bird;  
Who lets it hop a little from her hand,  
Like a poor prisoner in his twisted gyves,  
And with a silk thread plucks it back again,  
So loving-jealous of his liberty.

*Rom.* I would, I were thy bird.

*Jul.* Sweet, so would I:  
Yet I should kill thee with much cherishing.  
Good night, good night! parting is such sweet  
sorrow,  
That I shall say—good night, till it be morrow.

*Rom.* Sleep dwell upon thine eyes, peace in thy  
breast!—

'Would I were sleep and peace, so sweet to rest!  
Hence will I to my ghostly father's cell;  
His help to crave, and my dear hap to tell. [*Exit.*

### SCENE III.

*Friar Laurence's Cell.*

*Enter Friar LAURENCE, with a Basket.*

*Fri.* The grey-ey'd morn smiles on the frowning  
night,  
Checkering the eastern clouds with streaks of light;  
And flecked darkness' like a drunkard reels  
From forth day's path-way, made by Titan's wheels:  
Now ere the sun advance his burning eye,  
The day to cheer, and night's dank dew to dry,  
I must up-fill this osier cage of ours,  
With baleful weeds, and precious-juiced flowers.  
The earth, that's nature's mother, is her tomb;  
What is her burying grave, that is her womb:

\* *And flecked darkness —*] *Flecked* is spotted, dappled, streaked, or variegated.



And from her womb children of divers kind  
 We sucking on her natural bosom find;  
 Many for many virtues excellent,  
 None but for some, and yet all different.  
 O, mickle is the powerful grace,<sup>a</sup> that lies  
 In herbs, plants, stones, and their true qualities:  
 For nought so vile that on the earth doth live,  
 But to the earth<sup>b</sup> some special good doth give;  
 Nor aught so good, but, strain'd from that fair use,  
 Revolts from true birth, stumbling on abuse:  
 Virtue itself turns vice, being misapplied;  
 And vice sometime's by action dignified.  
 Within the infant rind of this small flower  
 Poison hath residence, and medicine power:  
 For this, being smelt, with that part<sup>c</sup> cheers each  
 part;  
 Being tasted, slays all senses with the heart.  
 Two such opposed foes encamp them still  
 In man as well as herbs, grace, and rude will;  
 And, where the worser is predominant,  
 Full soon the canker death eats up that plant:

*Enter ROMEO.*

*Rom.* Good morrow, father!

*Fri.*

*Benedicite!*

What early tongue so sweet saluteth me?—  
 Young son, it argues a distemper'd head,  
 So soon to bid good morrow to thy bed:  
 Care keeps his watch in every old man's eye,  
 And where care lodges, sleep will never lie;  
 But where unbruised youth with unstuff'd brain  
 Doth couch his limbs, there golden sleep doth reign:

<sup>2</sup> ——— *powerful grace;*] Efficacious virtue.

<sup>3</sup> ——— *to the earth* —] i. e. to the inhabitants of the earth.

<sup>4</sup> ——— *with that part* —] i. e. with the part which smells; with the olfactory nerves.

Therefore thy earliness doth me assure,  
Thou art up-rous'd by some distemperature;  
Or if not so, then here I hit it right—  
Our Romeo hath not been in bed to-night.

*Rom.* That last is true, the sweeter rest was mine.

*Fri.* God pardon sin! wast thou with Rosaline?

*Rom.* With Rosaline, my ghostly father? no;  
I have forgot that name, and that name's woe.

*Fri.* That's my good son: But where hast thou  
been then?

*Rom.* I'll tell thee, ere thou ask it me again.

I have been feasting with mine enemy;

Where, on a sudden, one hath wounded me,

That's by me wounded; both our remedies

Within thy help and holy physick lies:

I bear no hatred, blessed man; for, lo,

My intercession likewise steads my foe.

*Fri.* Be plain, good son, and homely in thy drift;  
Riddling confession finds but riddling shrift.

*Rom.* Then plainly know, my heart's dear love  
is set

On the fair daughter of rich Capulet:

As mine on her's, so hers is set on mine;

And all combin'd, save what thou must combine

By holy marriage: When, and where, and how,

We met, we woo'd, and made exchange of vow,

I'll tell thee as we pass; but this I pray,

That thou consent to marry us this day.

*Fri.* Holy Saint Francis! what a change is here!

Is Rosaline, whom thou didst love so dear,

So soon forsaken? young men's love then lies

Not truly in their hearts, but in their eyes.

*Jesu Maria!* what a deal of brine

Hath wash'd thy sallow cheeks for Rosaline!

How much salt water thrown away in waste,

To season love, that of it doth not taste!

The sun not yet thy sighs from heaven clears,  
 Thy old groans ring yet in my ancient ears;  
 Lo, here upon thy cheek the stain doth sit  
 Of an old tear that is not wash'd off yet:  
 If e'er thou wast thyself, and these woes thine,  
 Thou and these woes were all for Rosaline;  
 And art thou chang'd? pronounce this sentence  
 then—

Women may fall, when there's no strength in men.

*Rom.* Thou chidd'st me oft for loving Rosaline.

*Fri.* For doting, not for loving, pupil mine.

*Rom.* And bad'st me bury love.

*Fri.* Not in a grave,

To lay one in, another out to have.

*Rom.* I pray thee, chide not: she, whom I love  
 now,

Doth grace for grace, and love for love allow;  
 The other did not so.

*Fri.* O, she knew well,

Thy love did read by rote, and could not spell.

But come, young waverer, come go with me,

In one respect I'll thy assistant be;

For this alliance may so happy prove,

To turn your households' rancour to pure love.

*Rom.* O, let us hence; I stand on sudden haste.<sup>5</sup>

*Fri.* Wisely, and slow; They stumble, that run  
 fast. [Exeunt.]

#### SCENE IV.

*A Street.*

*Enter BENVOLIO and MERCUTIO.*

*Mcr.* Where the devil should this Romeo be?—  
 Came he not home to-night?

<sup>5</sup> — *I stand on sudden haste.*] i. e. it is of the utmost consequence for me to be hasty.

*Ben.* Not to his father's ; I spoke with his man.

*Mer.* Ah, that same pale hard-hearted wench,  
that Rosaline,

Torments him so, that he will sure run mad.

*Ben.* Tybalt, the kinsman of old Capulet,  
Hath sent a letter to his father's house.

*Mer.* A challenge, on my life.

*Ben.* Romeo will answer it.

*Mer.* Any man, that can write, may answer a letter.

*Ben.* Nay, he will answer the letter's master, how  
he dares, being dared.

*Mer.* Alas, poor Romeo, he is already dead!  
stabbed with a white wench's black eye ; shot thorough the ear with a love-song ; the very pin of his heart cleft with the blind bow-boy's butt-shaft ;<sup>6</sup>  
And is he a man to encounter Tybalt ?

*Ben.* Why, what is Tybalt ?

*Mer.* More than prince of cats,<sup>7</sup> I can tell you.  
O, he is the courageous captain of compliments.  
He fights as you sing prick-song, keeps time, distance, and proportion ; recks me his minim rest, one, two, and the third in your bosom : the very butcher of a silk button, a duellist, a duellist ; a gentleman of the very first house,—of the first and second cause :<sup>8</sup> Ah, the immortal passado ! the punto reverso ! the hay !<sup>9</sup>

<sup>6</sup> — *the very pin of his heart cleft with the blind bow-boy's butt-shaft ;*] The allusion is to archery. The clout or white mark at which the arrows are directed, was fastened by a black *pin* placed in the center of it. To hit this was the highest ambition of every marksman.

<sup>7</sup> *More than prince of cats,*] *Tybert*, the name given to the cat, in the story-book of *Reynard the Fox*.

<sup>8</sup> — *a gentleman of the very first house,—of the first and second cause :*] i. e. a gentleman of the first rank, of the first eminence among these duellists ; and one who understands the whole science of quarrelling, and will tell you of the *first cause*, and the *second cause*, for which a man is to fight.

<sup>9</sup> — *the hay !*] All the terms of the modern fencing-school

*Ben.* The what?

*Mer.* The pox of such antick, lipping, affecting fantasticoes; these new tuners of accents!—*By Jesu, a very good blade!—a very tall man!—a very good whore!*—Why, is not this a lamentable thing, grand-sire, that we should be thus afflicted with these strange flies, these fashion-mongers, these *pardon-nex-moy's*, who stand so much on the new form, that they cannot sit at ease on the old bench? O, their *bons*, their *bons*!

*Enter ROMEO.*

*Ben.* Here comes Romeo, here comes Romeo.

*Mer.* Without his roe, like a dried herring:—O flesh, flesh, how art thou fishified!—Now is he for the numbers that Petrarch flow'd in: Laura, to his lady, was but a kitchen-wench;—marry, she had a better love to be-rhyme her: Dido, a dowdy; Cleopatra, a gipsy; Helen and Hero, hildings and harlots; Thisbé, a grey eye or so, but not to the purpose.—Signior Romeo, *bon jour*! there's a French salutation to your French slop.<sup>1</sup> You gave us the counterfeit fairly last night.

*Rom.* Good morrow to you both. What counterfeit did I give you?

*Mer.* The slip, sir, the slip; Can you not conceive?

*Rom.* Pardon, good Mercutio, my business was

were originally Italian; the rapier, or small thrusting sword, being first used in Italy. The *hay* is the word *hai*, you have it, used when a thrust reaches the antagonist, from which our fencers, on the same occasion, without knowing, I suppose, any reason for it, cry out, *ha*!

<sup>1</sup> — your French slop.] *Slops* are large loose breeches or trousers, worn at present only by sailors.

<sup>2</sup> The slip, sir, the slip.] In our author's time there was a counterfeit piece of money distinguished by the name of a *slip*.

great; and, in such a case as mine, a man may strain courtesy.

*Mer.* That's as much as to say—such a case as yours constrains a man to bow in the hams.

*Rom.* Meaning—to court'sy.

*Mer.* Thou hast most kindly hit it.

*Rom.* A most courteous exposition.

*Mer.* Nay, I am the very pink of courtesy.

*Rom.* Pink for flower.

*Mer.* Right.

*Rom.* Why, then is my pump well flowered.<sup>3</sup>

*Mer.* Well said: Follow me this jest now, till thou hast worn out thy pump; that, when the single sole of it is worn, the jest may remain, after the wearing, solely singular.

*Rom.* O single-soled jest,<sup>4</sup> solely singular for the singleness!

*Mer.* Come between us, good Benvolio; my wits fail.

*Rom.* Switch and spurs, switch and spurs; or I'll cry a match.

*Mer.* Nay, if thy wits run the wild-geese chase,<sup>5</sup> I have done; for thou hast more of the wild-geese in one of thy wits, than, I am sure, I have in my whole five: Was I with you there for the goose?

*Rom.* Thou wast never with me for any thing, when thou wast not there for the goose.

*Mer.* I will bite thee by the ear for that jest.

<sup>3</sup> — *then is my pump well flowered.*] Is. was the custom to wear ribbons in the shoes formed into the shape of roses, or of any other flowers.

<sup>4</sup> *O single-soled jest,*] i. e. slight, unsolid, feeble.

<sup>5</sup> — *if thy wits run the wild-geese chase,*] One kind of horse-race, which resembled the flight of *wild-geese*, was formerly known by this name. Two horses were started together; and which ever rider could get the lead, the other was obliged to follow him, over whatever ground the foremost jockey chose to go. That horse which could distance the other, won the race.

*Rom.* Nay, good goose, bite not.

*Mer.* Thy wit is a very bitter sweeting;<sup>6</sup> it is a most sharp sauce.

*Rom.* And is it not well served in to a sweet goose?

*Mer.* O, here's a wit of cheverel,<sup>7</sup> that stretches from an inch narrow to an ell broad!

*Rom.* I stretch it out for that word—broad: which added to the goose, proves thee far and wide a broad goose.

*Mer.* Why, is not this better now than groaning for love? now art thou sociable, now art thou Romeo; now art thou what thou art, by art as well as by nature: for this drivelling love is like a great natural, that runs lolling up and down to hide his bauble in a hole.

*Ben.* Stop there, stop there.

*Mer.* Thou desirest me to stop in my tale against the hair.

*Ben.* Thou would'st else have made thy tale large.

*Mer.* O, thou art deceived, I would have made it short: for I was come to the whole depth of my tale: and meant, indeed, to occupy the argument no longer.

*Rom.* Here's goodly geer!

*Enter Nurse and PETER.*

*Mer.* A sail, a sail, a sail!

*Ben.* Two, two; a shirt, and a smock.

*Nurse.* Peter!

*Peter.* Anon?

*Nurse.* My fan, Peter.<sup>8</sup>

<sup>6</sup> — bitter sweeting;] Is an apple of that name.

<sup>7</sup> — a wit of cheverel,] *Cheverel* is soft leather for gloves.

<sup>8</sup> *My fan, Peter.*] The business of *Peter* carrying the *Nurse's fan*, seems ridiculous according to modern manners; but such was formerly the practice.

*Mer.* Pr'ythee, do, good Peter, to hide her face;  
for her fan's the fairer of the two.

*Nurse.* God ye good morrow, gentlemen.

*Mer.* God ye good den,<sup>9</sup> fair gentlewoman.

*Nurse.* Is it good den?

*Mer.* 'Tis no less, I tell you; for the bawdy hand  
of the dial is now upon the prick of noon.

*Nurse.* Out upon you! what a man are you?

*Rom.* One, gentlewoman, that God hath made  
himself to mar.

*Nurse.* By my troth, it is well said;—For himself  
to mar, quoth'a?—Gentlemen, can any of you tell  
me where I may find the young Romeo?

*Rom.* I can tell you; but young Romeo will be  
older when you have found him, than he was when  
you sought him: I am the youngest of that name,  
for 'fault of a worse.

*Nurse.* You say well.

*Mer.* Yea, is the worst well? very well took,  
i'faith; wisely, wisely.

*Nurse.* If you be he, sir, I desire some confidence  
with you.

*Ben.* She will indite him to some supper.

*Mer.* A bawd, a bawd, a bawd! So ho!

*Rom.* What hast thou found?

*Mer.* No hare, sir; unless a hare, sir, in a len-  
ten pie, that is something stale and hoar ere it be  
spent.

*An old hare hoar,  
And an old hare hoar,  
Is very good meat in lent :  
But a hare that is hoar,  
Is too much for a score,  
When it hoars ere it be spent.—*

<sup>9</sup> *God ye good den,*] i. e. God give you a good even.



Romeo, will you come to your father's? we'll to dinner thither.

*Rom.* I will follow you.

*Mer.* Farewell, ancient lady; farewell, lady, lady, lady.<sup>1</sup>

[*Exeunt MERCUTIO and BENVOLIO.*]

*Nurse.* Marry, farewell!—I pray you, sir, what saucy merchant was this,<sup>2</sup> that was so full of his ropery?<sup>3</sup>

*Rom.* A gentleman, nurse, that loves to hear himself talk; and will speak more in a minute, than he will stand to in a month.

*Nurse.* An 'a speak any thing against me, I'll take him down an 'a were lustier than he is, and twenty such Jacks; and if I cannot, I'll find those that shall. Scurvy knave! I am none of his *skirt-gills*; I am none of his *skains-mates*;<sup>4</sup>—And thou must stand by too, and suffer every knave to use me at his pleasure?

*Pet.* I saw no man use you at his pleasure; if I had, my weapon should quickly have been out, I warrant you: I dare draw as soon as another man,

<sup>1</sup> — *lady, lady, lady.*] The burthen of an old song.

<sup>2</sup> — *what saucy merchant was this, &c.*] The term *merchant* which was, and even now is, frequently applied to the lowest sort of dealers, seems anciently to have been used on these familiar occasions in contradistinction to *gentleman*; signifying that the person showed by his behaviour he was a low fellow. The term *chap*, i. e. *chapman*, a word of the same import with *merchant* in its less respectable sense, is still in common use among the vulgar, as a general denomination for any person of whom they mean to speak with freedom or disrespect.

<sup>3</sup> — *of his ropery?*] *Roper* was anciently used in the same sense as *rogue* is now.

<sup>4</sup> — *none of his skains-mates.*] A *skain* or *skain* was either a knife or a short-dagger. By *skains-mates* the Nurse means none of his loose companions who frequent the fencing-school with him, where we may suppose the exercise of this weapon was taught.

if I see occasion in a good quarrel, and the law on my side.

*Nurse.* Now, afore God, I am so vexed, that every part about me quivers. Scurvy knave!—Pray you, sir, a word: and as I told you, my young lady bade me inquire you out; what she bade me say, I will keep to myself: but first let me tell ye, if ye should lead her into a fool's paradise, as they say, it were a very gross kind of behaviour, as they say: for the gentlewoman is young; and, therefore, if you should deal double with her, truly, it were an ill thing to be offered to any gentlewoman, and very weak dealing.

*Rom.* Nurse, commend me to thy lady and mistress. I protest unto thee,—

*Nurse.* Good heart! and, faith, I will tell her as much: Lord, lord, she will be a joyful woman.

*Rom.* What wilt thou tell her, nurse? thou dost not mark me.

*Nurse.* I will tell her, sir,—that you do protest; which, as I take it, is a gentlemanlike offer.

*Rom.* Bid her devise some means to come to shrift this afternoon;

And there she shall at friar Laurence's cell  
Be shrin'd, and married. Here is for thy pains.

*Nurse.* No, truly, sir; not a penny.

*Rom.* Go to; I say, you shall.

*Nurse.* This afternoon, sir? Well, she shall be there.

*Rom.* And stay, good nurse, behind the abbey-wall:  
Within this hour my man shall be with thee;  
And bring thee cords made like a tackled stair:<sup>5</sup>  
Which to the high top-gallant of my joy<sup>6</sup>

<sup>5</sup> — like a tackled stair; ] Like stairs of rope in the tackle of a ship.

<sup>6</sup> — top-gallant of my joy — ] The top-gallant is the highest extremity of the mast of a ship.

Must be my convoy in the secret night.

Farewell!—Be trusty, and I'll quit thy pains.

Farewell!—Commend me to thy mistress.

*Nurse.* Now God in heaven bless thee!—Hark you, sir.

*Rom.* What say'st thou, my dear nurse?

*Nurse.* Is your man secret? Did you ne'er hear say—

Two may keep counsel, putting one away?

*Rom.* I warrant thee; my man's as true as steel.

*Nurse.* Well, sir; my mistress is the sweetest lady—Lord, lord!—when 'twas a little prating thing,—O, there's a nobleman in town, one Paris, that would fain lay knife aboard; but she, good soul, had as lieve see a toad, a very toad, as see him. I anger her sometimes, and tell her that Paris is the properer man; but, I'll warrant you, when I say so, she looks as pale as any clout in the varsal world. Doth not rosemary and Romeo begin both with a letter?

*Rom.* Ay, nurse; What of that? both with an R.

*Nurse.* Ah, mocker! that's the dog's name. R. is for the dog. No; I know it begins with some other letter: and she hath the prettiest sententious of it, of you and rosemary, that it would do you good to hear it.

*Rom.* Commend me to thy lady. [Exit.

*Nurse.* Ay, a thousand times.—Peter!

*Pet.* Anon?

*Nurse.* Peter, Take my fan, and go before.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE V.

*Capulet's Garden.*

*Enter JULIET.*

*Jul.* The clock struck nine, when I did send the nurse;  
In half an hour she promis'd to return.  
Perchance, she cannot meet him:—that's not so.—  
O, she is lame! love's heralds should be thoughts,  
Which ten times faster glide than the sun's beams,  
Driving back shadows over lowering hills:  
Therefore do nimble-pinion'd doves draw love,  
And therefore hath the wind-swift Cupid wings.  
Now is the sun upon the highmost hill  
Of this day's journey; and from nine till twelve  
Is three long hours,—yet she is not come.  
Had she affections, and warm youthful blood,  
She'd be as swift in motion as a ball;  
My words would bandy her to my sweet love,  
And his to me:  
But old folks, many feign as they were dead;  
Unwieldy, slow, heavy and pale as lead.

*Enter Nurse and PETER.*

O God, she comes!—O honey nurse, what news?  
Hast thou met with him? Send thy man away.

*Nurse.* Peter, stay at the gate. [*Exit PETER.*]

*Jul.* Now, good sweet nurse,—O lord! why  
look'st thou sad?  
Though news be sad, yet tell them merrily;  
If good, thou sham'st the musick of sweet news  
By playing it to me with so sour a face.  
*Nurse.* I am aweary, give me leave a while;—  
Fye, how my bones ache! What a jaunt have I had!

*Jul.* I would, thou hadst my bones, and I thy news:  
Nay, come, I pray thee, speak;—good, good nurse,  
speak.

*Nurse.* Jesu, What haste? can you not stay  
awhile?

Do you not see, that I am out of breath?

*Jul.* How art thou out of breath, when thou hast  
breath

To say to me—that thou art out of breath?

The excuse, that thou dost make in this delay,

Is longer than the tale thou dost excuse.

Is thy news good, or bad? answer to that;

Say either, and I'll stay the circumstance:

Let me be satisfied, Is't good or bad?

*Nurse.* Well, you have made a simple choice;  
you know not how to choose a man: Romeo! no,  
not he; though his face be better than any man's,  
yet his leg excels all men's; and for a hand, and a  
foot, and a body,—though they be not to be talked  
on, yet they are past compare: He is not the flower  
of courtesy, but, I'll warrant him, as gentle as a  
lamb.—Go thy ways, wench; serve God.—What,  
have you dined at home?

*Jul.* No, no: But all this did I know before;  
What says he of our marriage? what of that?

*Nurse.* Lord, how my head akes! what a head  
have I?

It beats as it would fall in twenty pieces,

My back o' t' other side,—O, my back, my back!—

Beshrew your heart, for sending me about,

To catch my death with jaunting up and down!

*Jul.* I'faith, I am sorry that thou art not well:

Sweet, sweet, sweet nurse, tell me, what says my  
love?

*Nurse.* Your love says like an honest gentleman,  
And a courteous, and a kind, and a handsome,  
And, I warrant, a virtuous:—Where is your mother?

*Jul.* Where is my mother?—why, she is within;  
Where should she be? How oddly thou reply'st?  
*Your love says like an honest gentleman,—*  
*Where is your mother?*

*Nurse.* O, God's lady dear!  
Are you so hot? Marry, come up, I trow;  
Is this the poultice for my aking bones?  
Henceforward do your messages yourself.

*Jul.* Here's such a coil,—Come, what says Romeo?

*Nurse.* Have you got leave to go to shrift to-day?

*Jul.* I have.

*Nurse.* Then hie you hence to friar Laurence's cell,  
There stays a husband to make you a wife:  
Now comes the wanton blood up in your cheeks,  
They'll be in scarlet straight at any news.  
Hie you to church; I must another way,  
To fetch a ladder, by the which your love  
Must climb a bird's nest soon, when it is dark:  
I am the drudge, and toil in your delight;  
But you shall bear the burden soon at night.  
Go, I'll to dinner; hie you to the cell.

*Jul.* Hie to high fortune!—honest nurse, farewell.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI.

*Friar Laurence's Cell.*

*Enter Friar LAURENCE and ROMEO.*

*Fri.* So smile the heavens upon this holy act,  
That after-hours with sorrow chide us not!

*Rom.* Amen, amen! but come what sorrow can,  
It cannot countervail the exchange of joy  
That one short minute gives me in her sight:  
Do thou but close our hands with holy words,  
Then love-devouring death do what he dare,  
It is enough I may but call her mine.

*Fri.* These violent delights have violent ends,  
 And in their triumph die; like fire and powder,  
 Which, as they kiss, consume: The sweetest honey  
 Is loathsome in his own deliciousness,  
 And in the taste confounds the appetite:  
 Therefore, love moderately; long love doth so;  
 Too swift arrives<sup>7</sup> as tardy as too slow.

*Enter JULIET.*

Here comes the lady;—O, so light a foot  
 Will ne'er wear out the everlasting flint:  
 A lover may bestride the gossomers<sup>8</sup>  
 That idle in the wanton summer air,  
 And yet not fall; so light is vanity.

*Jul.* Good even to my ghostly confessor.

*Fri.* Romeo shall thank thee, daughter, for us  
 both.

*Jul.* As much to him, else are his thanks too  
 much.

*Rom.* Ah, Juliet, if the measure of thy joy  
 Be heap'd like mine, and that thy skill be more  
 To blazon it, then sweeten with thy breath  
 This neighbour air, and let rich musick's tongue  
 Unfold the imagin'd happiness that both  
 Receive in either by this dear encounter.

*Jul.* Conceit,<sup>9</sup> more rich in matter than in words,  
 Brags of his substance, not of ornament:  
 They are but beggars that can count their worth;  
 But my true love is grown to such excess,  
 I cannot sum up half my sum of wealth.

<sup>7</sup> *Too swift arrives*—] He that travels too fast is as long before he comes to the end of his journey, as he that travels slow. Precipitation produces mishap.

<sup>8</sup> *A lover may bestride the gossomers*—] The *gossomer* is the long white filament which flies in the air in summer.

<sup>9</sup> *Conceit*—] Conceit here means imagination.

*Fri.* Come, come with me, and we will make  
short work;  
For, by your leaves, you shall not stay alone,  
Till holy church incorporate two in one. [*Exeunt.*]

ACT III.

*SCENE I. A publick Place. Enter MERCUTIO,  
BENVOLIO, Page, and Servants.*

*Ben.* I pray thee, good Mercutio, let's retire;  
The day is hot,<sup>1</sup> the Capulets abroad,  
And, if we meet, we shall not 'scape a brawl;  
For now, these hot days, is the mad blood stirring.

*Mer.* Thou art like one of those fellows, that,  
when he enters the confines of a tavern, claps me  
his sword upon the table, and says, *God send me no  
need of thee!* and, by the operation of the second  
cup, draws it on the drawer, when, indeed, there  
is no need.

*Ben.* Am I like such a fellow?

*Mer.* Come, come, thou art as hot a Jack in thy  
mood as any in Italy; and as soon moved to be  
moody, and as soon moody to be moved.

*Ben.* And what to?

*Mer.* Nay, an there were two such, we should  
have none shortly, for one would kill the other.  
Thou! why thou wilt quarrel with a man that hath  
a hair more, or a hair less, in his beard, than thou  
hast. Thou wilt quarrel with a man for cracking  
nuts, having no other reason but because thou hast  
hazel eyes; What eye, but such an eye, would spy  
out such a quarrel? Thy head is as full of quarrels,

<sup>1</sup> *The day is hot, —*] It is observed; that, in Italy, almost all  
assassinations are committed during the heat of summer.



as an egg is full of meat; and yet thy head hath been beaten as addle as an egg, for quarrelling. Thou hast quarrelled with a man for coughing in the street, because he hath wakened thy dog that hath lain asleep in the sun. Didst thou not fall out with a tailor for wearing his new doublet before Easter? with another, for tying his new shoes with old ribband? and yet thou wilt tutor me from quarrelling!

*Ben.* An I were so apt to quarrel as thou art, any man should buy the fee-simple of my life for an hour and a quarter.

*Mer.* The fee-sittle? O simple!

*Enter TYBALT, and Others.*

*Ben.* By my head, here come the Capulets.

*Mer.* By my heel, I care not.

*Tyb.* Follow me close, for I will speak to them.—  
Gentlemen, good den: a word with one of you.

*Mer.* And but one word with one of us? Couple it with something; make it a word and a blow.

*Tyb.* You will find me apt enough to that, sir, if you will give me occasion.

*Mer.* Could you not take some occasion without giving?

*Tyb.* Mercutio, thou consortest with Romeo,—

*Mer.* Consort! what, dost thou make us minstrels! an thou make minstrels of us, look to hear nothing but discords: here's my fiddlestick; here's that shall make you dance. 'Zounds, consort!

*Ben.* We talk here in the publick haunt of men:  
Either withdraw into some private place,  
Or reason coldly of your grievances,  
Or else depart; here all eyes gaze on us.

*Mer.* Men's eyes were made to look, and let them gaze;  
I will not budge for no man's pleasure, I.

*Enter ROMEO.*

*Tyb.* Well, peace be with you, sir! here comes my man.

*Mer.* But I'll be hanged, sir, if he wear your livery.

Marry, go before to field, he'll be your follower;  
Your worship, in that sense, may call him—man.

*Tyb.* Romeo, the hate I bear thee, can afford  
No better term than this—Thou art a villain.

*Rom.* Tybalt, the reason that I have to love thee  
Doth much excuse the appertaining rage  
To such a greeting—Villain am I none;  
Therefore farewell; I see; thou know'st me not.

*Tyb.* Boy, this shall not excuse the injuries  
That thou hast done me; therefore turn, and draw.

*Rom.* I do protest, I never injur'd thee;  
But love thee better than thou canst devise,  
Till thou shalt know the reason of my love:  
And so, good Capulet,—which name I tender  
As dearly as mine own,—be satisfied.

*Mer.* O calm, dishonourable, vile submission!

*A la stoccata*<sup>2</sup> carries it away.

[*Draws.*

Tybalt, you rat-catcher, will you walk?

*Tyb.* What would'st thou have with me?

*Mer.* Good king of cats, nothing, but one of  
your nine lives; that I mean to make bold withal,  
and, as you shall use me hereafter, dry-beat the rest  
of the eight. Will you pluck your sword out of  
his pilcher by the ears?<sup>3</sup> make haste, lest mine be  
about your ears ere it be out.

<sup>2</sup> *A la stoccata*—] *Stoccata* is the Italian term for a thrust or stab with a rapier.

<sup>3</sup> *Will you pluck your sword out of his pilcher by the ears?*] We should read *pilche*, which signifies a cloke or coat of skins, meaning the scabbard.

*Tyb.* I am for you. [Drawing.

*Rom.* Gentle Mercutio, put thy rapier up.

*Mer.* Come, sir, your passado. [They fight.

*Rom.* Draw, Benvolio;

Beat down their weapons:—Gentlemen, for shame

Forbear this outrage;—*Tybalt*—*Mercutio*—

The prince expressly hath forbid this bandying

In Verona streets:—hold, *Tybalt*;—good *Mercutio*.

[*Exeunt TYBALT and his Partizans.*

*Mer.* I am hurt;—

A plague o' both the houses!—I am sped:

Is he gone, and hath nothing?

*Ben.*

What, art thou hurt?

*Mer.* Ay, ay, a scratch, a scratch; marry, 'tis enough.—

Where is my page?—go, villain, fetch a surgeon.

[Exit Page.

*Rom.* Courage, man; the hurt cannot be much.

*Mer.* No, 'tis not so deep as a well, nor so wide as a church-door; but 'tis enough, 'twill serve: ask for me to-morrow, and you shall find me a grave man. I am peppered, I warrant, for this world:—A plague o'both your houses!—'Zounds, a dog, a rat, a mouse, a cat, to scratch a man to death! a braggart, a rogue, a villain, that fights by the book of arithmetick!—Why, the devil, came you between us? I was hurt under your arm.

*Rom.* I thought all for the best.

*Mer.* Help me into some house, Benvolio, Or I shall faint.—A plague o'both your houses! They have made worm's meat of me: I have it, and soundly too:—Your houses!

[*Exeunt MERCUTIO and BENVOLIO.*

*Rom.* This gentleman, the prince's near ally, My very friend, hath got his mortal hurt In my behalf; my reputation stain'd With *Tybalt's* slander, *Tybalt*, that an-hour

Hath been my kinsman :—O sweet Juliet,  
Thy beauty hath made me effeminate,  
And in my temper soften'd valour's steel.

*Re-enter BENVOLIO.*

*Ben.* O Romeo, Romeo, brave Mercutio's dead ;  
That gallant spirit hath aspir'd the clouds,  
Which too untimely here did scorn the earth.

*Rom.* This day's black fate on more days doth  
depend ;<sup>4</sup>  
This but begins the woe, others must end.

*Re-enter TYBALT.*

*Ben.* Here comes the furious Tybalt back again.

*Rom.* Alive ! in triumph ! and Mercutio slain !  
Away to heaven, respective lenity,<sup>5</sup>  
And fire-ey'd fury be my conduct now !<sup>6</sup>—  
Now, Tybalt, take the *villain* back again,  
That late thou gav'st me ; for Mercutio's soul  
Is but a little way above our heads,  
Staying for thine to keep him company ;  
Either thou, or I, or both, must go with him.

*Tyb.* Thou, wretched boy, that didst consort him  
here,  
Shalt with him hence.

*Rom.* This shall determine that.  
[*They fight ; TYBALT falls.*

*Ben.* Romeo, away, be gone !  
The citizens are up, and Tybalt slain :—  
Stand not amaz'd :—the prince will doom thee death,  
If thou art taken :—hence !—be gone !—away !

<sup>4</sup> *This day's black fate on more days doth depend ;*] *This day's*  
*unhappy destiny hangs over the days yet to come. There will*  
*yet be more mischief.*

<sup>5</sup> — *respective lenity,*] *Cool, considerate gentleness.*

<sup>6</sup> *be my conduct now !*] *Conduct for conductor.*

*Rom.* O! I am fortune's fool!

*Ben.* Why dost thou stay?  
[*Exit ROMEO.*]

*Enter Citizens, &c.*

*1 Cit.* Which way ran he, that kill'd Mercutio?  
Tybalt, that murderer, which way ran he?

*Ben.* There lies that Tybalt.

*1 Cit.* Up, sir, go with me;  
I charge thee in the prince's name, obey.

*Enter Prince, attended; MONTAGUE, CAPULET,  
their Wives, and Others.*

*Prin.* Where are the vile beginners of this fray?

*Ben.* O noble Prince, I can discover all  
The unlucky manage of this fatal brawl:

There lies the man, slain by young Romeo,  
That slew thy kinsman, brave Mercutio.

*La. Cap.* Tybalt, my cousin!—O my brother's  
child!

Unhappy sight! ah me, the blood is spill'd  
Of my dear kinsman!—Prince, as thou art true,<sup>7</sup>  
For blood of ours, shed blood of Montague.—  
O cousin, cousin!

*Prin.* Benvolio, who began this bloody fray?

*Ben.* Tybalt, here slain, whom Romeo's hand did  
slay;

Romeo that spoke him fair, bade him bethink  
How nice<sup>8</sup> the quarrel was, and urg'd withal  
Your high displeasure:—All this—uttered  
With gentle breath, calm look, knees humbly  
bow'd,—

Could not take truce with the unruly spleen

<sup>7</sup> — as thou art true,] As thou art just and upright.

<sup>8</sup> How nice—] How slight, how unimportant, how petty.

Of Tybalt deaf to peace, but that he tilts  
 With piercing steel at bold Mercutio's breast;  
 Who, all as hot, turns deadly point to point,  
 And, with a martial scorn, with one hand beats  
 Cold death aside, and with the other sends  
 It back to Tybalt, whose dexterity  
 Retorts it: Romeo he cries aloud,  
*Hold, friends! friends, part!* and swifter than his  
 tongue,

His agile arm beats down their fatal points,  
 And 'twixt them rushes; underneath whose arm  
 An envious thrust from Tybalt hit the life  
 Of stout Mercutio, and then Tybalt fled:  
 But by and by comes back to Romeo,  
 Who had but newly entertain'd revenge,  
 And to't they go like light'ning; for, ere I  
 Could draw to part them, was stout Tybalt slain;  
 And, as he fell, did Romeo turn and fly;  
 This is the truth, or let Benvolio die.

*La. Cap.* He is a kinsman to the Montague,  
 Affection makes him false,<sup>9</sup> he speaks not true:  
 Some twenty of them fought in this black strife,  
 And all those twenty could but kill one life:  
 I beg for justice, which thou, prince, must give;  
 Romeo slew Tybalt, Romeo must not live.

*Prin.* Romeo slew him, he slew Mercutio;  
 Who now the price of his dear blood doth owe?

*Mon.* Not Romeo, prince, he was Mercutio's  
 friend;  
 His fault concludes but, what the law should end,  
 The life of Tybalt.

<sup>9</sup> *Affection makes him false,*] The charge of falsehood on Benvolio, though produced at hazard, is very just. The author, who seems to intend the character of Benvolio as good, meant perhaps to show, how the best minds, in a state of faction and discord, are detorted to criminal partiality. JOHNSON.

*Prin.* And, for that offence,  
Immediately we do exile him hence :  
I have an interest in your hates' proceeding,  
My blood for your rude brawls doth lie a bleeding ;  
But I'll amerce you with so strong a fine,  
That you shall all repent the loss of mine :  
I will be deaf to pleading and excuses ;  
Nor tears, nor prayers, shall purchase out abuses,  
Therefore use none : let Romeo hence in haste,  
Else, when he's found, that hour is his last.  
Bear hence this body, and attend our will :  
Mercy but murders, pardoning those that kill.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.

*A Room in Capulet's House.*

*Enter JULIET.*

*Jul.* Gallop apace, you fiery-footed steeds,  
Towards Phœbus' mansion ; such a waggoner  
As Phaeton would whip you to the west,  
And bring in cloudy night immediately.—  
Spread thy close curtain, love-performing night !  
That run-away's eyes may wink ;<sup>1</sup> and Romeo  
Leap to these arms, untalk'd of, and unseen !—  
Lovers can see to do their amorous rites  
By their own beauties : or, if love be blind,

<sup>1</sup> *Spread thy close curtain, love-performing night !*

*That run-away's eyes may wink ; &c.] Juliet first wishes for the absence of the sun, and then invokes the night to spread its curtain close around the world :*

*Spread thy close curtain, love-performing night !*

Next, recollecting that the night would seem short to her, she speaks of it as of a *run-away*, whose flight she would wish to retard, and whose eyes she would blind, lest they should make discoveries.

It best agrees with night.—Come, civil night,<sup>2</sup>  
 Thou sober-suited matron, all in black,  
 And learn me how to lose a winning match,  
 Play'd for a pair of stainless maidenhoods :  
 Hood my unmann'd blood bating in my cheeks,<sup>3</sup>  
 With thy black mantle; till strange love, grown bold,  
 Think true love acted, simple modesty.  
 Come, night!—Come, Romeo! come, thou day in  
 night!

For thou wilt lie upon the wings of night  
 Whiter than new snow on a raven's back.—  
 Come, gentle night; come, loving, black-brow'd  
 night,

Give me my Romeo: and, when he shall die,  
 Take him and cut him out in little stars,  
 And he will make the face of heaven so fine,  
 That all the world will be in love with night,  
 And pay no worship to the garish sun.<sup>4</sup>  
 O, I have bought the mansion of a love,  
 But not possess'd it; and, though I am sold,  
 Not yet enjoy'd: So tedious is this day,  
 As is the night before some festival  
 To an impatient child, that hath new robes,  
 And may not wear them. O, here comes my nurse,

*Enter Nurse, with Cords.*

And she brings news; and every tongue, that speaks  
 But Romeo's name, speaks heavenly eloquence.—  
 Now, nurse, what news? What hast thou there,  
 the cords,  
 That Romeo bade thee fetch?

<sup>2</sup> *Come, civil night,*] *Civil* is grave, decently solemn.

<sup>3</sup> *Hood my unmann'd blood bating in my cheeks,*] These are terms of falconry. An *unmanned* hawk is one that is not brought to endure company. *Bating*, (not *baiting*, as it has hitherto been printed,) is fluttering with the wings as striving to fly away.

<sup>4</sup> — *the garish sun,*] *Garish* is gaudy, showy.



*Nurse.*

Ay, ay, the cords,  
[*Throws them down.*]

*Jul.* Ah me! what news! why dost thou wring thy hands?

*Nurse.* Ah well-a-day! he's dead, he's dead, he's dead!

We are undone, lady, we are undone!—

Alack the day!—he's gone, he's kill'd, he's dead!

*Jul.* Can heaven be so envious?

*Nurse.*

Romeo can,  
Though heaven cannot:—O Romeo, Romeo!—  
Who ever would have thought it?—Romeo!

*Jul.* What devil art thou, that dost torment me thus?

This torture should be rear'd in dismal hell.

Hath Romeo slain himself? say thou but *I*,<sup>5</sup>

And that bare vowel *I* shall poison more

Than the death-darting eye of cockatrice:

I am not *I*, if there be such an *I*;

Or those eyes shut, that make thee answer, *I*.

If he be slain, say—*I*; or if not, no:

Brief sounds determine of my weal, or woe.

*Nurse.* I saw the wound, I saw it with mine eyes,—  
God save the mark!<sup>6</sup>—here on his manly breast:

A piteous corse, a bloody piteous corse;

Pale, pale as ashes, all bedawb'd in blood,

All in gore blood;—I swooned at the sight.

*Jul.* O break, my heart!—poor bankrupt, break at once!

To prison, eyes! ne'er look on liberty!

Vile earth, to earth resign; end motion here;

And thou, and Romeo, press one heavy bier!

<sup>5</sup> — say thou but *I*,] In Shakspeare's time the affirmative particle *ay* was usually written *I*, and here it is necessary to retain the old spelling.

<sup>6</sup> *God save the mark!*] This proverbial exclamation occurs again, with equal obscurity, in *Othello*, Act I. sc. i.

*Nurse.* O Tybalt, Tybalt, the best friend I had!  
O courteous Tybalt! honest gentleman!  
That ever I should live to see thee dead!

*Jul.* What storm is this, that blows so contrary?  
Is Romeo slaughter'd; and is Tybalt dead?  
My dear-lov'd cousin, and my dearer lord?—  
Then, dreadful trumpet, sound the general doom!  
For who is living, if those two are gone?

*Nurse.* Tybalt is gone, and Romeo banished;  
Romeo, that kill'd him, he is banished.

*Jul.* O God!—did Romeo's hand shed Tybalt's  
blood?

*Nurse.* It did, it did; alas the day! it did.

*Jul.* O serpent heart, hid with a flow'ring face!  
Did ever dragon keep so fair a cave?  
Beautiful tyrant! fiend angelical!  
Dove-feather'd raven! wolfish-ravelling lamb!  
Despised substance of divinest show!  
Just opposite to what thou justly seem'st,  
A damned saint, an honourable villain!—  
O, nature! what hadst thou to do in hell,  
When thou did'st bower the spirit of a fiend  
In mortal paradise of such sweet flesh?—  
Was ever book, containing such vile matter,  
So fairly bound? O, that deceit should dwell  
In such a gorgeous palace!

*Nurse.* There's no trust,  
No faith, no honesty in men; all perjur'd,  
All forsworn, all naught, all dissemblers.—  
Ah, where's my man? give me some *aqua vitae*:—  
These griefs, these woes, these sorrows make me old.  
Shame come to Romeo!

*Jul.* -Blister'd be thy tongue,  
For such a wish! he was not born to shame:  
Upon his brow shame is ashamed to sit;  
For 'tis a throne where honour may be crown'd  
Sole monarch of the universal earth.

O, what a beast was I to chide at him!

*Nurse.* Will you speak well of him that kill'd your cousin?

*Jul.* Shall I speak ill of him that is my husband? Ah, poor my lord, what tongue shall smooth thy name,<sup>7</sup>

When I, thy three-hours wife, have mangled it?—  
But, wherefore, villain, didst thou kill my cousin?  
That villain cousin would have kill'd my husband:  
Back, foolish tears, back to your native spring;  
Your tributary drops belong to woe,  
Which you, mistaking, offer up to joy.  
My husband lives, that Tybalt would have slain;  
And Tybalt's dead, that would have slain my husband:

All this is comfort; Wherefore weep I then?  
Some word there was, worsen than Tybalt's death,  
That murder'd me: I would forget it fain;  
But, O! it presses to my memory,  
Like damned guilty deeds to sinners' minds:  
*Tybalt is dead, and Romeo—banished;*  
That—*banished*, that one word—*banished*,  
Hath slain ten thousand Tybalts.<sup>8</sup> Tybalt's death  
Was woe enough, if it had ended there:  
Or,—if sour woe delights in fellowship,  
And needly will be rank'd with other griefs,—  
Why follow'd not, when she said—Tybalt's dead,  
Thy father, or thy mother, nay, or both,  
Which modern lamentation<sup>9</sup> might have mov'd?  
But, with a rear-ward following Tybalt's death,  
*Romeo is banished*,—to speak that word,  
Is father, mother, Tybalt, Romeo, Juliet,

<sup>7</sup> — *What tongue shall smooth thy name,*] To smooth, in ancient language, is to stroke, to caress, to fondle.

<sup>8</sup> *Hath slain ten thousand Tybalts.*] That is, is worse than the loss of ten thousand Tybalts.

<sup>9</sup> *Which modern lamentation, &c.*] i. e. trite, common.

All slain, all dead :—*Romeo is banished*,—  
There is no end, no limit, measure, bound,  
In that word's death ; no words can that woe  
sound.—

Where is my father, and my mother, nurse ?

*Nurse.* Weeping and wailing over Tybalt's corse :  
Will you go to them ? I will bring you thither.

*Jul.* Wash they his wounds with tears ? mine  
shall be spent,

When theirs are dry, for Romeo's banishment.

Take up those cords :—Poor ropes, you are beguil'd,  
Both you and I ; for Romeo is exil'd :

He made you for a highway to my bed ;

But I, a maid, die maiden-widowed.

Come, cords ; come, nurse ; I'll to my wedding bed ;  
And death, not Romeo, take my maidenhead !

*Nurse.* Hie to your chamber : I'll find Romeo  
To comfort you :—I wot well where he is.

Hark ye, your Romeo will be here at night ;  
I'll to him ; he is hid at Laurence' cell.

*Jul.* O find him ! give this ring to my true knight,  
And bid him come to take his last farewell.

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE III.

*Friar Laurence's Cell.*

*Enter Friar LAURENCE and ROMEO.*

*Fri.* Romeo, come forth ; come forth, thou fearful,  
man ;

Affliction is enamour'd of thy parts,  
And thou art wedded to calamity.

*Rom.* Father, what news ? what is the prince's  
doom ?

What sorrow craves acquaintance at my hand,  
That I yet know not ?

*Fri.* Too familiar  
Is my dear son with such sour company :  
I bring thee tidings of the prince's doom.

*Rom.* What less than dooms-day is the prince's  
doom ?

*Fri.* A gentler judgment vanish'd from his lips,  
Not body's death, but body's banishment.

*Rom.* Ha! banishment? be merciful, say—death:  
For exile hath more terror in his look,  
Much more than death : do not say—banishment.

*Fri.* Hence from Verona art thou banished:  
Be patient, for the world is broad and wide.

*Rom.* There is no world without Verona walls,  
But purgatory, torture, hell itself.  
Hence-banished is banish'd from the world,  
And world's exile is death :—then banishment  
Is death mis-term'd : calling death—banishment,  
Thou cut'st my head off with a golden axe,  
And smil'st upon the stroke that murders me.

*Fri.* O deadly sin! O rude unthankfulness!  
Thy fault our law calls death ; but the kind prince,  
Taking thy part, hath rush'd aside the law,  
And turn'd that black word death to banishment :  
This is dear mercy,<sup>1</sup> and thou seest it not.

*Rom.* 'Tis torture, and not mercy: heaven is here,  
Where Juliet lives ; and every cat, and dog,  
And little mouse, every unworthy thing,  
Live here in heaven, and may look on her,  
But Romeo may not.—More validity,  
More honourable state, more courtship lives  
In carrion flies, than Romeo :<sup>2</sup> they may seize

<sup>1</sup> *This is dear mercy,*] The old copies read *mere* mercy, which, in ancient language, signifies *absolute* mercy.

<sup>2</sup> — *More validity,*  
*More honourable state, more courtship lives*  
*In carrion flies, than Romeo :*] *Validity* seems here to mean worth or dignity. By *courtship*, the author seems to mean, the

On the white wonder of dear Juliet's hand,  
 And steal immortal blessing from her lips;  
 Who, even in pure and vestal modesty,  
 Still blush, as thinking their own kisses sin;  
 But Romeo may not; he is banished:  
 Flies may do this, when I from this must fly;  
 They are free men, but I am banished.  
 And say'st thou yet, that exile is not death?  
 Hadst thou no poison mix'd, no sharp-ground knife,  
 No sudden mean of death, though ne'er so mean,  
 But—banished—to kill me; banished?  
 O friar, the damned use that word in hell;  
 Howlings attend it: How hast thou the heart,  
 Being a divine, a ghostly confessor,  
 A sin-absolver, and my friend profess'd,  
 To mangle me with that word—banishment?

*Fri.* Thou fond mad man, hear me but speak a word.

*Rom.* O, thou wilt speak again of banishment.

*Fri.* I'll give thee armour to keep off that word;  
 Adversity's sweet milk, philosophy,  
 To comfort thee, though thou art banished.

*Rom.* Yet banished?—Hang up philosophy!  
 Unless philosophy can make a Juliet,  
 Displant a town, reverse a prince's doom;  
 It helps not, it prevails not, talk no more.

*Fri.* O, then I see that madmen have no ears.

*Rom.* How should they, when that wise men  
 have no eyes?

*Fri.* Let me dispute with thee of thy estate.<sup>3</sup>

*Rom.* Thou canst not speak of what thou dost  
 not feel:

Wert thou as young as I, Juliet thy love,

state of a lover; that dalliance, in which he who *courts* or woos  
 a lady is sometimes indulged.

<sup>3</sup> *Let me dispute with thee of thy estate.*] i. e. talk over thy  
 affairs.

An hour but married, Tybalt murdered,  
 Doting like me, and like me banished,  
 Then might'st thou speak, then might'st thou tear  
     thy hair,  
 And fall upon the ground, as I do now,  
 Taking the measure of an unmade grave.

*Fri.* Arise; one knocks; good Romeo, hide  
     thyself. [Knocking within.]

*Rom.* Not I; unless the breath of heart-sick  
     groans,  
 Mist-like, infold me from the search of eyes.

[Knocking.]  
*Fri.* Hark, how they knock!—Who's there?—  
     Romeo, arise;

Thou wilt be taken:—Stay a while:—stand up;  
[Knocking.]

Run to my study:—By and by:—God's will!  
 What wilfulness is this?—I come, I come.

[Knocking.]  
 Who knocks so hard? whence come you? what's  
     your will?

*Nurse.* [Within.] Let me come in, and you shall  
     know my errand;

I come from lady Juliet.

*Fri.* Welcome then.

*Enter Nurse.*

*Nurse.* O holy friar, O, tell me, holy friar,  
 Where is my lady's lord, where's Romeo?

*Fri.* There on the ground, with his own tears  
     made drunk.

*Nurse.* O, he is even in my mistress' case,  
 Just in her case!

*Fri.* O woeful sympathy!  
 Piteous predicament!

*Nurse.* Even so lies she,

Blubbering and weeping, weeping and blubbering:—  
Stand up, stand up; stand, an you be a man:  
For Juliet's sake, for her sake, rise and stand;  
Why should you fall into so deep an O?

*Rom.* Nurse!

*Nurse.* Ah sir! ah sir!—Well, death's the end  
of all.

*Rom.* Spak'st thou of Juliet? how is it with her?  
Doth she not think me an old murderer,  
Now I have stain'd the childhood of our joy  
With blood remov'd but little from her own?  
Where is she? and how doth she? and what says  
My conceal'd lady to our cancell'd love?

*Nurse.* O, she says nothing, sir, but weeps and  
weeps;

And now falls on her bed; and then starts up,  
And Tybalt calls; and then on Romeo cries,  
And then down falls again.

*Rom.* As if that name,  
Shot from the deadly level of a gun,  
Did murder her; as that name's cursed hand  
Murder'd her kinsman.—O tell me, friar, tell me,  
In what vile part of this anatomy  
Doth my name lodge? tell me, that I may sack  
The hateful mansion. [*Drawing his Sword.*]

*Fri.* Hold thy desperate hand:  
Art thou a man? thy form cries out, thou art;  
Thy tears are womanish; thy wild acts denote  
The unreasonable fury of a beast:  
Unseemly woman, in a seeming man!  
Or ill-beseeming beast, in seeming both!  
Thou hast amaz'd me: by my holy order,  
I thought thy disposition better temper'd.  
Hast thou slain Tybalt? wilt thou slay thyself?  
And slay thy lady too that lives in thee,  
By doing damned hate upon thyself?  
Why rail'st thou on thy birth, the heaven, and earth?



Since birth, and heaven, and earth, all three do meet  
 In thee at once ; which thou at once would'st lose.  
 Fye, fye! thou sham'st thy shape, thy love, thy wit;  
 Which, like an usurer, abound'st in all,  
 And usest none in that true use indeed  
 Which should bedeck thy shape, thy love, thy wit.  
 Thy noble shape is but a form of wax,  
 Digressing from the valour of a man :  
 Thy dear love, sworn, but hollow perjury,  
 Killing that love which thou hast vow'd to cherish :  
 Thy wit, that ornament to shape and love,  
 Mis-shapen in the conduct of them both,  
 Like powder in a skill-less soldier's flask,<sup>4</sup>  
 Is set on fire by thine own ignorance,  
 And thou dismember'd with thine own defence.<sup>5</sup>  
 What, rouse thee, man ! thy Juliet is alive,  
 For whose dear sake thou wast but lately dead ;  
 There art thou happy : Tybalt would kill thee,  
 But thou slew'st Tybalt ; there art thou happy too :  
 The law, that threaten'd death, becomes thy friend,  
 And turns it to exile ; there art thou happy :  
 A pack of blessings lights upon thy back ;  
 Happiness courts thee in her best array ;  
 But, like a mis-behav'd and sullen wench,  
 Thou pout'st upon thy fortune and thy love :  
 Take heed, take heed, for such die miserable.  
 Go, get thee to thy love, as was decreed,  
 Ascend her chamber, hence and comfort her ;  
 But, look, thou stay not till the watch be set,  
 For then thou canst not pass to Mantua ;

<sup>4</sup> *Like powder in a skill-less soldier's flask, &c.*] To understand the force of this allusion, it should be remembered that the ancient English soldiers, using *match-locks*, instead of locks with flints as at present, were obliged to carry a lighted *match* hanging at their belts, very near to the wooden *flask* in which they kept their powder.

<sup>5</sup> *And thou dismember'd with thine own defence.*] And thou torn to pieces with thine own weapons.

Where thou shalt live, till we can find a time  
To blaze your marriage, reconcile your friends,  
Beg pardon of the prince, and call thee back  
With twenty hundred thousand times more joy  
Than thou went'st forth in lamentation.—

Go before, nurse: commend me to thy lady;  
And bid her hasten all the house to bed,  
Which heavy sorrow makes them apt unto:  
Romeo is coming.

*Nurse.* O Lord, I could have staid here all the  
night,

To hear good counsel: O, what learning is!—  
My lord, I'll tell my lady you will come.

*Rom.* Do so, and bid my sweet prepare to chide.

*Nurse.* Here, sir, a ring she bid me give you, sir:  
Hie you, make haste, for it grows very late.

[*Exit Nurse.*]

*Rom.* How well my comfort is reviv'd by this!

*Fri.* Go hence: Good night; and here stands all  
your state;<sup>6</sup>

Either be gone before the watch be set,  
Or by the break of day disguis'd from hence:  
Sojourn in Mantua; I'll find out your man,  
And he shall signify from time to time  
Every good hap to you, that chances here:  
Give me thy hand; 'tis late: farewell; good night.

*Rom.* But that a joy past joy calls out on me,  
It were a grief, so brief to part with thee:  
Farewell.

[*Exeunt.*]

<sup>6</sup> — *here stands all your state;*] The whole of your fortune depends on this.

## SCENE IV.

*A Room in Capulet's House.*

*Enter CAPULET, Lady CAPULET, and PARIS.*

*Cap.* Things have fallen out, sir, so unluckily,  
That we have had no time to move our daughter:  
Look you, she lov'd her kinsman Tybalt dearly,  
And so did I;—Well; we were born to die.—  
'Tis very late, she'll not come down to night:  
I promise you, but for your company,  
I would have been a-bed an hour ago.

*Par.* These times of woe afford no time to woo:  
Madam, good night: commend me to your daughter.

*La. Cap.* I will, and know her mind early to-morrow;

To-night she's mew'd up<sup>7</sup> to her heaviness.

*Cap.* Sir Paris, I will make a desperate tender<sup>8</sup>  
Of my child's love: I think, she will be rul'd  
In all respects by me; nay more, I doubt it not.  
Wife, go you to her ere you go to bed;  
Acquaint her here of my son Paris' love;  
And bid her, mark you me, on Wednesday next—  
But, soft; What day is this?

*Par.* Monday, my lord.

*Cap.* Monday? ha! ha! Well, Wednesday is too soon,

O' Thursday let it be;—o' Thursday, tell her,  
She shall be married to this noble earl:—  
Will you be ready? do you like this haste?

<sup>7</sup> — mew'd up—] This is a phrase from falconry. A mew was a place of confinement for hawks.

<sup>8</sup> *Sir Paris, I will make a desperate tender—*] *Desperate* means only bold, adventurous, as if he had said in the vulgar phrase, *I will speak a bold word, and venture to promise you my daughter.*

We'll keep no great ado;—a friend, or two:—  
For hark you, Tybalt being slain so late,  
It may be thought we held him carelessly,  
Being our kinsman, if we revel much:  
Therefore we'll have some half a dozen friends,  
And there an end. But what say you to Thursday?

*Par.* My lord, I would that Thursday were to-morrow.

*Cap.* Well, get you gone:—O' Thursday be it then:—

Go you to Juliet ere you go to bed,  
Prepare her, wife, against this wedding-day.—  
Farewell, my lord.—Light to my chamber, ho!  
Afore me, it is so very late, that we  
May call it early by and by:—Good night.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V.

*Juliet's Chamber.*

*Enter ROMEO and JULIET.*

*Jul.* Wilt thou be gone? it is not yet near day:  
It was the nightingale, and not the lark,  
That pierc'd the fearful hollow of thine ear;  
Nightly she sings on yon pomegranate tree:<sup>9</sup>  
Believe me, love, it was the nightingale.

*Rom.* It was the lark, the herald of the morn,  
No nightingale: look, love, what envious streaks  
Do lace the severing clouds in yonder east:  
Night's candles are burnt out, and jocund day  
Stands tiptoe on the misty mountain tops;

<sup>9</sup> *Nightly she sings on yon pomegranate tree:*] This is not merely a poetical supposition. It is observed of the nightingale, that, if undisturbed, she sits and sings upon the same tree for many weeks together.

I must be gone and live, or stay and die.

*Jul.* Yon light is not day-light, I know it, I :  
It is some meteor that the sun exhales,  
To be to thee this night a torch-bearer,  
And light thee on thy way to Mantua :  
Therefore stay yet, thou need'st not to be gone.

*Rom.* Let me be ta'en, let me be put to death ;  
I am content, so thou wilt have it so.

I'll say, yon grey is not the morning's eye,  
'Tis but the pale reflex<sup>1</sup> of Cynthia's brow ;  
Nor that is not the lark, whose notes do beat  
The vaulty heaven so high above our heads :  
I have more care to stay<sup>2</sup> than will to go ;—  
Come, death, and welcome ! Juliet wills it so.—  
How is't, my soul ? let's talk, it is not day.

*Jul.* It is, it is, hie hence, be gone, away ;  
It is the lark that sings so out of tune,  
Straining harsh discords, and displeasing sharps.  
Some say, the lark makes sweet division ;<sup>3</sup>  
This doth not so, for she divideth us :  
Some say, the lark and loathed toad change eyes ;  
O, now I would they had chang'd voices too !  
Since arm from arm that voice doth us affray,  
Hunting thee hence with hunts-up to the day.<sup>4</sup>  
O, now be gone ; more light and light it grows.

*Rom.* More light and light ?—more dark and  
dark our woes.

<sup>1</sup> — the pale reflex—]. The appearance of a cloud opposed to the moon.

<sup>2</sup> I have more care to stay—] Care for inclination.

<sup>3</sup> — sweet division ;] Division seems to have been the technical phrase for the pauses or parts of a musical composition.

<sup>4</sup> Hunting thee hence with hunts-up to the day.] The *hunts-up* was the name of the tune anciently played to wake the hunters, and collect them together. But a *huntsup* also signified a morning song to a new-married woman, the day after her marriage, and is used here in that sense.

*Enter Nurse.*

*Nurse.* Madam!

*Jul.* Nurse?

*Nurse.* Your lady mother's coming to your chamber:

The day is broke; be wary, look about.

*[Exit Nurse.]*

*Jul.* Then, window, let day in, and let life out.

*Rom.* Farewell, farewell! one kiss, and I'll descend.

*[ROMEO descends.]*

*Jul.* Art thou gone so? my love! my lord! my friend!

I must hear from thee every day i'the hour,

For in a minute there are many days:

O! by this count I shall be much in years,

Ere I again behold my Romeo.

*Rom.* Farewell! I will omit no opportunity  
That may convey my greetings, love, to thee.

*Jul.* O, think'st thou, we shall ever meet again?

*Rom.* I doubt it not; and all these woes shall serve  
For sweet discourses in our time to come.

*Jul.* O God! I have an ill-divining soul;

Methinks, I see thee, now thou art below,

As one dead in the bottom of a tomb:

Either my eyesight fails, or thou look'st pale.

*Rom.* And trust me, love, in my eye so do you:  
Dry sorrow drinks our blood. Adieu! adieu!

*[Exit ROMEO.]*

*Jul.* O fortune, fortune! all men call thee fickle:

If thou art fickle, what dost thou with him

That is renown'd for faith?<sup>s</sup> Be fickle, fortune;

<sup>s</sup> *That is renown'd for faith?* This Romeo, so renown'd for faith, was but the day before dying for love of another woman: yet this is natural. Romeo was the darling object of Juliet's love, and Romeo was, of course, to have every excellence.

For then, I hope, thou wilt not keep him long,  
But send him back.

*La. Cap.* [*Within.*] Ho, daughter! are you up?

*Jul.* Who is't that calls? is it my lady mother?  
Is she not down so late, or up so early?  
What unaccustom'd cause procures her hither?<sup>6</sup>

*Enter Lady CAPULET.*

*La. Cap.* Why, how now, Juliet?

*Jul.* Madam, I am not well.

*La. Cap.* Evermore weeping for your cousin's  
death?

What, wilt thou wash him from his grave with  
tears?

An if thou could'st, thou could'st not make him live;  
Therefore, have done: Some grief shows much of  
love;

But much of grief shows still some want of wit.

*Jul.* Yet let me weep for such a feeling loss.

*La. Cap.* So shall you fell the loss, but not the  
friend

Which you weep for.

*Jul.* Feeling so the loss,

I cannot choose but ever weep the friend.

*La. Cap.* Well, girl, thou weep'st not so much  
for his death,

As that the villain lives which slaughter'd him.

*Jul.* What villain, madam?

*La. Cap.* That same villain, Romeo.

*Jul.* Villain and he are many miles asunder.

God pardon him! I do, with all my heart;  
And yet no man, like he, doth grieve my heart.

*La. Cap.* That is, because the traitor murderer  
lives.

<sup>6</sup> ——— procures her hither? ] Procures for brings.

*Jul.* Ay, madam, from<sup>7</sup> the reach of these my hands.

'Would, none but I might venge my cousin's death!

*La. Cap.* We will have vengeance for it, fear thou not:

Then weep no more. I'll send to one in Mantua,—

Where that same banish'd runagate doth live,—

That shall bestow on him so sure a draught,

That he shall soon keep Tybalt company:

And then, I hope, thou wilt be satisfied.

*Jul.* Indeed, I never shall be satisfied

With Romeo, till I behold him—dead—

Is my poor heart so for a kinsman vex'd:—

Madam, if you could find out but a man

To bear a poison, I would temper it;

That Romeo should, upon receipt thereof,

Soon sleep in quiet.—O, how my heart abhors

To hear him nam'd,—and cannot come to him.—

To wreak the love I bore my cousin Tybalt

Upon his body that hath slaughter'd him!

*La. Cap.* Find thou the means, and I'll find such a man.

But now I'll tell thee joyful tidings, girl.

*Jul.* And joy comes well in such a needful time:

What are they, I beseech your ladyship?

*La. Cap.* Well, well, thou hast a careful father, child;

One, who, to put thee from thy heaviness,

Hath sorted out a sudden day of joy,

That thou expect'st not, nor I look'd not for.

*Jul.* Madam, in happy time,<sup>8</sup> what day is that?

<sup>7</sup> *Ay, madam, from, &c.*] Juliet's equivocations are rather too artful for a mind disturbed by the loss of a new lover. JOHNSON.

<sup>8</sup> — *in happy time,*] *A la bonne heure.* This phrase was interjected, when the hearer was not quite so well pleased as the speaker.



*La. Cap.* Marry, my child, early next Thursday morn,

The gallant, young, and noble gentleman,  
The county Paris,<sup>9</sup> at St. Peter's church,  
Shall happily make thee there a joyful bride.

*Jul.* Now, by St. Peter's church, and Peter too,  
He shall not make me there a joyful bride.

I wonder at this haste; that I must wed  
Ere he, that should be husband, comes to woo.

I pray you, tell my lord and father, madam,  
I will not marry yet; and, when I do, I swear,  
It shall be Romeo, whom you know I hate,  
Rather than Paris:—These are news indeed!

*La. Cap.* Here comes your father; tell him so  
yourself,  
And see how he will take it at your hands

*Enter CAPULET and Nurse.*

*Cap.* When the sun sets, the air doth drizzle dew;  
But for the sunset of my brother's son,  
It rains downright.—

How now? a conduit, girl? what, still in tears?  
Evermore showering? In one little body  
Thou counterfeit'st a bark, a sea, a wind:  
For still thy eyes, which I may call the sea,  
Do ebb and flow with tears; the bark thy body is,  
Sailing in this salt flood; the winds, thy sighs;  
Who,—raging with thy tears, and they with them,—  
Without a sudden calm, will overset  
Thy tempest-tossed body.—How now, wife?

<sup>9</sup> *The county Paris,*] Paris, though in one place called *Earl*, is most commonly stiled the *Countie* in this play. Shakspeare seems to have preferred, for some reason or other, the *Italian Comte* to our *Count*: perhaps he took it from the old English novel, from which he is said to have taken his plot; and in which Paris is first stiled a *young Earle*, and afterwards *Counte*, *Countee*, *County*; according to the unsettled orthography of the time.

Have you deliver'd to her our decree?

*La. Cap.* Ay, sir; but she will none, she gives you thanks.

I would, the fool were married to her grave!

*Cap.* Soft, take me with you, take me with you, wife.

How! will she none? doth she not give us thanks?  
Is she not proud? doth she not count her bless'd,  
Unworthy as she is, that we have wrought  
So worthy a gentleman to be her bridegroom?

*Jul.* Not proud, you have; but thankful, that you have:

Proud can I never be of what I hate;  
But thankful even for hate, that is meant love.

*Cap.* How now! how now, chop-logick! What is this?

Proud,—and, I thank you,—and, I thank you not;—  
And yet not proud;—Mistress minion, you,  
Thank me no thankings, nor proud me no pouds,  
But settle your fine joints 'gainst Thursday next,  
To go with Paris to Saint Peter's church,  
Or I will drag thee on a hurdle thither.  
Out, you green-sickness carrion! out, you baggage!  
You tallow face!

*La. Cap.* Fye, fye! what, are you mad?

*Jul.* Good father, I beseech you on my knees,  
Hear me with patience but to speak a word.

*Cap.* Hang thee, young baggage! disobedient wretch!

I tell thee what,—get thee to church o' Thursday,  
Or never after look me in the face:  
Speak not, reply not, do not answer me;  
My fingers itch.—Wife we scarce thought us bless'd,  
That God had sent us but this only child;  
But now I see this one is one too much,  
And that we have a curse in having her;  
Out on her, hilding!

*Nurse.* God in heaven bless her!—  
You are to blame, my lord, to rate her so.

*Cap.* And why, my lady wisdom? hold your tongue,  
Good prudence; smatter with your gossips, go.

*Nurse.* I speak no treason.

*Cap.* O, God ye good den!

*Nurse.* May not one speak?

*Cap.* Peace, you mumbling fool!  
Utter your gravity o'er a gossip's bowl,  
For here we need it not.

*La. Cap.* You are too hot.

*Cap.* God's bread! it makes me mad: Day, night,  
late, early,

At home, abroad, alone, in company,  
Waking, or sleeping, still my care hath been  
To have her match'd: and having now provided  
A gentleman of princely parentage,  
Of fair demesnes, youthful, and nobly train'd,  
Stuff'd (as they say,) with honourable parts,  
Proportion'd as one's heart could wish a man,—  
And then to have a wretched puling fool,  
A whining mammet, in her fortune's tender,  
To answer—*I'll not wed,—I cannot love,*  
*I am too young,—I pray you, pardon me;—*  
But, an you will not wed, I'll pardon you:  
Graze where you will, you shall not house with me;  
Look to't, think on't, I do not use to jest.  
Thursday is near; lay hand on heart, advise:  
An you be mine, I'll give you to my friend;  
An you be not, hang, beg, starve, die i' the streets,  
For, by my soul, I'll ne'er acknowledge thee,  
Nor what is mine shall never do thee good:  
Trust to't, bethink you, I'll not be forsworn. [*Exit.*]

*Jul.* Is there no pity sitting in the clouds,  
That sees into the bottom of my grief?  
O, sweet my mother, cast me not away!  
Delay this marriage for a month, a week;

Or, if you do not, make the bridal bed  
In that dim monument where Tybalt lies.

*La. Cap.* Talk not to me, for I'll not speak a  
word;

Do as thou wilt, for I have done with thee. [*Erit.*]

*Jul.* O God!—O nurse! how shalt this be pre-  
vented?

My husband is on earth, my faith in heaven;  
How shall that faith return again to earth,  
Unless that husband send it me from heaven  
By leaving earth?—comfort me, counsel me.—  
Alack, alack, that heaven should practise stratagems  
Upon so soft a subject as myself!—  
What say'st thou? hast thou not a word of joy?  
Some comfort, nurse.

*Nurse.* 'Faith, here 'tis: Romeo  
Is banished; and all the world to nothing,  
That he dares ne'er come back to challenge you;  
Or, if he do, it needs must be by stealth.  
Then, since the case so stands as now it doth,  
I think it best you married with the county.<sup>1</sup>  
O, he's a lovely gentleman!  
Romeo's a dishclout to him; an eagle, madam,  
Hath not so green, so quick, so fair an eye,  
As Paris hath. Beshrew my very heart,  
I think you are happy in this second match,  
For it excels your first: or if it did not,  
Your first is dead; or 'twere as good he were,  
As living here and you no use of him.

*Jul.* Speakest thou from thy heart?

<sup>1</sup> *I think it best you married with the county.*] The character of the Nurse exhibits a just picture of those whose actions have no principles for their foundation. She has been unfaithful to the trust reposed in her by Capulet, and is ready to embrace any expedient that offers, to avert the consequences of her first infidelity. STEEVENS.

*Nurse.* From my soul too;  
Or else beshrew them both.

*Jul.* Amen!

*Nurse.* To what?

*Jul.* Well, thou hast comforted me marvellous much.

Go in; and tell my lady I am gone,  
Having displeas'd my father, to Laurence' cell,  
To make confession, and to be absolv'd.

*Nurse.* Marry, I will; and this is wisely done.

[*Exit.*

*Jul.* Ancient damnation! O most wicked fiend!  
Is it more sin—to wish me thus forsworn,  
Or to dispraise my lord with that same tongue  
Which she hath prais'd him with above compare  
So many thousand times?—Go, counsellor;  
Thou and my bosom henceforth shall be twain.—  
I'll to the friar, to know his remedy;  
If all else fail, myself have power to die. [*Exit.*

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I. Friar Laurence's Cell.

*Enter Friar LAURENCE and PARIS.*

*Fri.* On Thursday, sir? the time is very short.

*Par.* My father Capulet will have it so;  
And I am nothing slow, to slack his haste.<sup>2</sup>

*Fri.* You say, you do not know the lady's mind;  
Uneven is the course, I like it not.

*Par.* Immoderately she weeps for Tybalt's death,

<sup>2</sup> *And I am nothing slow, &c.] His haste shall not be abated by my slowness.*

And therefore have I little talk'd of love ;  
 For Venus smiles not in a house of tears.  
 Now, sir, her father counts it dangerous,  
 That she doth give her sorrow so much sway ;  
 And, in his wisdom, hastes our marriage,  
 To stop the inundation of her tears ;  
 Which, too much minded by herself alone,  
 May be put from her by society ;  
 Now do you know the reason of this haste.

*Fri.* I would I knew not why it should be slow'd.

[*Aside.*

Look, sir, here comes the lady towards my cell.

*Enter JULIET.*

*Par.* Happily met, my lady, and my wife !

*Jul.* That may be, sir, when I may be a wife.

*Par.* That may be, must be, love, on Thursday  
 next.

*Jul.* What must be shall be.

*Fri.* That's a certain text.

*Par.* Come you to make confession to this father ?

*Jul.* To answer that, were to confess to you.

*Par.* Do not deny to him, that you love me.

*Jul.* I will confess to you, that I love him.

*Par.* So will you, I am sure, that you love me.

*Jul.* If I do so, it will be of more price,  
 Being spoke behind your back, than to your face.

*Par.* Poor soul, thy face is much abus'd with  
 tears.

*Jul.* The tears have got small victory by that ;  
 For it was bad enough, before their spite.

*Par.* Thou wrong'st it, more than tears, with that  
 report.

*Jul.* That is no slander, sir, that is a truth ;  
 And what I spake, I spake it to my face.

*Par.* Thy face is mine, and thou hast slander'd it.

*Jul.* It may be so, for it is not mine own.—  
Are you at leisure, holy father, now;  
Or shall I come to you at evening mass?<sup>3</sup>

*Fri.* My leisure serves me, pensive daughter;  
now:—

My lord, we must entreat the time alone.

*Par.* God shield, I should disturb devotion!—  
Juliet, on Thursday early will I rouse you:  
Till then, adieu! and keep this holy kiss.

[*Exit PARIS.*]

*Jul.* O, shut the door! and when thou hast done  
so,

Come weep with me: Past hope, past cure, past help!

*Fri.* Ah, Juliet, I already know thy grief;  
It strains me past the compass of my wits:  
I hear thou must, and nothing must prorogue it,  
On Thursday next be married to this county.

*Jul.* Tell me not, friar, that thou hear'st of this,  
Unless thou tell me how I may prevent it:  
If, in thy wisdom, thou canst give no help,  
Do thou but call my resolution wise,  
And with this knife I'll help it presently.  
God join'd my heart and Romeo's, thou our hands;  
And ere this hand, by thee to Romeo seal'd,  
Shall be the label to another deed,<sup>4</sup>  
Or my true heart with treacherous revolt  
Turn to another, this shall slay them both:  
Therefore, out of thy long-experienc'd time,  
Give me some present counsel; or, behold,  
'Twixt my extremes and me this bloody knife

<sup>3</sup> *Or shall I come to you at evening mass?*] Juliet means *vespers*. There is no such thing as *evening mass*.

<sup>4</sup> *Shall be the label to another deed,*] The seals of deeds in our author's time were not impressed on the parchment itself on which the deed was written, but were appended on distinct slips or labels affixed to the deed.

Shall play the umpire;<sup>5</sup> arbitrating that  
Which the commission of thy years and art<sup>6</sup>  
Could to no issue of true honour bring.  
Be not so long to speak; I long to die,  
If what thou speak'st speak not of remedy.

*Fri.* Hold, daughter; I do spy a kind of hope,  
Which craves as desperate an execution  
As that is desperate which we would prevent.  
If, rather than to marry county Paris,  
Thou hast the strength of will to slay thyself;  
Then is it likely, thou wilt undertake  
A thing like death to chide away this shame,  
That cop'st with death himself to scape from it;  
And, if thou dar'st, I'll give thee remedy.

*Jul.* O, bid me leap, rather than marry Paris,  
From off the battlements of yonder tower;  
Or walk in thievish ways; or bid me lurk  
Where serpents are; chain me with roaring bears;  
Or shut me nightly in a charnel-house,  
O'er-cover'd quite with dead men's rattling bones,  
With reeky shanks, and yellow chapless skulls;  
Or bid me go into a new-made grave,  
And hide me with a dead man in his shroud;  
Things that, to hear them told, have made me  
tremble;  
And I will do it without fear or doubt,  
To live an unstain'd wife to my sweet love.

*Fri.* Hold, then; go home, be merry, give consent  
To marry Paris: Wednesday is to-morrow;  
To-morrow night look that thou lie alone,  
Let not thy nurse lie with thee in thy chamber:  
Take thou this phial, being then in bed,  
And this distilled liquor drink thou off;

<sup>5</sup> *Shall play the umpire;*] That is, this knife shall decide the struggle between me and my distresses.

<sup>6</sup> ——— *commission of thy years and art* —] Commission is for authority or power.



When, presently, through all thy veins shall run  
 A cold and drowsy humour, which shall seize  
 Each vital spirit; for no pulse shall keep  
 His natural progress, but surcease to beat:  
 No warmth, no breath, shall satisfy thou liv'st;  
 The roses in thy lips and cheeks shall fade  
 To paly ashes; thy eyes' windows fall,  
 Like death, when he shuts up the day of life;  
 Each part, depriv'd of supple government,  
 Shall stiff, and stark, and cold, appear like death:  
 And in this borrow'd likeness of shrunk death  
 Thou shalt remain full two and forty hours,  
 And then awake as from a pleasant sleep.  
 Now when the bridegroom in the morning comes  
 To rouse thee from thy bed, there art thou dead:  
 Then (as the manner of our country is,)  
 In thy best robes uncover'd on the bier,  
 Thou shalt be borne to that same ancient vault,  
 Where all the kindred of the Capulets lie.  
 In the mean time, against thou shalt awake,  
 Shall Romeo by my letters know our drift;  
 And hither shall he come; and he and I  
 Will watch thy waking, and that very night  
 Shall Romeo bear thee hence to Mantua.  
 And this shall free thee from this present shame;  
 If no unconstant toy,<sup>7</sup> nor womanish fear,  
 Abate thy valour in the acting it.

*Jul.* Give me, O give me! tell me not of fear.

*Fri.* Hold; get you gone, be strong and prosperous

In this resolve: I'll send a friar with speed  
 To Mantua, with my letters to thy lord.

*Jul.* Love, give me strength! and strength shall  
 help afford.

Farewell, dear father!

[*Exeunt.*

<sup>7</sup> *If no unconstant toy, &c.] If no fickle freak, no light caprice, no change of fancy, hinder the performance.*

SCENE II.

*A Room in Capulet's House.*

*Enter* CAPULET, *Lady* CAPULET, Nurse, and Servant.

*Cap.* So many guests invite as here are writ.—

[*Exit* Servant.]

Sirrah, go hire me twenty cunning cooks.<sup>8</sup>

*2 Serv.* You shall have none ill, sir; for I'll try if they can lick their fingers.

*Cap.* How canst thou try them so?

*2 Serv.* Marry, sir, 'tis an ill cook that cannot lick his own fingers: therefore he, that cannot lick his fingers, goes not with me.

*Cap.* Go, begone.—

[*Exit* Servant.]

We shall be much unfurnish'd for this time.—

What, is my daughter gone to friar Laurence?

*Nurse.* Ay, forsooth.

*Cap.* Well, he may chance to do some good on her:

A peevish self-will'd harlotry it is.

*Enter* JULIET.

*Nurse.* See, where she comes from shrift<sup>9</sup> with merry look.

*Cap.* How now, my headstrong? where have you been gadding?<sup>1</sup>

<sup>8</sup> — go hire me twenty cunning cooks.] *Twenty cooks for half a dozen guests!* Either Capulet has altered his mind strangely, or our author forgot what he had just made him tell us. See p. 79.

<sup>9</sup> — from shrift — —] i. e. from confession.

<sup>1</sup> — gadding?] The primitive sense of this word was to straggle from house to house, and collect money, under pretence of singing carols to the Blessed Virgin.

*Jul.* Where I have learn'd me to repent the sin  
Of disobedient opposition  
To you, and your behests ; and am enjoin'd  
By holy Laurence to fall prostrate here,  
And beg your pardon :—Pardon, I beseech you !  
Henceforward I am ever rul'd by you.

*Cap.* Send for the county ; go tell him of this ;  
I'll have this knot knit up to-morrow morning.

*Jul.* I met the youthful lord at Laurence' cell ;  
And gave him what becomed love<sup>a</sup> I might,  
Not stepping o'er the bounds of modesty.

*Cap.* Why, I am glad on't ; this is well,—stand  
up :

This is as't should be.—Let me see the county ;  
Ay, marry, go, I say, and fetch him hither.—  
Now, afore God, this reverend holy friar,  
All our whole city is much bound to him.

*Jul.* Nurse, will you go with me into my closet,  
To help me sort such needful ornaments  
As you think fit to furnish me to-morrow ?

*La. Cap.* No, not till Thursday ; there is time  
enough.

*Cap.* Go, nurse, go with her :—we'll to church  
to-morrow.

[*Exeunt JULIET and Nurse.*]

*La. Cap.* We shall be short in our provision ;  
'Tis now near night.

*Cap.* Tush ! I will stir about,  
And all things shall be well, I warrant thee, wife :  
Go thou to Juliet, help to deck up her ;  
I'll not to bed to-night ;—let me alone ;  
I'll play the housewife for this once.—What, ho !—  
They are all forth : Well, I will walk myself  
To county Paris, to prepare him up

<sup>a</sup> — becomed love —] *Becomed* for *becoming* : one participle  
for the other ; a frequent practice with our author.

Against to-morrow : my heart is wond'rous light,  
Since this same wayward girl is so reclaim'd.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.

*Juliet's Chamber.*

*Enter JULIET and NURSE.*

*Jul.* Ay, those attires are best:—But, gentle nurse,  
I pray thee, leave me to myself to-night;  
For I have need of many orisons<sup>3</sup>  
To move the heavens to smile upon my state,  
Which, well thou know'st, is cross and full of sin.

*Enter Lady CAPULET.*

*La. Cap.* What, are you busy? do you need my help?

*Jul.* No, madam; we have cull'd such necessaries  
As are behoveful for our state to-morrow:  
So please you, let me now be left alone,  
And let the nurse this night sit up with you;  
For, I am sure, you have your hands full all,  
In this so sudden business.

*La. Cap.* Good night!  
Get thee to bed, and rest; for thou hast need.

[*Exeunt Lady CAPULET and Nurse.*]

*Jul.* Farewell!—God knows, when we shall meet again.

I have a faint cold fear thrills through my veins,  
That almost freezes up the heat of life:  
I'll call them back again to comfort me;—

<sup>3</sup> For *I have need*, &c.] Juliet plays most of her pranks under the appearance of religion: perhaps Shakspeare meant to punish her hypocrisy. JOHNSON.

Nurse!—What should she do here?

My dismal scene I needs must act alone.—

Come, phial.—

What if this mixture do not work at all?

Must I of force be married to the county?—

No, no;—this shall forbid it:—lie thou there.—

[*Laying down a Dagger.*]

What if it be a poison, which the friar

Subtly hath minister'd to have me dead;

Lest in this marriage he should be dishonour'd,

Because he married me before to Romeo?

I fear, it is: and yet, methinks, it should not,

For he hath still been tried a holy man:

I will not entertain so bad a thought.—

How if, when I am laid into the tomb,

I wake before the time that Romeo

Come to redeem me? there's a fearful point!

Shall I not then be stifled in the vault,

To whose foul mouth no healthsome air breathes in,

And there die strangled ere my Romeo comes?

Or, if I live, is it not very like,

The horrible conceit of death and night,

Together with the terror of the place,—

As in a vault, an ancient receptacle,

Where, for these many hundred years, the bones

Of all my buried ancestors are pack'd;

Where bloody Tybalt, yet but green in earth,<sup>4</sup>

Lies fest'ring<sup>5</sup> in his shroud; where, as they say,

At some hours in the night spirits resort;—

Alack, alack! is it not like, that I,<sup>6</sup>

So early waking,—what with loathsome smells;

And shrieks like mandrakes' torn out of the earth,

That living mortals, hearing them, run mad;—

<sup>4</sup> — *green in earth,*] i. e. fresh in earth, newly buried.

<sup>5</sup> *Lies fest'ring —*] To *fester* is to corrupt.

<sup>6</sup> — *is it not like, that I,*] This speech is confused, and inconsequential, according to the disorder of Juliet's mind.

O! if I wake, shall I not be distraught,<sup>7</sup>  
 Environed with all these hideous fears?  
 And madly play with my forefathers' joints?  
 And pluck the mangled Tybalt from his shroud?  
 And, in this rage, with some great kinsman's bone,  
 As with a club, dash out my desperate brains?  
 O, look! methinks, I see my cousin's ghost  
 Seeking out Romeo, that did spit his body  
 Upon a rapier's point:—Stay, Tybalt, stay!—  
 Romeo, I come! this do I drink to thee.

[*She throws herself on the Bed.*]

SCENE IV.

Capulet's Hall.

*Enter Lady CAPULET and Nurse.*

*La. Cap.* Hold, take these keys, and fetch more  
 spices, nurse.

*Nurse.* They call for dates and quinces in the  
 pastry.<sup>8</sup>

*Enter CAPULET.*

*Cap.* Come, stir, stir, stir! the second cock hath  
 crow'd,  
 The curfew bell<sup>9</sup> hath rung, 'tis three o'clock:—

<sup>7</sup> — be distraught,] *Distraught* is distracted.

<sup>8</sup> *They call for dates and quinces in the pastry.*] i. e. in the room where paste was made. So *laundry*, *spicery*, &c.

<sup>9</sup> *The curfew bell* —] The *curfew bell* is universally rung at eight or nine o'clock at night; generally according to the season. The term is here used with peculiar impropriety, as it is not believed that any bell was ever rung so early as *three* in the morning. The derivation of *curfew* is well known, but it is a mere vulgar error that the institution was a badge of slavery imposed by the Norman Conqueror. To put out the fire became necessary only because it was time to go to bed: And if the *curfew* commanded all fires to

Look to the bak'd meats, good Angelica :  
Spare not for cost.

*Nurse.* Go, go, you cot-quean, go,  
Get you to bed; 'faith, you'll be sick to-morrow  
For this night's watching.

*Cap.* No, not a whit; What! I have watch'd ere  
now

All night for lesser cause, and ne'er been sick.

*La. Cap.* Ay, you have been a mouse-hunt in  
your time;<sup>1</sup>

But I will watch you from such watching now.

[*Exeunt Lady CAPULET and Nurse.*]

*Cap.* A jealous-hood, a jealous-hood!—Now,  
fellow,

What's there?

*Enter Servants, with Spits, Logs, and Baskets.*

1 *Serv.* Things for the cook, sir; but I know not  
what.

*Cap.* Make haste, make haste. [*Exit 1 Serv.*]  
Sirrah, fetch drier logs;

Call Peter, he will show thee where they are.

2 *Serv.* I have a head, sir, that will find out logs,  
And never trouble Peter for the matter. [*Exit.*]

*Cap.* 'Mass, and well said; A merry whoreson!  
ha,

Thou shalt be logger-head.—Good faith, 'tis day:

be extinguished, the morning bell ordered them to be lighted again. In short, the ringing of those two bells was a manifest and essential service to people who had scarcely any other means of measuring their time. *RITSON.*

<sup>1</sup> ——— a mouse-hunt in your time;] In Norfolk, and many other parts of England, the cant term for a weasel is—a *mouse-hunt*. The intrigues of this animal, like those of the cat-kind, are usually carried on during the night. This circumstance will account for the appellation which Lady Capulet allows her husband to have formerly deserved.

The county will be here with musick straight,  
[Musick within.]

For so he said he would. I hear him near:—

Nurse!—Wife!—what, ho!—what, nurse, I say!

*Enter Nurse.*

Go, waken Juliet, go, and trim her up;  
 I'll go and chat with Paris:—Hie, make haste,  
 Make haste! the bridegroom he is come already:  
 Make haste, I say! [Exeunt.]

SCENE V.

*Juliet's Chamber; JULIET on the Bed.*

*Enter Nurse.*

*Nurse.* Mistress!—what, mistress!—Juliet!—fast,  
 I warrant her, she:—

Why, lamb!—why, lady!—fye, you slug-a-bed!—  
 Why, love, I say!—madam! sweet-heart!—why,  
 bride!—

What, not a word?—you take your pennyworths  
 now;

Sleep for a week; for the next night, I warrant,  
 The county Paris hath set up his rest,  
 That you shall rest but little.—God forgive me,  
 (Marry, and amen!) how sound is she asleep!  
 I needs must wake her:—Madam, madam, madam!  
 Ay, let the county take you in your bed;  
 He'll fright you up, i'faith.—Will it not be?  
 What, drest! and in your clothes! and down again!  
 I must needs wake you: Lady! lady! lady!  
 Alas! alas!—Help! help! my lady's dead!—  
 O, well-a-day, that ever I was born!—  
 Some aqua-vitæ, ho!—my lord! my lady!



*Enter Lady CAPULET.*

*La. Cap.* What noise is here?

*Nurse.* O lamentable day!

*La. Cap.* What is the matter?

*Nurse.* Look, look! O heavy day!

*La. Cap.* O me, O me!—my child, my only life,  
Revive, look up, or I will die with thee!—  
Help, help!—call help.

*Enter CAPULET.*

*Cap.* For shame, bring Juliet forth; her lord is  
come.

*Nurse.* She's dead, deceas'd, she's dead; alack  
the day!

*La. Cap.* Alack the day! she's dead, she's dead,  
she's dead.

*Cap.* Ha! let me see her:—Out, alas! she's cold;  
Her blood is settled, and her joints are stiff;  
Life and these lips have long been separated:  
Death lies on her, like an untimely frost  
Upon the sweetest flower of all the field.  
Accursed time! unfortunate old man!

*Nurse.* O lamentable day!

*La. Cap.* O woful time!

*Cap.* Death, that hath ta'en her hence to make  
me wail,  
Ties up my tongue, and will not let me speak.

*Enter Friar LAURENCE and PARIS, with Musicians.*

*Fri.* Come, is the bride ready to go to church?

*Cap.* Ready to go, but never to return:  
O son, the night before thy wedding day  
Hath death lain with thy bride:—See, there she lies.  
Flower as she was, deflowered by him.

Death is my son-in-law, death is my heir;  
My daughter he hath wedded! I will die,  
And leave him all; life leaving, all is death's.

*Par.* Have I thought long to see this morning's  
face,  
And doth it give me such a sight as this?

*La. Cap.* Accurs'd, unhappy, wretched, hateful  
day!

Most miserable hour, that e'er time saw  
In lasting labour of his pilgrimage!  
But one, poor one, one poor and loving child,  
But one thing to rejoice and solace in,  
And cruel death hath catch'd it from my sight.

*Nurse.* O woe! O woful, woful, woful day!  
Most lamentable day! most woful day,  
That ever, ever, I did yet behold!  
O day! O day! O day! O hateful day!  
Never was seen so black a day as this:  
O woful day, O woful day!

*Par.* Beguil'd, divorced, wronged, spited, slain!  
Most détestable death, by thee beguil'd,  
By cruel cruel thee quite overthrown!—  
O love! O life!—not life, but love in death!

*Cap.* Despis'd, distressed, hated, martyr'd, kill'd!—  
Uncomfortable time! why cam'st thou now  
'To murder murder our solemnity?—  
O child! O child!—my soul, and not my child!—  
Dead art thou, dead!—alack! my child is dead;  
And, with my child, my joys are buried!

*Fri.* Peace, ho, for shame! confusion's cure lives  
not

In these confusions. Heaven and yourself  
Had part in this fair maid; now heaven hath all,  
And all the better is it for the maid:  
Your part in her you could not keep from death;  
But heaven keeps his part in eternal life.  
The most you sought was—her promotion;

For 'twas your heaven, she should be advanc'd :  
 And weep ye now, seeing she is advanc'd,  
 Above the clouds, as high as heaven itself ?  
 O, in this love, you love your child so ill,  
 That you run mad, seeing that she is well :  
 She's not well married, that lives married long ;  
 But she's best married, that dies married young.  
 Dry up your tears, and stick your rosemary  
 On this fair corse ; and, as the custom is,  
 In all her best array bear her to church :  
 For though fond nature bids us all lament,  
 Yet nature's tears are reason's merriment.

*Cap.* All things, that we ordained festival,  
 Turn from their office to black funeral :  
 Our instruments, to melancholy bells ;  
 Our wedding cheer, to a sad burial feast ;  
 Our solemn hymns to sullen dirges change ;  
 Our bridal flowers serve for a buried corse,  
 And all things change them to the contrary.

*Fri.* Sir, go you in,—and, madam, go with him ;—  
 And go, sir Paris ;—every one prepare  
 To follow this fair corse unto her grave :  
 The heavens do low'r upon you, for some ill ;  
 Move them no more, by crossing their high will.

[*Exeunt* CAPULET, *Lady* CAPULET, PARIS,  
*and* Friar.

1 *Mus.* 'Faith, we may put up our pipes, and be gone.

*Nurse.* Honest good fellows, ah, put up, put up ;  
 For, well you know, this is a pitiful case.

[*Exit* Nurse.

1 *Mus.* Ay, by my troth, the case may be amended.

*Enter* PETER.

*Pet.* Musicians, O, musicians, *Heart's ease, heart's ease* ;  
 O, an you will have me live, play—*heart's ease*.

1 *Mus.* Why heart's ease?

*Pet.* O, musicians, because my heart itself plays  
—*My heart is full of woe*: O, play me some merry  
dump,<sup>2</sup> to comfort me.

2 *Mus.* Not a dump we; 'tis no time to play now.

*Pet.* You will not then?

*Mus.* No.

*Pet.* I will then give it you soundly.

1 *Mus.* What will you give us?

*Pet.* No money, on my faith; but the gleek: I  
will give you the minstrel.<sup>3</sup>

1 *Mus.* Then will I give you the serving-creature.

*Pet.* Then will I lay the serving-creature's dagger  
on your pate. I will carry no crotchets: I'll *re* you;  
I'll *fa* you; Do you note me?

1 *Mus.* An you *re* us, and *fa* us, you note us.

2 *Mus.* Pray you, put up your dagger, and put  
out your wit.

*Pet.* Then have at you with my wit; I will dry-  
beat you with an iron wit, and put up my iron dag-  
ger:—Answer me like men:

*When griping grief the heart doth wound,  
And doleful dumps the mind oppress,  
Then musick, with her silver sound;*

<sup>2</sup> — O, play me some merry dump,] A *dump* anciently signi-  
fied some kind of dance, as well as sorrow. But on this occasion  
it means a mournful song. *Dumps* were heavy mournful tunes;  
possibly indeed any sort of movements were once so called, as we  
sometimes meet with a *merry dump*. Hence *doleful dumps*, deep  
sorrow, or grievous affliction, as in the verses above, and in the  
less ancient ballad of *Chevy Chase*. It is still said of a person un-  
commonly sad, that he is in the *dumps*.

<sup>3</sup> No money, on my faith; but the gleek: I will give you the  
minstrel.] Shakspeare's pun has here remained unnoticed. A  
*Gleekman* or *Gligman*, as Dr. Percy has shown, signified a min-  
strel. The word *gleek* here signifies scorn; and is borrowed from  
the old game so called.

Why, *silver sound*? why, *musick with her silver sound*?

What say you, Simon Catling?<sup>4</sup>

1 *Mus.* Marry, sir, because silver hath a sweet sound.

*Pet.* Pretty! What say you, Hugh Rebeck?<sup>5</sup>

2 *Mus.* I say—*silver sound*, because musicians sound for silver.

*Pet.* Pretty too!—What say you, James Sound-post?

3 *Mus.* 'Faith, I know not what to say.

*Pet.* O, I ery you mercy! you are the singer: I will say for you. It is—*musick with her silver sound*, because such fellows as you have seldom gold for sounding:—

*Then musick with her silver sound,  
With speedy help doth lend redress.*

*[Exit, singing.]*

1 *Mus.* What a pestilent knave is this same?

2 *Mus.* Hang him, Jack! Come, we'll in here; tarry for the mourners, and stay dinner. *[Exeunt.]*

## ACT V.<sup>6</sup>

### SCENE I. Mantua. A Street.

*Enter ROMEO.*

*Rom.* If I may trust the flattering eye of sleep,<sup>7</sup>

<sup>4</sup> — Simon Catling.†] A *catling* was a small lute-string made of catgut.

<sup>5</sup> — Hugh Rebeck?]. The fiddler is so called from an instrument with three strings, which is mentioned by several of the old writers. *Rebec, rebecquin.*

My dreams presage some joyful news at hand :  
My bosom's lord<sup>6</sup> sits lightly in his throne ;  
And, all this day, an unaccustom'd spirit  
Lifts me above the ground with cheerful thoughts.  
I dreamt, my lady came and found me dead ;  
(Strange dream ! that gives a dead man leave to  
think,)

And breath'd such life with kisses in my lips,  
That I reviv'd, and was an emperor.  
Ah me ! how sweet is love itself possess'd,  
When but love's shadows are so rich in joy ?

*Enter BALTHASAR.*

News from Verona !—How now, Balthasar ?  
Dost thou not bring me letters from the friar ?  
How doth my lady ? Is my father well ?  
How fares my Juliet ? That I ask again ;  
For nothing can be ill, if she be well.

*Bal.* Then she is well, and nothing can be ill ;  
Her body sleeps in Capels' monument,  
And her immortal part with angels lives ;

<sup>6</sup> *Act V.]* The Acts are here properly enough divided, nor did any better distribution than the editors have already made, occur to me in the perusal of this play ; yet it may not be improper to remark, that in the first folio, and I suppose the foregoing editions are in the same state, there is no division of the Acts, and therefore some future editor may try, whether any improvement can be made, by reducing them to a length more equal, or interrupting the action at more proper intervals. JOHNSON.

<sup>7</sup> *If I may trust the flattering eye of sleep,]* By the eye of sleep Shakespeare perhaps means the visual power, which a man asleep is enabled, by the aid of imagination, to exercise ; or perhaps the eye of the god of sleep.

<sup>8</sup> *My bosom's lord —]* These three lines are very gay and pleasing. But why does Shakespeare give Romeo this involuntary cheerfulness just before the extremity of unhappiness ? Perhaps to show the vanity of trusting to those uncertain and casual exaltations or depressions, which many consider as certain foretokens of good and evil. JOHNSON.

I saw her laid low in her kindred's vault,  
 And presently took post to tell it you :  
 O pardon me for bringing these ill news,  
 Since you did leave it for my office, sir.

*Rom.* Is it even so? then I defy you, stars!—  
 Thou know'st my lodging: get me ink and paper,  
 And hire post-horses; I will hence to night.

*Bal.* Pardon me, sir, I will not leave you thus:  
 Your looks are pale and wild, and do import  
 Some misadventure.

*Rom.* Tush, thou art deceiv'd;  
 Leave me, and do the thing I bid thee do:  
 Hast thou no letters to me from the friar?

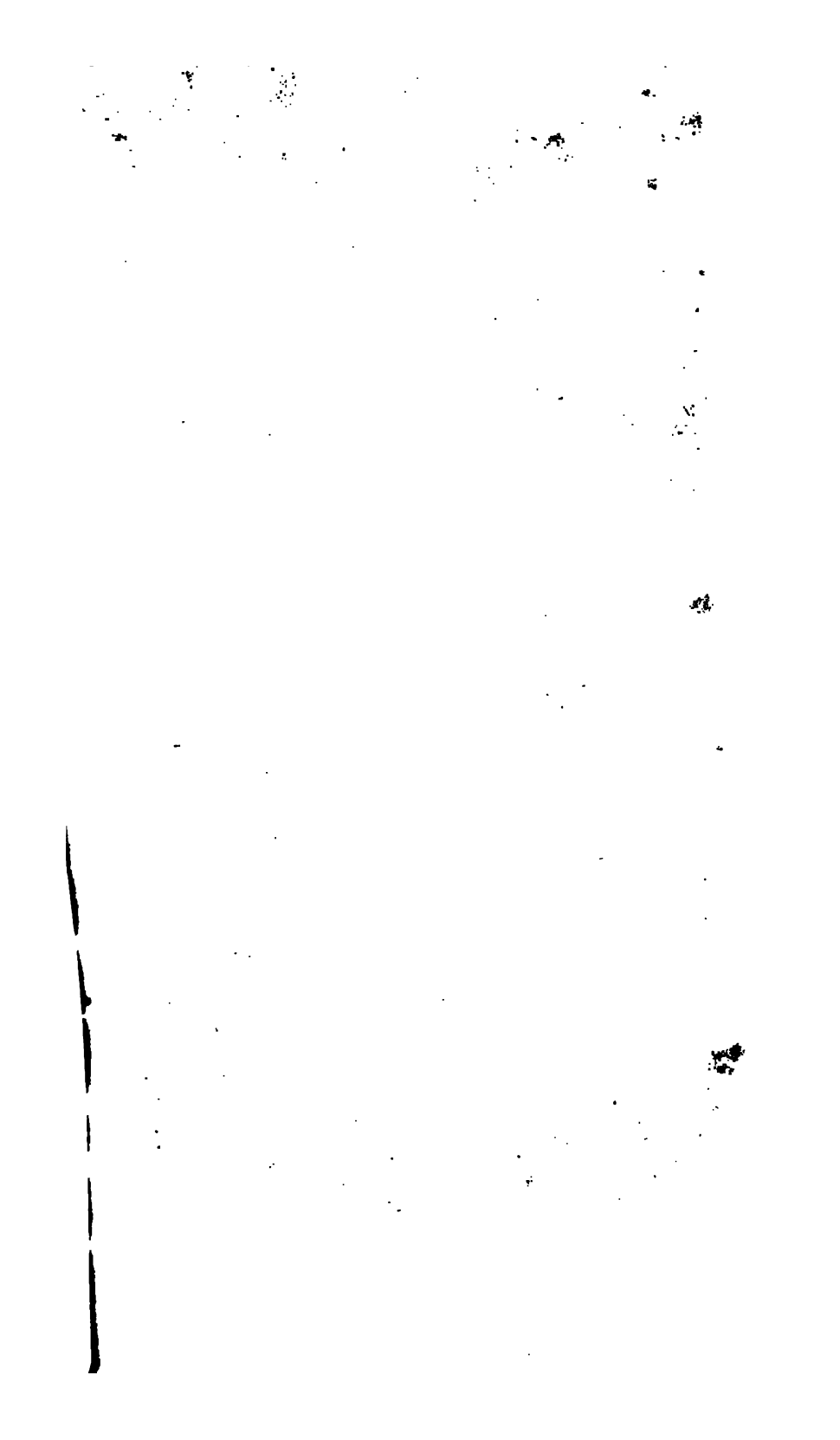
*Bal.* No, my good lord.

*Rom.* No matter: Get thee gone,  
 And hire those horses; I'll be with thee straight.

[*Exit BALTHASAR.*]

Well, Juliet, I will lie with thee to night.  
 Let's see for means:—O, mischief! thou art swift  
 To enter in the thoughts of desperate men!  
 I do remember an apothecary,—  
 And hereabouts he dwells,—whom late I noted  
 In tatter'd weeds, with overwhelming brows,  
 Culling of simples; meager were his looks,  
 And in his needy shop a tortoise hung,  
 Sharp misery had worn him to the bones:  
 An alligator stuff'd,<sup>9</sup> and other skins  
 Of ill-shap'd fishes; and about his shelves

<sup>9</sup> *An alligator stuff'd,*] I was many years ago assured, that formerly, when an apothecary first engaged with his druggist, he was gratuitously furnished by him with these articles of show, which were then imported for that use only. I have met with the alligator, tortoise, &c. hanging up in the shop of an ancient apothecary at Limehouse, as well as in places more remote from our metropolis. See Hogarth's *Marriage à la mode*, Plate III.—It may be remarked, however, that the apothecaries dismissed their alligators, &c. some time before the physicians were willing to part with their amber-headed canes and solemn periwigs. STEEVENS.







*H. Chaselli. R.A. inv.*

*W. Blake. sc.*

*Enter Apothecary.*

*Romeo. Come hither, Man. I see that thou art poor;  
Hold, there's forty ducats:—*

*Published by C & F Rivington London Jan 14. 1864.*

A beggarly account of empty boxes,  
 Green earthen pots, bladders, and musty seeds,  
 Remnants of packthread, and old cakes of roses,  
 Were thinly scatter'd, to make up a show.  
 Noting this penury, to myself I said—  
 An if a man<sup>1</sup> did need a poison now,  
 Whose sale is present death in Mantua,  
 Here lives a caitiff wretch would sell it him.  
 O, this same thought did but fore-run my need;  
 And this same needy man must sell it me.  
 As I remember, this should be the house:  
 Being holiday, the beggar's shop is shut.—  
 What, ho! apothecary!

*Enter Apothecary.*

*Ap.* Who calls so loud?

*Rom.* Come hither, man.—I see, that thou art  
 poor;

Hold, there is forty ducats: let me have  
 A dram of poison; such soon-speeding geer  
 As will disperse itself through all the veins,  
 That the life-weary taker may fall dead;  
 And that the trunk may be discharg'd of breath  
 As violently, as hasty powder fir'd  
 Doth hurry from the fatal cannon's womb.

*Ap.* Such mortal drugs I have; but Mantua's law  
 Is death, to any he that utters them.

*Rom.* Art thou so bare, and full of wretchedness,  
 And fear'st to die? famine is in thy cheeks,  
 Need and oppression starveth in thy eyes,  
 Upon thy back hangs ragged misery,  
 The world is not thy friend, nor the world's law:  
 The world affords no law to make thee rich;  
 Then be not poor, but break it, and take this.

<sup>1</sup> An if a man, &c.] This phraseology which means simply—  
 If, was not unfrequent in Shakspeare's time and before.

*Ap.* My poverty, but not my will, consents.

*Rom.* I pay thy poverty, and not thy will.

*Ap.* Put this in any liquid thing you will,  
And drink it off; and, if you had the strength  
Of twenty men, it would despatch you straight.

*Rom.* There is thy gold; worse poison to men's  
souls,

Doing more murders in this loathsome world,  
Than these poor compounds that thou may'st not sell;  
I sell thee poison, thou hast sold me none.  
Farewell; buy food, and get thyself in flesh.—  
Come, cordial, and not poison; go with me  
To Juliet's grave, for there must I use thee.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.

*Friar Laurence's Cell.*

*Enter Friar JOHN.*

*John.* Holy Franciscan friar! brother, ho!

*Enter Friar LAURENCE.*

*Lau.* This same should be the voice of friar John.—  
Welcome from Mantua: What says Romeo?  
Or, if his mind be writ, give me his letter.

*John.* Going to find a bare-foot brother out,  
One of our order, to associate me,<sup>2</sup>  
Here in this city visiting the sick,  
And finding him, the searchers of the town,  
Suspecting, that we both were in a house  
Where the infectious pestilence did reign,  
Seal'd up the doors, and would not let us forth;

<sup>2</sup> *One of our order, to associate me,]* Each friar has always a companion assigned him by the superior when he asks leave to go out; and thus they are a check upon each other.

So that my speed to Mantua there was stay'd.

*Lau.* Who bare my letter then to Romeo?

*John.* I could not send it,—here it is again,—  
Nor get a messenger to bring it thee,  
So fearful were they of infection.

*Lau.* Unhappy fortune! by my brotherhood,  
The letter was not nice,<sup>3</sup> but full of charge,  
Of dear import; and the neglecting it  
May do much danger: Friar John, go hence;  
Get me an iron crow, and bring it straight  
Unto my cell.

*John.* Brother, I'll go and bring't thee. [*Erit.*]

*Lau.* Now must I to the monument alone;  
Within this three hours will fair Juliet wake;  
She will beshrew me much, that Romeo  
Hath had no notice of these accidents;  
But I will write again to Mantua,  
And keep her at my cell till Romeo come;  
Poor living corse, clos'd in a dead man's tomb!  
[*Erit.*]

SCENE III.

*A Church-Yard; in it, a Monument belonging to the Capulets.*

*Enter PARIS, and his Page, bearing Flowers and a Torch.*

*Par.* Give me thy torch, boy: Hence, and stand aloof;—

Yet put it out, for I would not be seen.  
Under yon yew-trees lay thee all along,  
Holding thine ear close to the hollow ground;  
So shall no foot upon the churchyard tread,

<sup>3</sup>. ——— was not nice,] i. e. was not written on a trivial or idle subject.

(Being loose, unfirm, with digging up of graves,) But thou shalt hear it: whistle then to me, As signal that thou hear'st something approach, Give me those flowers. Do as I bid thee, go.

*Page.* I am almost afraid to stand alone Here in the churchyard; yet I will adventure.

[*Retires.*

*Par.* Sweet flower, with flowers I strew thy bridal bed:

Sweet tomb, that in thy circuit dost contain  
The perfect model of eternity;  
Fair Juliet, that with angels dost remain,  
Accept this latest favour at my hands;  
That living honour'd thee, and, being dead,  
With funeral praises do adorn thy tomb!

[*The Boy whistles.*

The boy gives warning, something doth approach.  
What cursed foot wanders this way to-night,  
To cross my obsequies, and true love's rites?  
What, with a torch!—muffle me, night, a while.

[*Retires.*

*Enter ROMEO and BALTHASAR with a Torch,  
Mattock, &c.*

*Rom.* Give me that mattock, and the wrenching iron.

Hold, take this letter; early in the morning  
See thou deliver it to my lord and father.  
Give me the light: Upon thy life I charge thee,  
Whate'er thou hear'st or seest, stand all aloof,  
And do not interrupt me in my course.  
Why I descend into this bed of death,  
Is, partly, to behold my lady's face:  
But, chiefly, to take thence from her dead finger  
A precious ring; a ring, that I must use

In dear employment :<sup>4</sup> therefore hence, be gone :—  
 But if thou, jealous, dost return to pry  
 In what I further shall intend to do,  
 By heaven, I will tear thee joint by joint,  
 And strew this hungry churchyard with thy limbs :  
 The time and my intents are savage-wild ;  
 More fierce, and more inexorable far,  
 Than empty tigers, or the roaring sea.

*Bal.* I will be gone, sir, and not trouble you.

*Rom.* So shalt thou show me friendship.—Take  
 thou that :

Live, and be prosperous ; and farewell, good fellow.

*Bal.* For all this same, I'll hide me hereabout ;  
 His looks I fear, and his intents I doubt. [*Retires.*]

*Rom.* Thou détestable maw, thou womb of death,  
 Gorg'd with the dearest morsel of the earth,  
 Thus I enforce thy rotten jaws to open,

[*Breaking open the Door of the Monument.*]  
 And, in despite, I'll cram thee with more food !

*Par.* This is that banish'd haughty Montague,  
 That murder'd my love's cousin ;—with which grief,  
 It is suppos'd, the fair creature died,—  
 And here is come to do some villainous shame  
 To the dead bodies : I will apprehend him.—

[*Advances.*]

Stop thy unhallow'd toil, vile Montague ;  
 Can vengeance be pursu'd further than death ?  
 Condemned villain, I do apprehend thee :  
 Obey, and go with me ; for thou must die.

*Rom.* I must, indeed ; and therefore came I  
 hither.—

Good gentle youth, tempt not a desperate man,  
 Fly hence and leave me ;—think upon these gone ;  
 Let them affright thee.—I beseech thee, youth,

<sup>4</sup> ——— *dear employment :*] That is, *action of importance.* *Genes*  
 were supposed to have great powers and virtues.

Heap not another sin upon my head,  
 By urging me to fury:—O, be gone!  
 By heaven, I love thee better than myself;  
 For I come hither arm'd against myself:  
 Stay not, be gone;—live, and hereafter say—  
 A madman's mercy bade thee run away.

*Par.* I do defy thy conjurations,<sup>5</sup>  
 And do attach thee as a felon here.

*Rom.* Wilt thou provoke me? then have at thee,  
 boy. [*They fight.*]

*Page.* O lord! they fight: I will go call the  
 watch. [*Exit Page.*]

*Par.* O, I am slain! [*Falls.*]  
 —If thou be merciful,

Open the tomb, lay me with Juliet. [*Dies.*]

*Rom.* In faith, I will:—Let me peruse this face;—  
 Mercutio's kinsman, noble county Paris:—  
 What said my man, when my betossed soul  
 Did not attend him as we rode? I think,  
 He told me, Paris should have married Juliet:  
 Said he not so? or did I dream it so?  
 Or am I mad, hearing him talk of Juliet,  
 To think it was so?—O, give me thy hand,  
 One writ with me in sour misfortune's book!  
 I'll bury thee in a triumphant grave,—  
 A grave? O, no; a lantern,<sup>6</sup> slaughter'd youth,

<sup>5</sup> *I do defy thy conjurations,*] Paris conceived Romeo to have burst open the monument for no other purpose than to do *some villainous shame* on the dead bodies, such as witches are reported to have practised; and therefore tells him he defies him, and the magick arts which he suspects he is preparing to use. But perhaps the true meaning here is, “*I refuse to do as thou conjurest me to do, i. e. to depart.*”

<sup>6</sup> *A grave? O, no; a lantern,*] A lantern may not, in this instance, signify an enclosure for a lighted candle, but a *louvre*, or what in ancient records is styled *lanternium*, i. e. a spacious round or octagonal turret full of windows, by means of which cathedrals, and sometimes halls, are illuminated.

For here lies Juliet, and her beauty makes  
This vault a feasting presence<sup>7</sup> full of light.  
Death, lie thou there, by a dead man interr'd.<sup>8</sup>

[*Laying Paris in the Monument.*

How oft when men are at the point of death,  
Have they been merry? which their keepers call  
A lightning before death: O, how may I  
Call this a lightning?<sup>9</sup>—O, my love! my wife!  
Death, that hath suck'd the honey of thy breath,  
Hath had no power yet upon thy beauty:  
Thou art not conquer'd; beauty's ensign yet  
Is crimson in thy lips, and in thy cheeks,  
And death's pale flag is not advanced there.—  
Tybalt, liest thou there in thy bloody sheet?  
O, what more favour can I do to thee,  
Than with that hand that cut thy youth in twain,  
To sunder his that was thine enemy?  
Forgive me, cousin!—Ah, dear Juliet,  
Why art thou yet so fair? Shall I believe  
That unsubstantial death is amorous;  
And that the lean abhorred monster keeps  
Thee here in dark to be his paramour?  
For fear of that, I will still stay with thee;  
And never from this palace of dim night  
Depart again; here, here will I remain  
With worms that are thy chamber-maids; O, here  
Will I set up my everlasting rest;  
And shake the yoke of inauspicious stars  
From this world-wearied flesh.—Eyes, look your last!

<sup>7</sup> — presence —] A presence is a publick room.

<sup>8</sup> — by a dead man interr'd.] Romeo being now determined to put an end to his life, considers himself as already dead.

<sup>9</sup> — O, how may I

Call this a lightning?] Romeo had, just before, been in high spirits, a symptom, which he observes, was sometimes called a lightning before death: but now, says he, (for no situation can exempt Shakspeare's characters from the vice of punning) can I term this sad and gloomy prospect a lightning?



Arms, take your last embrace! and lips, O you  
 The doors of breath, seal with a righteous kiss  
 A dateless bargain to engrossing death!—  
 Come, bitter conduct,<sup>2</sup> come, unsavoury guide!  
 Thou desperate pilot, now at once run on  
 The dashing rocks thy sea-sick weary bark!  
 Here's to my love!—[*Drinks.*] O, true apothecary!  
 Thy drugs are quick.—Thus with a kiss I die.  
[*Dies.*

*Enter, at the other End of the Churchyard, Friar  
 LAURENCE, with a Lantern, Crow, and Spade.*

*Fri.* Saint Francis be my speed! how oft to-night  
 Have my old feet stumbled at graves?<sup>3</sup>—Who's there?  
 Who is it that consorts, so late, the dead?<sup>4</sup>

*Bal.* Here's one, a friend, and one that knows  
 you well.

*Fri.* Bliss be upon you! Tell me, good my friend,  
 What torch is yond', that vainly lends his light  
 To grubs and eyeless skulls? as I discern,  
 It burneth in the Capels' monument.

*Bal.* It doth so, holy sir; and there's my master,  
 One that you love.

*Fri.* Who is it?

*Bal.* Romeo.

*Fri.* How long hath he been there?

*Bal.* Full half an hour.

*Fri.* Go with me to the vault.

*Bal.* I dare not, sir:

My master knows not, but I am gone hence;  
 And fearfully did menace me with death,

<sup>1</sup> *A dateless bargain to engrossing death!*] *Engrossing* seems to be used here in its clerical sense.

<sup>2</sup> *Come, bitter conduct,*] *Conduc!* for conductor.

<sup>3</sup> *Have my old feet stumbled at graves?*] This accident was reckoned ominous.

<sup>4</sup> *Who is it, &c.*] *To consort,* is to keep company with.

If I did stay to look on his intents.

*Fri.* Stay then, I'll go alone :—Fear comes upon me ;

O, much I fear some ill unlucky thing.

*Bal.* As I did sleep under this yew-tree here,  
I dreamt my master and another fought,<sup>5</sup>  
And that my master slew him.

*Fri.* Romeo ?— [*Advances.*  
Alack, alack, what blood is this, which stains  
The stony entrance of this sepulchre ?—  
What mean these masterless and gory swords  
To lie discolour'd by this place of peace ?

[*Enters the Monument.*  
Romeo ! O, pale !—Who else ? what, Paris too ?  
And steep'd in blood ?—Ah, what an unkind hour  
Is guilty of this lamentable chance !—  
The lady stirs. [*JULIET wakes and stirs.*

*Jul.* O, comfortable friar ! where is my lord ?  
I do remember well where I should be,  
And there I am :—Where is my Romeo ?

[*Noise within.*  
*Fri.* I hear some noise.—Lady, come from that  
nest

Of death, contagion, and unnatural sleep ;  
A greater Power than we can contradict  
Hath thwarted our intents ; come, come away :  
Thy husband in thy bosom there lies dead ;

<sup>5</sup> *I dreamt my master and another fought,*] This is one of the touches of nature that would have escaped the hand of any painter less attentive to it than Shakspeare. What happens to a person while he is under the manifest influence of fear, will seem to him, when he is recovered from it, like a dream. Homer, Book 8th, represents Rhesus dying fast asleep, and as it were beholding his enemy in a dream plunging a sword into his bosom. Eustathius and Dacier both applaud this image as very natural ; for a man in such a condition, says Mr. Pope, awakes no further than to see confusedly what environs him, and to think it not a reality, but a vision.

And Paris too ; come, I'll dispose of thee  
 Among a sisterhood of holy nuns :  
 Stay not to question, for the watch is coming ;  
 Come, go, good Juliet,—[*Noise again.*] I dare stay  
 no longer. [*Exit.*]

*Jul.* Go, get thee hence, for I will not away.—  
 What's here ? a cup, clos'd in my true love's hand ?  
 Poison, I see, hath been his timeless end :—  
 O churl ! drink all ; and leave no friendly drop,  
 To help me after ?—I will kiss thy lips ;  
 Haply, some poison yet doth hang on them,  
 To make me die with a restorative. [*Kisses him.*]  
 Thy lips are warm !

1 *Watch.* [*Within.*] Lead, boy :—Which way ?

*Jul.* Yea, noise ?—then I'll be brief.—O happy  
 dagger ! [*Snatching ROMEO's Dagger.*]  
 This is thy sheath ; [*Stabs herself.*] there rust, and  
 let me die.

*Falls on ROMEO's Body, and dies.*

*Enter Watch, with the Page of PARIS.*

*Page.* This is the place ; there, where the torch  
 doth burn.

1 *Watch.* The ground is bloody ; Search about  
 the churchyard :

Go, some of you, who e'er you find, attach.

[*Exeunt some.*]

Pitiful sight ! here lies the county slain ;—  
 And Juliet bleeding ; warm, and newly dead,  
 Who here hath lain these two days buried.—  
 Go, tell the prince,—run to the Capulets,—  
 Raise up the Montagues,—some others search ;—  
 [*Exeunt other Watchmen.*]

We see the ground whereon these woes do lie ;  
 But the true ground of all these piteous woes,  
 We cannot without circumstance descry.

*Enter some of the Watch, with BALTHASAR,*

*2 Watch.* Here's Romeo's man, we found him in the churchyard.

*1 Watch.* Hold him in safety, till the prince come hither.

*Enter another Watchman, with Friar LAURENCE.*

*3 Watch.* Here is a friar, that trembles, sighs, and weeps :

We took this mattock and this spade from him, As he was coming from this churchyard side.

*1 Watch.* A great suspicion ; Stay the friar too.

*Enter the Prince and Attendants.*

*Prince.* What misadventure is so early up,  
That calls our person from our morning's rest?

*Enter CAPULET, Lady CAPULET, and Others.*

*Cap.* What should it be, that they so shriek abroad?

*La. Cap.* The people in the street cry—Romeo,  
Some—Juliet, and some—Paris ; and all run,  
With open outcry, toward our monument.

*Prince.* What fear is this, which startles in our ears?

*1 Watch.* Sovereign, here lies the county Paris slain ;

And Romeo dead ; and Juliet, dead before,  
Warm and new kill'd.

*Prince.* Search, seek, and know how this foul murder comes.

*1 Watch.* Here is a friar, and slaughter'd Romeo's man ;

With instruments upon them, fit to open  
These dead men's tombs.

## ROMEO AND JULIET.

*Cap.* O, heavens!—O, wife! look how our daughter bleeds!

This dagger hath mista'en,—for, lo! his house  
Is empty on the back of Montague,—  
And it mis-sheathed in my daughter's bosom.<sup>6</sup>

*La. Cap.* O me! this sight of death is as a bell,  
That warns my old age to a sepulchre.

*Enter MONTAGUE and Others.*

*Prince.* Come, Montague; for thou art early up,  
To see thy son and heir more early down.

*Mon.* Alas, my liege, my wife is dead to-night;  
Grief of my son's exile hath stopp'd her breath:  
What further woe conspires against mine age?

*Prince.* Look, and thou shalt see.

*Mon.* O thou untaught! what manners is in this,  
To press before thy father to a grave?

*Prince.* Seal up the mouth of outrage for a while,  
Till we can clear these ambiguities,  
And know their spring, their head, their true descent;  
And then will I be general of your woes,  
And lead you even to death: Mean time forbear,  
And let mischance be slave to patience.—  
Bring forth the parties of suspicion.

*Fri.* I am the greatest, able to do least,  
Yet most suspected, as the time and place  
Doth make against me, of this direful murder;  
And here I stand, both to impeach and purge  
Myself condemned and myself excus'd.

<sup>6</sup> *This dagger hath mista'en,—for, lo! his house  
Is empty on the back of Montague,—*

*And it mis-sheathed in my daughter's bosom.]* Shakspeare quaintly represents the dagger as having mistaken its place, and “it mis-sheathed,” i. e. “mis-sheathed itself” in the bosom of Juliet. It appears that the dagger was anciently worn behind the back.

*Prince.* Then say at once what thou dost know in this.

*Fri.* I will be brief,<sup>7</sup> for my short date of breath  
Is not so long as is a tedious tale.  
Romeo, there dead, was husband to that Juliet;  
And she, there dead, that Romeo's faithful wife:  
I married them; and their stolen marriage-day  
Was Tybalt's dooms-day, whose untimely death  
Banish'd the new-made bridegroom from this city;  
For whom, and not for Tybalt, Juliet pin'd.  
You—to remove that siege of grief from her,—  
Betroth'd, and would have married her perforce,  
To county Paris:—Then comes she to me;  
And, with wild looks, bid me devise some means  
To rid her from this second marriage,  
Or, in my cell there would she kill herself.  
Then gave I her, so tutor'd by my art,  
A sleeping potion; which so took effect  
As I intended, for it wrought on her  
The form of death: meantime I writ to Romeo,  
That he should hither come as this dire night,  
To help to take her from her borrow'd grave,  
Being the time the potion's force should cease.  
But he which bore my letter, friar John,  
Was staid by accident; and yesternight  
Return'd my letter back: Then all alone,  
At the prefixed hour of her waking,  
Came I to take her from her kindred's vault;  
Meaning to keep her closely at my cell,  
Till I conveniently could send to Romeo:  
But, when I came, (some minute ere the time  
Of her awakening,) here untimely lay  
The noble Paris, and true Romeo, dead.  
She wakes; and I entreated her come forth,

<sup>7</sup> *I will be brief.*] It is much to be lamented, that the poet did not conclude the dialogue with the action, and avoid a narrative of events which the audience already knew. JOHNSON.

And bear this work of heaven with patience :  
 But then a noise did scare me from the tomb ;  
 And she, too desperate, would not go with me,  
 But (as it seems,) did violence on herself.  
 All this I know ; and to the marriage  
 Her nurse is privy : And, if aught in this  
 Miscarried by my fault, let my old life  
 Be sacrific'd, some hour before his time,  
 Unto the rigour of severest law.

*Prince.* We still have known thee for a holy man.—

Where's Romeo's man ? what can he say in this ?

*Bal.* I brought my master news of Juliet's death ;  
 And then in post he came from Mantua,  
 To this same place, to this same monument.  
 This letter he early bid me give his father ;  
 And threaten'd me with death, going in the vault,  
 If I departed not, and left him there.

*Prince.* Give me the letter, I will look on it.—  
 Where is the county's page, that rais'd the watch ?—  
 Sirrah, what made your master in this place ?

*Page.* He came with flowers to strew his lady's grave ;

And bid me stand aloof, and so I did :  
 Anon, comes one with light to ope the tomb ;  
 And, by and by, my master drew on him ;  
 And then I ran away to call the watch.

*Prince.* This letter doth make good the friar's words,

Their course of love, the tidings of her death :  
 And here he writes—that he did buy a poison  
 Of a poor 'pothecary, and therewithal  
 Came to this vault to die, and lie with Juliet.—  
 Where be these enemies ? Capulet ! Montague !—  
 See, what a scourge is laid upon your hate,  
 That heaven finds means to kill your joys with love !  
 And I, for winking at your discords too,

Have lost a brace of kinsmen :<sup>8</sup>—all are punish'd.

*Cap.* O, brother Montague, give me thy hand :  
This is my daughter's jointure, for no more  
Can I demand.

*Mon.* But I can give thee more :  
For I will raise her statue in pure gold ;  
That, while Verona by that name is known,  
There shall no figure at such rate be set,  
As that of true and faithful Juliet.

*Cap.* As rich shall Romeo by his lady lie ;  
Poor sacrifices of our enmity !

*Prince.* A glooming peace this morning with it  
brings ;

The sun, for sorrow, will not show his head :  
Go hence, to have more talk of these sad things ;

Some shall be pardon'd, and some punished :<sup>9</sup>  
~~He never~~ was a story of more woe  
Than this of Juliet and her Romeo. [Exeunt.]

<sup>8</sup> *Have lost a brace of kinsmen :* ] Mercutio and Paris: Mercutio is expressly called the prince's kinsman in Act III. sc. iv. and that Paris also was the prince's kinsman, may be inferred from other passages.

<sup>9</sup> *Some shall be pardon'd, and some punished :* ] This line has reference to the novel from which the fable is taken. Here we read that Juliet's female attendant was banished for concealing the marriage; Romeo's servant set at liberty because he had only acted in obedience to his master's orders; the apothecary taken, tortured, condemned, and hanged; while friar Laurence was permitted to retire to a hermitage in the neighbourhood of Verona, where he ended his life in penitence and tranquillity. STEEVENS.

<sup>1</sup> This play is one of the most pleasing of our author's performances. The scenes are busy and various, the incidents numerous and important, the catastrophe irresistibly affecting, and the process of the action carried on with such probability, at least with such congruity to popular opinions, as tragedy requires.

Here is one of the few attempts of Shakspeare to exhibit the conversation of gentlemen, to represent the airy sprightliness of juvenile elegance. Mr. Dryden mentions a tradition, which might easily reach his time, of a declaration made by Shakspeare, that he was obliged to kill Mercutio in the third Act, lest he should have been killed by ~~him~~. Yet he thinks him no such formidable person,



*but that he might have lived through the play, and died in his bed, without danger to the poet.* Dryden well knew, had he been in quest of truth, in a pointed sentence, that more regard is commonly had to the words than the thought, and that it is very seldom to be rigorously understood. Mercutio's wit, gaiety, and courage, will always procure him friends that wish him a longer life; but his death is not precipitated, he has lived out the time allotted him in the construction of the play; nor do I doubt the ability of Shakspeare to have continued his existence, though some of his sallies are perhaps out of the reach of Dryden; whose genius was not very fertile of merriment, nor ductile to humour, but acute, argumentative, comprehensive, and sublime.

The Nurse is one of the characters in which the author delighted: he has, with great subtilty of distinction, drawn her at once loquacious and secret, obsequious and insolent, trusty and dishonest.

His comick scenes are happily wrought; but his pathetick strains are always polluted with some unexpected deprivations. His persons, however distressed, *have a conceit left them in their misery, a miserable conceit.\** JOHNSON.

\* This quotation is also found in the Preface to Dryden's Fables: "*Just John Littlewit in Bartholomew Fair, who had a conceit (as he tells you) left him in his misery; a miserable conceit.*" STEEVENS.

# **H A M L E T.\***

\* HAMLET, PRINCE OF DENMARK.] The original story on which this play is built, may be found in Saxo Grammaticus the Danish historian. From thence Belleforest adopted it in his collection of novels, in seven volumes, which he began in 1564, and continued to publish through succeeding years. From this work, *The Hystorie of Hamblett*, quarto, bl. l. was translated. I have hitherto met with no earlier edition of the play than one in the year 1604, though it must have been performed before that time, as I have seen a copy of Speght's edition of Chaucer, which formerly belonged to Dr. Gabriel Harvey, (the antagonist of Nash) who, in his own hand-writing, has set down *Hamlet*, as a performance with which he was well acquainted, in the year 1598. His words are these: "The younger sort take much delight in Shakspeare's Venus and Adonis; but his Lucrece, and his tragedy of Hamlet Prince of Denmarke, have it in them to please the wiser sort, 1598."

In the books of the Stationers' Company, this play was entered by James Roberts, July 26, 1602, under the title of "A booke called *The Revenge of Hamlett, Prince of Denmarke*, as it was lately acted by the Lord Chamberlain his servantes."

In *Eastward Hoe*, by George Chapman, Ben Jonson, and John Marston, 1605, is a fling at the hero of this tragedy. A footman named *Hamlet* enters, and a tankard-bearer asks him—"Sfoote, *Hamlet*, are you mad?"

The frequent allusions of contemporary authors to this play sufficiently show its popularity. Thus, in Decker's *Bel-man's Nightwalkes*, 4to. 1612, we have—"But if any mad *Hamlet*, hearing this, smell villainie, and rush in by violence to see what the tawny diuels [gypsies] are dooing, then they excuse the fact" &c. Again, in an old collection of Satirical Poems, called *The Night-Raven*, is this couplet:

"I will not cry *Hamlet*, *Revenge* my greeves,  
"But I will call Hangman, *Revenge* on thieves."

STEEVENS.

Surely no satire was intended in *Eastward Hoe*, which was acted at Shakspeare's own playhouse, (Blackfriars,) by the children of the revels, in 1605. MALONE.

The following particulars relative to the date of this piece, are borrowed from Dr. Farmer's *Essay on the Learning of Shakspeare*, p. 85, 86, second edition:

"Greene, in the Epistle prefixed to his *Arcadia*, hath a lash at some 'vaine glorious tragedians,' and very plainly at Shakspeare in particular.—'I leave all these to the mercy of their mother-tongue, that feed on nought but the crumbs that fall from the translators trencher.—That could scarcely latinize their neck verse if they should have neede, yet *English Seneca*, read by candlelight

yields many good sentences—hee will afford you whole *Hamlets*, I should say, *handfuls* of tragical speeches.—I cannot determine exactly when this *Epistle* was first published; but, I fancy, it will carry the original *Hamlet* somewhat further back than we have hitherto done: and it may be observed, that the oldest copy now extant, is said to be ‘enlarged to almost as much againe as it was.’ *Gabriel Harvey* printed at the end of the year 1592, ‘*Four Letters and certaine Sonnetts, especially touching Robert Greene* :’ in one of which his *Arcadia* is mentioned. Now *Nash’s* *Epistle* must have been previous to these, as *Gabriel* is quoted in it with applause; and the *Four Letters* were the beginning of a quarrel. *Nash* replied in ‘*Strange News of the intercepting certaine Letters, and a Convo of Verses, as they were going privilie to victual the Low Countries, 1593.*’ *Harvey* rejoined the same year in ‘*Pierce’s Supererogation, or a new Praise of the old Asse.*’ And *Nash* again, in ‘*Have with you to Saffron Walden, or Gabriell Harvey’s Hunt is up* ;’ containing a full answer to the eldest sonne of the halter-maker, 1596.”—*Nash* died before 1606, as appears from an old comedy called *The Return from Parnassus*.

STEEVENS.

A play on the subject of *Hamlet* had been exhibited on the stage before the year 1589, of which Thomas Kyd was, I believe, the author. On that play, and on the bl. l. *Historie of Hamblet*, our poet, I conjecture, constructed the tragedy before us. The earliest edition of the prose-narrative which I have seen, was printed in 1608, but it undoubtedly was a republication.

Shakspeare’s *Hamlet* was written, if my conjecture be well founded, in 1596. MALONE.

## PERSONS REPRESENTED.

---

Claudius, *King of Denmark.*

Hamlet,<sup>1</sup> *Son to the former, and Nephew to the present King.*

Polonius, *Lord Chamberlain.*

Horatio, *Friend to Hamlet.*

Laertes, *Son to Polonius.*

Voltimand,  
Cornelius,  
Resencrantz,  
Guildenstern, } *Courtiers.*

Osric, *a Courtier.*

*Another Courtier.*

*A Priest.*

Marcellus, }  
Bernardo, } *Officers.*

Francisco, *a Soldier.*

Reynaldo, *Servant to Polonius.*

*A Captain. An Ambassador.*

*Ghost of Hamlet's Father.*

Fortinbras, *Prince of Norway.*

Gertrude, *Queen of Denmark, and Mother of Hamlet.*

Ophelia, *Daughter of Polonius.*

*Lords, Ladies, Officers, Soldiers, Players, Grave-Diggers, Sailors, Messengers, and other Attendants.*

SCENE, Elsinore.

<sup>1</sup> *Hamlet,*] i. e. *Amleth.* The *h* transferred from the end to the beginning of the name. STEEVENS.

# HAMLET,

## PRINCE OF DENMARK.

---

### ACT I.

*SCENE I. Elsinore. A Platform before the Castle.*

FRANCISCO *on his Post.* Enter to him BERNARDO.

*Ber.* Who's there?

*Fran.* Nay, answer me: ' stand, and unfold  
yourself.

*Ber.* Long live the king!

*Fran.* Bernardo?

*Ber.* He.

*Fran.* You come most carefully upon your hour.

*Ber.* 'Tis now struck twelve; get thee to bed,  
Francisco.

*Fran.* For this relief, much thanks: 'tis bitter cold,  
And I am sick at heart.

*Ber.* Have you had quiet guard?

*Fran.* Not a mouse stirring.

*Ber.* Well, good night.

If you do meet Horatio and Marcellus,

' — me :] i. e. *me* who am already on the watch, and have a  
right to demand the watch-word.

The rivals of my watch,<sup>2</sup> bid them make haste.

*Enter HORATIO and MARCELLUS.*

*Fran.* I think, I hear them.—Stand, ho! Who is there!

*Hor.* Friends to this ground.

*Mar.* And liegemen to the Dane.

*Fran.* Give you good night.

*Mar.* O, farewell, honest soldier:

Who hath reliev'd you?

*Fran.* Bernardo hath my place.

Give you good night. [*Exit FRANCISCO—*

*Mar.* Holla! Bernardo!

*Ber.* Say.

What, is Horatio there?

*Hor.* A piece of him.

*Ber.* Welcome, Horatio; welcome, good Marcellus.

*Hor.* What, has this thing appear'd again to—night?

*Ber.* I have seen nothing.

*Mar.* Horatio says, 'tis but our fantasy;  
And will not let belief take hold of him,  
Touching this dreaded sight, twice seen of us:  
Therefore I have entreated him along,  
With us to watch the minutes of this night;  
That, if again this apparition come,  
He may approve our eyes,<sup>3</sup> and speak to it.

*Hor.* Tush! tush! 'twill not appear.

*Ber.* Sit down awhile =

And let us once again assail your ears,

<sup>2</sup> *The rivals of my watch,]* Rivals for partners.

<sup>3</sup> — approve our eyes,] He may make good the testimony of our eyes; be assured by his own experience of the truth of that which we have related, in consequence of having been eye-witnesses to it. To approve, in Shakspeare's age, signified to make good, or establish.

That are so fortified against our story,  
What we two nights have seen.

*Hor.*

Well, sit we down,

And let us hear Bernardo speak of this.

*Ber.* Last night of all,

When yon same star, that's westward from the pole,  
Had made his course to illume that part of heaven  
Where now it burns, Marcellus, and myself,  
The bell then beating one,—

*Mar.* Peace, break thee off; look, where it  
comes again!

*Enter Ghost.*

*Ber.* In the same figure, like the king that's dead.

*Mar.* Thou art a scholar, speak to it, Horatio.<sup>4</sup>

*Ber.* Looks it not like the king? mark it, Ho-  
ratio.

*Hor.* Most like:—it harrows me<sup>5</sup> with fear, and  
wonder.

*Ber.* It would be spoke to.

*Mar.*

Speak to it, Horatio.

*Hor.* What art thou, that usurp'st this time of  
night,

Together with that fair and warlike form

In which the majesty of buried Denmark

Did sometimes march? by heaven I charge thee,  
speak.

*Mar.* It is offended.

*Ber.*

See! it stalks away.

*Hor.* Stay; speak: speak I charge thee, speak.

[*Exit Ghost.*

*Mar.* 'Tis gone, and will not answer.

<sup>4</sup> *Thou art a scholar, speak to it, Horatio.*] It has always been a vulgar notion that spirits and supernatura beings can only be spoken to with propriety or effect by persons of learning.

<sup>5</sup> — *it harrows me, &c.*] To *harrow* is to conquer, to subdue. The word is of Saxon origin.



*Ber.* How now, Horatio? you tremble, and look pale:

Is not this something more than fantasy?  
What think you of it?

*Hor.* Before my God, I might not this believe,  
Without the sensible and true avouch  
Of mine own eyes.

*Mar.* Is it not like the king?

*Hor.* As thou art to thyself:  
Such was the very armour he had on,  
When he the ambitious Norway combated;  
So frown'd he once, when, in an angry parle,  
He smote the sledded<sup>6</sup> Polack on the ice.<sup>7</sup>

'Tis strange.

*Mar.* Thus, twice before, and jump at this dead hour,<sup>8</sup>

With martial stalk hath he gone by our watch.

*Hor.* In what particular thought to work,<sup>9</sup> I know not;

But, in the gross and scope<sup>1</sup> of mine opinion,  
This bodes some strange eruption to our state.

*Mar.* Good now, sit down, and tell me, he that knows,

Why this same strict and most observant watch

So nightly toils the subject of the land?

And why such daily cast of brazen cannon,

And foreign mart for implements of war:

<sup>6</sup> — sledded —] A sled, or sledge, is a carriage without wheels, made use of in the cold countries.

<sup>7</sup> He smote the sledded Polack on the ice.] He speaks of a Prince of Poland whom he slew in battle. Polack was, in that age, the term for an inhabitant of Poland.

<sup>8</sup> — jump at this dead hour,] Jump and just were synonymous in the time of Shakspeare.

<sup>9</sup> In what particular thought to work,] i. e. What particular train of thinking to follow.

<sup>1</sup> — gross and scope —] General thoughts, and tendency at large.

Why such impress of shipwrights,<sup>2</sup> whose sore task  
Does not divide the Sunday from the week :  
What might be toward, that this sweaty haste  
Doth make the night joint-labourer with the day ;  
Who is't, that can inform me ?

*Hor.*

That can I ;

At least, the whisper goes so. Our last king,  
Whose image even but now appear'd to us,  
Was, as you know, by Fortinbras of Norway,  
Thereto prick'd on by a most emulate pride,  
Dar'd to the combat ; in which our valiant Hamlet  
(For so this side of our known world esteem'd him,)  
Did slay this Fortinbras ; who, by a seal'd compact,  
Well ratified by law, and heraldry,  
Did forfeit, with his life, all those his lands,  
Which he stood seiz'd of, to the conqueror :  
Against the which, a moiety competent  
Was gaged by our king ; which had return'd  
To the inheritance of Fortinbras,  
Had he been vanquisher ; as, by the same co-mart,  
And carriage of the article design'd,<sup>3</sup>  
His fell to Hamlet : Now, sir, young Fortinbras,  
Of unimproved mettle hot and full,<sup>4</sup>  
Hath in the skirts of Norway, here and there,  
Shark'd up a list<sup>5</sup> of landless resolute,  
For food and diet, to some enterprize

<sup>2</sup> *Why such impress of shipwrights,*] *Impress* signifies here the act of retaining shipwrights by giving them what was called *prest* money (from *pret*, Fr.) for holding themselves in *readiness* to be employed.

<sup>3</sup> — as, by the same co-mart,

*And carriage of the article design'd,*] *Co-mart* is, I suppose, a joint bargain, a word perhaps of our poet's coinage. *Carriage* is import : *design'd*, is formed, drawn up between them.

<sup>4</sup> *Of unimproved, &c.*] *Full of unimproved mettle*, is full of spirit not regulated or guided by knowledge or experience.

<sup>5</sup> *Shark'd up a list, &c.*] Picked up without distinction, as the shark-fish collects his prey.

That hath a stomach in't :<sup>6</sup> which is no other  
 (As it doth well appear unto our state,)  
 But to recover of us, by strong hand,  
 And terms compulsatory, those 'foresaid lands  
 So by his father lost : And this, I take it,  
 Is the main motive of our preparations ;  
 The source of this our watch ; and the chief head  
 Of this post-haste and romage<sup>7</sup> in the land.

[*Ber.* I think,<sup>8</sup> it be no other, but even so :  
 Well may it sort,<sup>9</sup> that this portentous figure  
 Comes armed through our watch ; so like the king  
 That was, and is, the question of these wars.<sup>1</sup>

[*Hor.* A mote it is, to trouble the mind's eye.  
 In the most high and palmy state of Rome,<sup>2</sup>  
 A little ere the mightiest Julius fell,  
 The graves stood tenantless, and the sheeted dead  
 Did squeak and gibber in the Roman streets.

-----  
 As, stars with trains of fire and dews of blood,

<sup>6</sup> *That hath a stomach in't :*] *Stomach*, in the time of our author, was used for *constancy*, *resolution*.

<sup>7</sup> — *romage* —] Commonly written—*rummage*. I am not, however, certain that the word *romage* has been properly explained. *Romage*, on shipboard, must have signified a scrupulous examination into the state of the vessel and its stores. Respecting land-service, the same term implied a strict inquiry into the kingdom, that means of defence might be supplied where they were wanted. *Rummage*, is properly explained by Johnson himself in his Dictionary, as it is at present daily used,—to search for any thing.

<sup>8</sup> [*I think, &c.*] These, and all other lines, confined within crotchets, throughout this play, are omitted in the folio edition of 1623. The omissions leave the play sometimes better and sometimes worse, and seem made only for the sake of abbreviation. JOHNSON.

<sup>9</sup> *Well may it sort,*] The cause and effect are proportionate and suitable.

<sup>1</sup> — *the question of these wars.*] The theme or subject.

<sup>2</sup> — *palmy state of Rome,*] *Palmy*, for *victorious*.

Disasters<sup>3</sup> in the sun;<sup>3</sup> and the moist star,<sup>4</sup>  
 Upon whose influence Neptune's empire stands,  
 Was sick almost to dooms-day with eclipse.  
 And even<sup>5</sup> the like precursor of fierce events,—  
 As harbingers preceding still the fates,  
 And prologue to the omen coming on,<sup>6</sup>—  
 Have heaven and earth together démonstrated  
 Unto our climatures and countrymen.—]

*Re-enter Ghost.*

But, soft; behold! lo, where it comes again!  
 I'll cross it, though it blast me.—Stay, illusion!  
 If thou hast any sound,<sup>7</sup> or use of voice,  
 Speak to me:  
 If there be any good thing to be done,  
 That may to thee do ease, and grace to me,  
 Speak to me:  
 If thou art privy to thy country's fate,  
 Which, happily, foreknowing may avoid,  
 O, speak!  
 Or, if thou hast uphoarded in thy life  
 Extorted treasure in the womb of earth,  
 For which, they say, you spirits oft walk in death,  
 [Cock crows.

<sup>3</sup> *As, stars with trains of fire and dews of blood,*

*Disasters in the sun;*] This passage is not in the folio. By the quartos therefore our imperfect text is supplied; for an intermediate verse being evidently lost, it were idle to attempt a union that never was intended. I have therefore signified the supposed deficiency by a vacant space. MALONE.

<sup>4</sup> — and the moist star, &c.] i. e. the moon.

<sup>5</sup> *And even—*] Not only such prodigies have been seen in Rome; but the elements have shown our countrymen like fore-runners and foretokens of violent events.

<sup>6</sup> *And prologue to the omen coming on,*] i. e. the approaching dreadful and portentous event.

<sup>7</sup> *If thou hast any sound,*] The speech of Horatio to the spectre is very elegant and noble, and congruous to the common traditions of the causes of apparitions. JOHNSON.

Speak of it :—stay, and speak.—Stop it, Marcellus.

*Mar.* Shall I strike at it with my partizan ?

*Hor.* Do, if it will not stand.

*Ber.*

'Tis here !

*Hor.*

'Tis here !

*Mar.* 'Tis gone !

[*Exit Ghost.*]

We do it wrong, being so majestic,al,

To offer it the show of violence ;

For it is, as the air, invulnerable,

And our vain blows malicious mockery.

*Ber.* It was about to speak, when the cock crew.

*Hor.* And then it started like a guilty thing

Upon a fearful summons. I have heard,

The cock, that is the trumpet to the morn,

Doth with his lofty and shrill-sounding throat

Awake the god of day ; and, at his warning,

Whether in sea or fire, in earth or air,<sup>8</sup>

The extravagant and erring spirit<sup>9</sup> hies

To his confine : and of the truth herein

This present object made probation.

*Mar.* It faded on the crowing of the cock.

Some say, that ever 'gainst that season comes

Wherein our Saviour's birth is celebrated,

This bird of dawning singeth all night long :

And then, they say, no spirit dares stir abroad ;

The nights are wholesome ; then no planets strike,

No fairy takes,<sup>1</sup> nor witch hath power to charm,

So hallow'd and so gracious is the time.

<sup>8</sup> *Whether in sea, &c.*] According to the pneumatology of that time, every element was inhabited by its peculiar order of spirits, who had dispositions different, according to their various places of abode. The meaning therefore is, that all *spirits extravagant*, wandering out of their element, whether aerial spirits visiting earth, or earthly spirits ranging the air, return to their station, to their proper limits in which they are *confined*.

<sup>9</sup> — *erring spirit,*] *Erring* is here used in the sense of *wandering*.

<sup>1</sup> *No fairy takes,*] No fairy *strikes* with lameness or diseases. This sense of *take* is frequent in this author.

*Hor.* So have I heard, and do in part believe it.  
 But, look, the morn, in russet mantle clad,  
 Walks o'er the dew of yon high eastern hill :  
 Break we our watch up ; and, by my advice,  
 Let us impart what we have seen to-night  
 Unto young Hamlet : for, upon my life,  
 This spirit, dumb to us, will speak to him :  
 Do you consent we shall acquaint him with it,  
 As needful in our loves, fitting our duty ?

*Mar.* Let's do't, I pray ; and I this morning know  
 Where we shall find him most convenient.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.

*The same. A Room of State in the same.*

*Enter the King, Queen, HAMLET, POLONIUS,  
 LAERTES, VOLTIMAND, CORNELIUS, Lords, and  
 Attendants.*

*King.* Though yet of Hamlet our dear brother's  
 death

The memory be green ; and that it us befitted  
 To bear our hearts in grief, and our whole kingdom  
 To be contracted in one brow of woe ;  
 Yet so far hath discretion fought with nature,  
 That we with wisest sorrow think on him,  
 Together with remembrance of ourselves.  
 Therefore our sometime sister, now our queen,  
 The imperial jointress of this warlike state,  
 Have we, as 'twere, with a defeated joy,—  
 With one auspicious, and one dropping eye ;  
 With mirth in funeral, and with dirge in marriage,  
 In equal scale weighing delight and dole,—  
 Taken to wife : nor have we herein barr'd  
 Your better wisdoms, which have freely gone  
 With this affair along ;—For all, our thanks.

Now follows, that you know, young Fortinbras,—  
 Holding a weak supposal of our worth ;  
 Or thinking, by our late dear brother's death,  
 Our state to be disjoint and out of frame,  
 Collegued with this dream of his advantage,<sup>2</sup>  
 He hath not fail'd to pester us with message,  
 Importing the surrender of those lands  
 Lost by his father, with all bands of law,  
 To our most valiant brother.—So much for him.  
 Now for ourself, and for this time of meeting.  
 Thus much the business is : We have here writ  
 To Norway, uncle of young Fortinbras,—  
 Who, impotent and bed-rid, scarcely hears  
 Of this his nephew's purpose,—to suppress  
 His further gait herein ;<sup>3</sup> in that the levies,  
 The lists, and full proportions, are all made  
 Out of his subject :—and we here despatch  
 You, good Cornelius, and you, Voltimand,  
 For bearers of this greeting to old Norway ;  
 Giving to you no further personal power  
 To business with the king, more than the scope<sup>4</sup>  
 Of these dilated articles<sup>5</sup> allow.  
 Farewell ; and let your haste commend your duty.

*Cor. Vol.* In that, and all things, will we show  
 our duty.

*King.* We doubt it nothing ; heartily farewell.

[*Exeunt* VOLTIMAND and CORNELIUS.]

<sup>2</sup> Collegued with this dream of his advantage,] This imaginary advantage, which Fortinbras hoped to derive from the unsettled state of the kingdom.

<sup>3</sup> — to suppress

*His further gait herein,*] Gate or gait is here used in the northern sense, for proceeding, passage ; from the A. S. verb *gac*. A gate for a path, passage, or street, is still current in the north.

<sup>4</sup> — more than the scope—] More is comprized in the general design of these articles, which you may explain in a more diffused and dilated style.

<sup>5</sup> — dilated articles, &c.] i. e. the articles when dilated.

That shall not be my offer, not thy asking?  
The head is not more native to the heart,  
The hand more instrumental to the mouth,  
Than is the throne of Denmark to thy father.  
What would'st thou have, Laertes?

**King.** Have you your father's leave? What says Polonius?

By laboursome petition; and, at last,  
Upon his will I seal'd my hard consent:  
I do beseech you, give him leave to go.

But now, my cousin Hamlet, and my son,—

[*Aside.*

*Ham.* Not so, my lord, I am too much i' the sun.

*Queen.* Good Hamlet, cast thy nighted colour off,

\* <sup>6</sup> Ham. *A little more than kin, and less than kind.*] *A little more than kin*, is a little more than a common relation. The king was certainly something *less than kind*, by having betrayed the mother of Hamlet into an indecent and incestuous marriage, and obtained the crown by means which he suspects to be unjustifiable.



And let thine eye look like a friend on Denmark.  
 Do not, for ever, with thy vailed lids<sup>7</sup>  
 Seek for thy noble father in the dust:  
 Thou know'st, 'tis common; all, that live, must die,  
 Passing through nature to eternity.

*Ham.* Ay, madam, it is common.

*Queen.* If it be,  
 Why seems it so particular with thee?  
*Ham.* Seem's, madam! nay, it is; I know not  
 seems.

'Tis not alone my inky cloak, good mother,  
 Nor customary suits of solemn black,  
 Nor windy suspiration of forc'd breath,  
 No, nor the fruitful river in the eye,  
 Nor the dejected haviour of the visage,  
 Together with all forms, modes, shows of grief,  
 That can denote me truly: These, indeed, seem,  
 For they are actions that a man might play:  
 But I have that within, which passeth show;  
 These, but the trappings and the suits of woe.

*King.* 'Tis sweet and commendable in your nature, Hamlet,  
 To give these mourning duties to your father:  
 But, you must know, your father lost a father;  
 That father lost, lost his; and the survivor bound  
 In filial obligation, for some term  
 To do obsequious sorrow:<sup>8</sup> But to perséver  
 In obstinate condolment,<sup>9</sup> is a course  
 Of impious stubbornness; 'tis unmanly grief:  
 It shows a will most incorrect<sup>1</sup> to heaven;  
 A heart unfortified, or mind impatient:

<sup>7</sup> — vailed lids—] With lowering eyes, cast down eyes.

<sup>8</sup> — obsequious sorrow:] *Obsequious* is here from *obsequies*, or funeral ceremonies.

<sup>9</sup> In obstinate condolment,] *Condolment*, for sorrow.

<sup>1</sup> — a will most incorrect—] i. e. *ill-regulated*, not sufficiently regulated by a sense of duty and submission to the dispensations of providence.

An understanding simple and unschool'd ;  
 For what, we know, must be, and is as common  
 As any the most vulgar thing to sense,  
 Why should we, in our peevish opposition,  
 Take it to heart? Fye! 'tis a fault to heaven,  
 A fault against the dead, a fault to nature,  
 To reason most absurd ;<sup>2</sup> whose common theme  
 Is death of fathers, and who still hath cri'd,  
 From the first corse, till he that died to-day,  
*This must be so.* We pray you, throw to earth  
 This unprevailing woe ; and think of us  
 As of a father : for let the world take note,  
 You are the most immediate to our throne ;  
 And, with no less nobility of love,<sup>3</sup>  
 Than that which dearest father bears his son,  
 Do I impart toward you. For your intent  
 In going back to school in Wittenberg,  
 It is most retrograde to our desire :  
 And, we beseech you, bend you to remain<sup>4</sup>  
 Here, in the cheer and comfort of our eye,  
 Our chiefest courtier, cousin, and our son.

*Queen.* Let not thy mother lose her prayers,  
 Hamlet ;

I pray thee, stay with us, go not to Wittenberg.

*Ham.* I shall in all my best obey you, madam.

*King.* Why, 'tis a loving and a fair reply ;  
 Be as ourself in Denmark.—Madam, come ;  
 This gentle and unforc'd accord of Hamlet  
 Sits smiling to my heart : in grace whereof,

<sup>2</sup> *To reason most absurd ;*] Reason is here used in its common sense, for the *faculty* by which we form conclusions from arguments.

<sup>3</sup> *And, with no less nobility of love,*] Eminence and distinction of love.

<sup>4</sup> — *bend you to remain—*] i. e. subdue your inclination to go from hence, and remain, &c.

No jocund health,<sup>5</sup> that Denmark drinks to-day,  
 But the great cannon to the clouds shall tell;  
 And the king's rouse<sup>6</sup> the heaven shall bruit again,  
 Re-speaking earthly thunder. Come away.

[*Exeunt King, Queen, Lords, &c. POLONIUS,  
 and LAERTES.*]

*Ham.* O, that this too too solid flesh would melt,  
 Thaw, and resolve itself into a dew!<sup>7</sup>  
 Or that the Everlasting had not fix'd  
 His canon 'gainst self-slaughter! O God! O God!  
 How weary, stale, flat, and unprofitable  
 Seem to me all the uses of this world!  
 Fye on't! O fye! 'tis an unweeded garden,  
 That grows to seed; things rank, and gross in nature,  
 Possess it merely.<sup>8</sup> That it should come to this!  
 But two months dead!—nay, not so much, not two:  
 So excellent a king; that was, to this,  
 Hyperion to a satyr:<sup>9</sup> so loving to my mother,  
 That he might not beteem<sup>1</sup> the winds of heaven  
 Visit her face too roughly. Heaven and earth!  
 Must I remember? why, she would hang on him,  
 As if increase of appetite had grown  
 By what it fed on: And yet, within a month,—  
 Let me not think on't;—Frailty, thy name is wo-  
 man!—

A little month; or ere those shoes were old,  
 With which she follow'd my poor father's body,

<sup>5</sup> *No jocund health,*] The King's intemperance is very strongly impressed; every thing that happens to him gives him occasion to drink.

<sup>6</sup> — *the king's rouse*—] i. e. the King's draught of jollity.

<sup>7</sup> — *resolve itself into a dew!*] *Resolve* means the same as *dissolve*.

<sup>8</sup> — *merely.*] *Is entirely, absolutely.*

<sup>9</sup> *Hyperion to a satyr:*] Hyperion or Apollo is represented in all the ancient statues, &c. as exquisitely beautiful, the satyrs hideously ugly.

<sup>1</sup> *That he might not beteem*—] i. e. *permit, or suffer.*

Like Niobe, all tears ;—why she, even she,—  
O heaven ! a beast, that wants discourse of reason,  
Would have mourn'd longer,—married with my  
uncle,

My father's brother ; but no more like my father,  
Than I to Hercules : Within a month ;  
Ere yet the salt of most unrighteous tears  
Had left the flushing in her galled eyes,  
She married :— O most wicked speed, to post  
With such dexterity to incestuous sheets !  
It is not, nor it cannot come to, good ;  
But break, my heart ; for I must hold my tongue !

*Enter HORATIO, BERNARDO, and MARCELLUS.*

*Hor.* Hail to your lordship !

*Ham.* I am glad to see you well :  
Horatio,—or I do forget myself.

*Hor.* The same, my lord, and your poor servant  
ever.

*Ham.* Sir, my good friend ; I'll change that name<sup>a</sup>  
with you.

And what make you<sup>s</sup> from Wittenberg, Horatio ?—  
Marcellus ?

*Mar.* My good lord,——

*Ham.* I am very glad to see you ; good even, sir,—  
But what, in faith, make you from Wittenberg ?

*Hor.* A truant disposition, good my lord.

*Ham.* I would not hear your enemy say so ;  
Nor shall you do mine ear that violence,  
To make it truster of your own report  
Against yourself : I know, you are no truant.  
But what is your affair in Elsinore ?  
We'll teach you to drink deep, ere you depart.

<sup>a</sup> — *I'll change that name—*] I'll be your servant, you shall  
be my friend.

<sup>s</sup> — *what make you—*] A familiar phrase for *what are you  
doing.*

*Hor.* My lord, I came to see your father's funeral.

*Ham.* I pray thee, do not mock me, fellow-student;

I think, it was to see my mother's wedding.

*Hor.* Indeed, my lord, it follow'd hard upon.

*Ham.* Thrift, thrift, Horatio! the funeral bak'd meats<sup>4</sup>

Did coldly furnish forth the marriage tables.

'Would I had met my dearest foe in heaven<sup>5</sup>

Or ever I had seen that day, Horatio!—

My father,—Methinks, I see my father.

*Hor.*

Where,

My lord?

*Ham.* In my mind's eye, Horatio.

*Hor.* I saw him once, he was a goodly king.

*Ham.* He was a man, take him for all in all,

I shall not look upon his like again.

*Hor.* My lord, I think I saw him yesternight.

*Ham.* Saw! who?

*Hor.* My lord, the king your father.

*Ham.*

The king my father!

*Hor.* Season your admiration<sup>6</sup> for a while

With an attent ear;<sup>7</sup> till I may deliver,

Upon the witness of these gentlemen,

This marvel to you.

*Ham.*

For God's love, let me hear.

*Hor.* Two nights together had these gentlemen, Marcellus and Bernardo, on their watch, In the dead waist and middle of the night,<sup>8</sup>

<sup>4</sup> — *the funeral bak'd meats*—] It was anciently the general custom to give a cold entertainment to mourners at a funeral. In distant counties this practice is continued among the yeomanry.

<sup>5</sup> — *dearest foe in heaven*—] *Dearest* is most immediate, consequential, important.

<sup>6</sup> *Season your admiration*—] That is, temper it.

<sup>7</sup> *With an attent ear*;] *Attent* for *attentive*.

<sup>8</sup> *In the dead waist and middle of the night*,] This strange

Been thus encounter'd. A figure like your father,  
 Armed at point, exactly, cap-à-pé,  
 Appears before them, and, with solemn march,  
 Goes slow and stately by them : thrice he walk'd,  
 By their oppress'd and fear-surprized eyes,  
 Within his truncheon's length ; whilst they, distill'd  
 Almost to jelly with the act of fear,<sup>9</sup>  
 Stand dumb, and speak not to him. This to me  
 In dreadful secrecy impart they did ;  
 And I with them, the third night kept the watch :  
 Where, as they had deliver'd, both in time,  
 Form of the thing, each word made true and good,  
 The apparition comes : I knew your father ;  
 These hands are not more like.

*Ham.* But where was this?

*Mar.* My lord, upon the platform where we  
 watch'd.

*Ham.* Did you not speak to it?

*Hor.* My lord, I did ;  
 But answer made it none : yet once, methought,  
 It lifted up its head, and did address  
 Itself to motion, like as it would speak :  
 But, even then, the morning cock crew loud ;  
 And at the sound it shrunk in haste away,  
 And vanish'd from our sight.

*Ham.* 'Tis very strange.

*Hor.* As I do live, my honour'd lord, 'tis true ;  
 And we did think it writ down in our duty,  
 To let you know of it.

*Ham.* Indeed, indeed, sirs, but this troubles me.  
 Hold you the watch to-night?

phraseology seems to have been common in the time of Shakespeare. By *waist* is meant nothing more than *middle*.

<sup>9</sup> ——— *with the act of fear,*] *Fear* was the cause, the active cause that *distill'd* them by the force of operation which we strictly call *act* in voluntary, and *power* in involuntary *agents*, but popularly call *act* in both. JOHNSON.

*All.* We do, my lord.

*Ham.* Arm'd say you ?

*All.* Arm'd, my lord.

*Ham.* From top to toe ?

*All.* My lord, from head to foot.

*Ham.* Then saw you not  
His face.

*Hor.* O, yes, my lord ; he wore his beaver up.\*

*Ham.* What, look'd he frowningly ?

*Hor.* A countenance more  
In sorrow than in anger.

*Ham.* Pale, or red ?

*Hor.* Nay, very pale.

*Ham.* And fix'd his eyes upon you ?

*Hor.* Most constantly.

*Ham.* I would, I had been there.

*Hor.* It would have much amaz'd you.

*Ham.* Very like,  
Very like : Stay'd it long ?

*Hor.* While one with moderate haste might tell a  
hundred.

*Mar. Ber.* Longer, longer.

*Hor.* Not when I saw it.

*Ham.* His beard was grizzl'd ? no ?

*Hor.* It was, as I have seen it in his life,  
A sable silver'd.

*Ham.* I will watch to-night ;  
Perchance, 'twill walk again.

*Hor.* I warrant, it will.

*Ham.* If it assume my noble father's person,  
I'll speak to it, though hell itself should gape,

\* — wore his beaver up.] Though *beaver* properly signified that part of the helmet which was *let down*, to enable the wearer to drink, Shakspeare always uses the word as denoting that part of the helmet which, when raised up, exposed the face of the wearer : and such was the popular signification of the word in his time.

And bid me hold my peace. I pray you all,  
 If you have hitherto conceal'd this sight,  
 Let it be tenable in your silence still ;  
 And whatsoever else shall hap to-night,  
 Give it an understanding, but no tongue ;  
 I will requite your loves : So, fare you well :  
 Upon the platform, 'twixt eleven and twelve,  
 I'll visit you.

*All.* Our duty to your honour.

*Ham.* Your loves, as mine to you : Farewell.

[*Exeunt* HORATIO, MARCELLUS, and BER-  
 NARDO.

My father's spirit in arms ! all is not well ;  
 I doubt some foul play : 'would, the night were come !  
 Till then sit still, my soul : Foul deeds will rise,  
 Though all the earth o'erwhelm them, to men's eyes.  
 [*Exit.*

### SCENE III.

*A Room in Polonius' House.*

*Enter* LAERTES and OPHELIA.

*Luer.* My necessities are embark'd ; farewell :  
 And, sister, as the winds give benefit,  
 And convoy is assistant, do not sleep,  
 But let me hear from you.

*Oph.* Do you doubt that ?

*Laer.* For Hamlet, and the trifling of his favour,  
 Hold it a fashion, and a toy in blood ;  
 A violet in the youth of primy nature,  
 Forward, not permanent, sweet, not lasting,  
 The perfume and suppliance of a minute ;<sup>1</sup>  
 No more.

<sup>1</sup> *The perfume and suppliance of a minute ;* ] i. e. what was supplied to us for a minute ; or, perhaps, an amusement to fill up a vacant moment, and render it agreeable.



*Oph.* No more but so?

*Laer.* Think it no more :

For nature, crescent, does not grow alone  
In thews,<sup>2</sup> and bulk ; but, as this temple waxes,  
The inward service of the mind and soul  
Grows wide withal. Perhaps, he loves you now ;  
And now no soil, nor cautel, doth besmirch  
The virtue of his will :<sup>3</sup> but, you must fear,  
His greatness weigh'd, his will is not his own ;  
For he himself is subject to his birth :  
He may not, as unvalued persons do,  
Carve for himself ; for on his choice depends  
The safety and the health of the whole state ;  
And therefore must his choice be circumscrib'd  
Unto the voice and yielding of that body,  
Whereof he is the head : Then if he says he loves  
you,

It fits your wisdom so far to believe it,  
As he in his particular act and place  
May give his saying deed ; which is no further,  
Than the main voice of Denmark goes withal.  
Then weigh what loss your honour may sustain,  
If with too credent ear you list his songs ;  
Or lose your heart ; or your chaste treasure open  
To his unmaster'd<sup>4</sup> importunity.  
Fear it, Ophelia, fear it, my dear sister ;  
And keep you in the rear of your affection,<sup>5</sup>  
Out of the shot and danger of desire.

<sup>2</sup> *In thews,*] i. e. in sinews, muscular strength.

<sup>3</sup> *And now no soil, nor cautel, doth besmirch*

*The virtue of his will :*] From *cautela*, which signifies only a prudent foresight or caution ; but, passing through French hands, it lost its innocence, and now signifies *fraud, deceit*. The *virtue of his will* means, his *virtuous intentions*.

<sup>4</sup> *unmaster'd—*] i. e. *licentious*.

<sup>5</sup> *— keep you in the rear, &c.]* That is, do not advance so far as your affection would lead you.

The chariest maid<sup>6</sup> is prodigal enough,  
 If she unmask her beauty to the moon :  
 Virtue itself scapes not calumnious strokes :  
 The canker galls the infants of the spring,  
 Too oft before their buttons be disclos'd ;  
 And in the morn and liquid dew of youth  
 Contagious blastments are most imminent.  
 Be wary then : best safety lies in fear ;  
 Youth to itself rebels, though none else near.

*Oph.* I shall the effect of this good lesson keep,  
 As watchman to my heart : But, good my brother,  
 Do not, as some ungracious pastors do,  
 Show me the steep and thorny way to heaven ;  
 Whilst, like a puff'd and reckless libertine,  
 Himself the primrose path of dalliance treads,  
 And recks not his own read.<sup>7</sup>

*Laer.* O fear me not.  
 I stay too long ;—But here my father comes.

*Enter* POLONIUS.

A double blessing is a double grace ;  
 Occasion smiles upon a second leave.

*Pol.* Yet here, Laertes ! aboard, aboard, for  
 shame ;  
 The wind sits in the shoulder of your sail,<sup>8</sup>  
 And you are staid for : There, my blessing with  
 you ;

[*Laying his Hand on LAERTES' Head.*  
 And these few precepts in thy memory  
 Look thou charácter.<sup>9</sup> Give thy thoughts no tongue,  
 Nor any unproportion'd thought his æt.

<sup>6</sup> *The chariest maid—*] *Chary* is cautious.

<sup>7</sup> ——— *recks not his own read.*] That is, heeds not his own lessons.

<sup>8</sup> ——— *the shoulder of your sail,*] This is a common sea phrase.

<sup>9</sup> *Look thou charácter.*] i. e. write, strongly infix.

Be thou familiar, but by no means vulgar.  
 The friends thou hast, and their adoption tried,  
 Grapple them to thy soul with hooks of steel;  
 But do not dull thy palm with entertainment  
 Of each new-hatch'd, unfledg'd comrade.<sup>1</sup> Beware  
 Of entrance to a quarrel: but, being in,  
 Bear it that the opposer may beware of thee.  
 Give every man thine ear, but few thy voice:  
 Take each man's censure,<sup>2</sup> but reserve thy judge-  
 ment.

Costly thy habit as thy purse can buy,  
 But not express'd in fancy; rich, not gaudy:  
 For the apparel oft proclaims the man;  
 And they in France, of the best rank and station,  
 Are most select and generous, chief in that.<sup>3</sup>  
 Neither a borrower, nor a lender be:  
 For loan oft loses both itself and friend;  
 And borrowing dulls the edge of husbandry.<sup>4</sup>  
 This above all,—To thine ownself be true;  
 And it must follow, as the night the day,  
 Thou canst not then be false to any man.  
 Farewell; my blessing season this in thee!<sup>5</sup>

*Laer.* Most humbly do I take my leave, my lord.

*Pol.* The time invites you; go, your servants tend.<sup>6</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *But do not dull thy palm with entertainment Of each new-hatch'd, unfledg'd comrade.*] The literal sense is, *Do not make thy palm callous by shaking every man by the hand.* The figurative meaning may be, *Do not by promiscuous conversation make thy mind insensible to the difference of characters.*

JOHNSON.

<sup>2</sup> — *each man's censure,*] *Censure* is opinion.

<sup>3</sup> *Are most select and generous, chief in that.*] i. e. the nobility of France are select and generous above all other nations, and chiefly in the point of apparel; the richness and elegance of their dress.

<sup>4</sup> — *of husbandry.*] i. e. of thrift; economical prudence.

<sup>5</sup> — *my blessing season this in thee!*] Infix it in such a manner as that it never may wear out.

<sup>6</sup> — *servants tend.*] i. e. your servants are waiting for you.

*Laer.* Farewell, Ophelia: and remember well  
What I have said to you.

*Oph.* 'Tis in my memory lock'd,  
And you yourself shall keep the key of it.<sup>7</sup>

*Laer.* Farewell. [Exit LAERTES.]

*Pol.* What is't, Ophelia, he hath said to you?

*Oph.* So please you, something touching the lord  
Hamlet.

*Pol.* Marry, well bethought:  
'Tis told me, he hath very oft of late  
Given private time to you: and you yourself  
Have of your audience been most free and bounte-  
ous:

If it be so, (as so 'tis put on me,  
And that in way of caution,) I must tell you,  
You do not understand yourself so clearly,  
As it behoves my daughter, and your honour:  
What is between you? give me up the truth.

*Oph.* He hath, my lord, of late, made many  
tenders  
Of his affection to me.

*Pol.* Affection? puh! you speak like a green girl,  
Unsifted<sup>8</sup> in such perilous circumstance.  
Do you believe his tenders, as you call them?

*Oph.* I do not know, my lord, what I should think.

*Pol.* Marry, I'll teach you: think yourself a baby;  
That you have ta'en these tenders for true pay,  
Which are not sterling. Tender yourself more  
dearly;<sup>9</sup>

<sup>7</sup> — *yourself shall keep the key of it.*] i. e. your counsels are as sure of remaining locked up in my memory, as if yourself carried the key of it.

<sup>8</sup> — Unsifted—] *Unsifted* for *untried*. *Untried* signifies either not *tempted*, or not *refined*; *unsifted* signifies the *latter* only, though the sense requires the *former*.

<sup>9</sup> — Tender *yourself more dearly*;] To *tender* is to regard with affection.

Or, (not to crack the wind of the poor phrase,  
Wrongs it thus,) you'll tender me a fool.

*Oph.* My lord, he hath importun'd me with love,  
In honourable fashion.

*Pol.* Ay, fashion you may call it; 'go to, go to.

*Oph.* And hath given countenance to his speech,  
my lord,

With almost all the holy vows of heaven.

*Pol.* Ay, springs to catch woodcocks. I do know,  
When the blood burns, how prodigal the soul  
Lends the tongue vows: these blazes, daughter,  
Giving more light than heat,—extinct in both,  
Even in their promise, as it is a making,—  
You must not take for fire. From this time,  
Be somewhat scanted of your maiden presence;  
Set your entreatments<sup>2</sup> at a higher rate,  
Than a command to parley. For lord Hamlet,  
Believe so much in him, That he is young;  
And with a larger tether may he walk,  
Than may be given you: In few, Ophelia,  
Do not believe his vows: for they are brokers<sup>3</sup>  
Not of that die which their investments show,  
But mere implorators of unholy suits,  
Breathing like sanctified and pious bonds,<sup>4</sup>  
The better to beguile. This is for all,—  
I would not, in plain terms, from this time forth,  
Have you so slander any moment's leisure,  
As to give words or talk with the lord Hamlet.  
Look to't, I charge you; come your ways.

*Oph.* I shall obey, my lord. [Exeunt.

\* — fashion you may call it;] She uses *fashion* for *manner*,  
and he for a *transient practice*.

<sup>2</sup> Set your entreatments —] i. e. the objects of *entreaty*; the  
favours for which lovers sue.

<sup>3</sup> Do not believe his vows, for they are brokers —] A *broker* in  
old English meant a *bawd* or *pimp*.

<sup>4</sup> Breathing like sanctified and pious bonds,] i. e. bonds or en-  
gagements of love.

## SCENE IV.

*The Platform.*

*Enter HAMLET, HORATIO, and MARCELLUS.*

*Ham.* The air bites shrewdly; it is very cold.

*Hor.* It is a nipping and an eager air.<sup>5</sup>

*Ham.* What hour now?

*Hor.* I think, it lacks of twelve.

*Mar.* No, it is struck.

*Hor.* Indeed? I heard it not; it then draws near  
the season,

Wherein the spirit held his wont to walk.

[*A Flourish of Trumpets, and Ordnance shot  
off, within.*]

What does this mean, my lord?

*Ham.* The king doth wake to-night, and takes  
his rouse,<sup>6</sup>

Keeps wassel,<sup>7</sup> and the swaggering up-spring<sup>8</sup> reels;  
And, as he drains his draughts of Rhenish down,  
The kettle-drum and trumpet thus bray out  
The triumph of his pledge.

*Hor.* Is it a custom?

*Ham.* Ay, marry, is't:

But to my mind,—though I am native here,  
And to the manner born,—it is a custom  
More honour'd in the breach, than the observance.  
This heavy-headed revel, east and west,<sup>9</sup>  
Makes us traduc'd, and tax'd of other nations:

<sup>5</sup> — *an eager air.*] That is, a sharp air, *aigre*, Fr.

<sup>6</sup> — *takes his rouse,*] A rouse is a large dose of liquor, a debauch.

<sup>7</sup> *Keeps wassel,*] i. e. devotes the night to jollity.

<sup>8</sup> — *the swaggering up-spring —*] The blustering upstart.

<sup>9</sup> *This heavy-headed revel, east and west,*] This heavy-headed revel makes us traduced east and west, and taxed of other nations,

They clepe us, drunkards, and with swinish phrase  
 Soil our addition; and, indeed it takes  
 From our achievements, though perform'd at height,  
 The pith and marrow of our attribute.<sup>1</sup>  
 So, oft it chances in particular men,  
 That, for some vicious mole of nature in them,  
 As, in their birth, (wherein they are not guilty,  
 Since nature cannot choose his origin,)  
 By the o'ergrowth of some complexion,<sup>2</sup>  
 Oft breaking down the pales and forts of reason;  
 Or by some habit, that too much o'er-leavens  
 The form of plausible manners;<sup>3</sup>—that these men,—  
 Carrying, I say, the stamp of one defect;  
 Being nature's livery, or fortune's star,<sup>4</sup>—  
 Their virtues else (be they as pure as grace,  
 As infinite as man may undergo,)<sup>5</sup>  
 Shall in the general censure take corruption  
 From that particular fault: The dram of base  
 Doth all the noble substance often dout,<sup>6</sup>  
 To his own scandal.

*Enter Ghost.*

*Hor.*

Look, my lord, it comes!

<sup>1</sup> *The pith and marrow of our attribute.*] The most valuable part of the praise that would be otherwise attributed to us.

<sup>2</sup> — *complexion,*] i. e. humour; as sanguine, melancholy, phlegmatick, &c.

<sup>3</sup> — *that too much o'er-leavens*

*The form of plausible manners;*] That intermingles too much with their manners; infects and corrupts them. *Plausible*, in our poet's age, signified gracious, pleasing, popular.

<sup>4</sup> — *fortune's star,*] The word *star* in the text signifies a *scar* of that appearance. It is a term of *farriery*: the *white star* or mark so common on the forehead of a dark coloured horse, is usually produced by making a *scar* on the place. RITSON.

<sup>5</sup> *As infinite as man may undergo,*] As large as can be accumulated upon man.

<sup>6</sup> — *often dout,*] To *dout*, signified in Shakspeare's time, and yet signifies in Devonshire and other western counties, to *do out*, to *efface*, to *extinguish*.

*Ham.* Angels and ministers of grace defend us!—  
 Be thou a spirit of health, or goblin damn'd,  
 Bring with thee airs from heaven, or blasts from hell,  
 Be thy intents wicked, or charitable,  
 Thou com'st in such a questionable shape,<sup>7</sup>  
 That I will speak to thee; I'll call thee, Hamlet,  
 King, father, royal Dane: O, answer me:  
 Let me not burst in ignorance! but tell,  
 Why thy canoniz'd bones, hearsed in death,  
 Have burst their cerements!<sup>8</sup> why the sepulchre,  
 Wherein we saw thee quietly in-urn'd,  
 Hath op'd his ponderous and marble jaws,  
 To cast thee up again! What may this mean,  
 That thou, dead corse, again, in complete steel,<sup>9</sup>  
 Revisit'st thus the glimpses of the moon,  
 Making night hideous; and we fools of nature,  
 So horridly to shake our disposition,<sup>1</sup>  
 With thoughts beyond the reaches of our souls?  
 Say, why is this? wherefore? what should we do?

<sup>7</sup> ——— questionable shape,] *Questionable* means here *propitious to conversation, easy and willing to be conversed with.*

<sup>8</sup> ——— tell,

*Why thy canoniz'd bones, hearsed in death,*

*Have burst their cerements!*] Hamlet, amazed at an apparition, which, though in all ages credited, has in all ages been considered as the most wonderful and most dreadful operation of supernatural agency, enquires of the spectre, in the most emphatick terms, why he breaks the order of nature, by returning from the dead; this he asks in a very confused circumlocution, confounding in his fright the soul and body. Why, says he, have *thy bones*, which with due ceremonies have been entombed *in death*, in the common state of departed mortals, *burst* the folds in which they were embalmed? Why has the tomb, in which we saw thee quietly laid, opened his mouth, that mouth which, by its weight and stability, seemed closed for ever? The whole sentence is this: *Why dost thou appear, whom we know to be dead?* JOHNSON.

<sup>9</sup> ——— in complete steel,] It is probable, that Shakspeare introduced his Ghost in armour, that it might appear more solemn by such a discrimination from the other characters: though it was really the custom of the Danish kings to be buried in that manner.

<sup>1</sup> ——— to shake our disposition,] *Disposition* for *frame*.



*Hor.* It beckons you to go away with it,  
As if it some impartment did desire  
To you alone.

*Mar.* Look, with what courteous action  
It waves you to a more removed ground :<sup>2</sup>  
But do not go with it.

*Hor.* No, by no means.

*Ham.* It will not speak ; then I will follow it.

*Hor.* Do not, my lord.

*Ham.* Why, what should be the fear?  
I do not set my life at a pin's fee ;<sup>3</sup>  
And, for my soul, what can it do to that,  
Being a thing immortal as itself?  
It waves me forth again ;—I'll follow it.

*Hor.* What, if it tempt you toward the flood,  
my lord,  
Or to the dreadful summit of the cliff,  
That beetles o'er his base<sup>4</sup> into the sea ?  
And there assume some other horrible form,  
Which might deprive your sovereignty of reason,<sup>5</sup>  
And draw you into madness ? think of it :  
The very place puts toys of desperation,<sup>6</sup>  
Without more motive, into every brain,  
That looks so many fathoms to the sea,  
And hears it roar beneath.

*Ham.* It waves me still :—  
Go on, I'll follow thee.

*Mar.* You shall not go, my lord.

<sup>2</sup> — a more removed ground : ] i. e. remote.

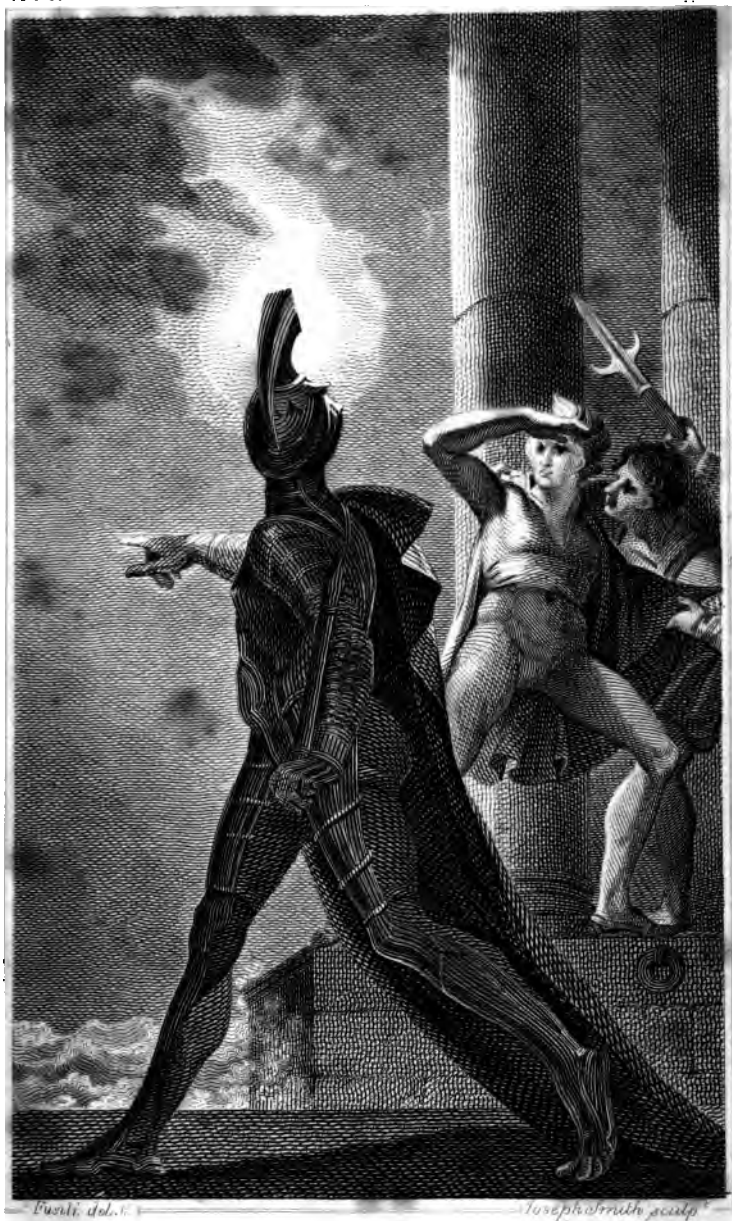
<sup>3</sup> — pin's fee ; ] The value of a pin.

<sup>4</sup> That beetles o'er his base — ] That hangs o'er his base, like what is called a beetle brow. A verb probably of our author's coinage.

<sup>5</sup> — deprive your sovereignty of reason, ] i. e. your ruling power of reason. When poets wish to invest any quality or virtue with uncommon splendour, they do it by some allusion to regal eminence.

<sup>6</sup> — puts toys of desperation, ] Toys, for whims.





*Ghost beckons.*

*Hamlet. 'Till am I Called; Unhand me, —*

*Ham.* Hold off your hands.

*Hor.* Be rul'd, you shall not go.

*Ham.* My fate cries out,  
And makes each petty artery in this body  
As hardy as the Néméou lion's nerve.—

[*Ghost beckons.*  
Still am I call'd;—unhand me, gentlemen;—

[*Breaking from them.*  
By heaven, I'll make a ghost of him that lets me:—  
I say, away:—Go on, I'll follow thee.

[*Exeunt Ghost and HAMLET.*

*Hor.* He waxes desperate with imagination.

*Mar.* Let's follow; 'tis not fit thus to obey him.

*Hor.* Have after:—To what issue will this come?

*Mar.* Something is rotten in the state of Denmark.

*Hor.* Heaven will direct it.

*Mar.* Nay, let's follow him.  
[*Exeunt.*

## SCENE V.

*A more remote Part of the Platform.*

*Re-enter Ghost and HAMLET.*

*Ham.* Whither wilt thou lead me? speak, I'll go  
no further.

*Ghost.* Mark me.

*Ham.* I will.

*Ghost.* My hour is almost come,  
When I to sulphurous and tormenting flames  
Must render up myself.

*Ham.* Alas, poor ghost!

<sup>1</sup> — *that lets me;*] To let among our old authors signifies to prevent, to hinder. It is still a word current in the law, and to be found in almost all leases.

*Ghost.* Pity me not, but lend thy serious hearing  
To what I shall unfold.

*Ham.* Speak, I am bound to hear.

*Ghost.* So art thou to revenge, when thou shalt hear.

*Ham.* What?

*Ghost.* I am thy father's spirit;  
Doom'd for a certain term to walk the night;  
And, for the day, confin'd to fast in fires,  
Till the foul crimes, done in my days of nature,  
Are burnt and purg'd away. But that I am forbid  
To tell the secrets of my prison-house,  
I could a tale unfold, whose lightest word  
Would harrow up thy soul; freeze thy young blood;  
Make thy two eyes, like stars, start from their spheres;  
Thy knotted and combined locks to part,  
Like quills upon the fretful porcupine:  
But this eternal blazon must not be  
To ears of flesh and blood:—List, list, O list!—  
If thou didst ever thy dear father love,——

*Ham.* O heaven!

*Ghost.* Revenge his foul and most unnatural  
murder.

*Ham.* Murder?

*Ghost.* Murder most foul, as in the best it is;  
But this most foul, strange, and unnatural.

*Ham.* Haste me to know it; that I, with wings  
as swift

As meditation, or the thoughts of love,  
May sweep to my revenge.

*Ghost.* I find thee apt;  
And duller should'st thou be than the fat weed  
That rots itself in ease on Lethe wharf,<sup>s</sup>

<sup>s</sup> *And duller should'st thou be than the fat weed  
That rots itself in ease on Lethe wharf;*] Shakspeare, apparently through ignorance, makes Roman Catholics of these Pagan Danes; and here gives a description of purgatory; but yet mixes it with the Pagan fable of Lethe's wharf.

Would'st thou not stir in this. Now, Hamlet, hear :  
 'Tis given out, that sleeping in mine orchard,<sup>9</sup>  
 A serpent stung me ; so the whole ear of Denmark  
 Is by a forged process of my death  
 Rankly abus'd : but know, thou noble youth,  
 The serpent that did sting thy father's life,  
 Now wears his crown.

*Ham.* O, my prophetick soul ! my uncle !

*Ghost.* Ay, that incestuous, that adulterate beast,  
 With witchcraft of his wit, with traitorous gifts,  
 (O wicked wit, and gifts, that have the power  
 So to seduce !) won to his shameful lust  
 The will of my most seeming virtuous queen :  
 O, Hamlet, what a falling-off was there !  
 From me, whose love was of that dignity,  
 That it went hand in hand even with the vow  
 I made to her in marriage ; and to decline  
 Upon a wretch, whose natural gifts were poor  
 To those of mine !  
 But virtue, as it never will be mov'd,  
 Though lewdness court it in a shape of heaven ;  
 So lust, though to a radiant angel link'd,  
 Will sate itself in a celestial bed,  
 And prey on garbage.  
 But, soft ! methinks, I scent the morning air ;  
 Brief let me be :—Sleeping within mine orchard,  
 My custom always of the afternoon,  
 Upon my secure hour thy uncle stole,  
 With juice of cursed hebenon in a vial,<sup>1</sup>  
 And in the porches of mine ears did pour  
 The leperous distilment ; whose effect

<sup>9</sup> — mine orchard,] *Orchard for garden.*

<sup>1</sup> *With juice of cursed hebenon in a vial,*] The word here used was more probably designed by a *metathesis*, either of the poet or transcriber, for *henebon*, that is, *henbane* ; of which the most common kind (*hyoscyamus niger*) is certainly *narcotick*, and perhaps, if taken in a considerable quantity, might prove poisonous.

Holds such an enmity with blood of man,  
 That, swift as quicksilver, it courses through  
 The natural gates and alleys of the body ;  
 And, with a sudden vigour, it doth posset  
 And curd, like eager droppings into milk,  
 The thin and wholesome blood : so did it mine ;  
 And a most instant tetter bark'd about,  
 Most lazar-like, with vile and loathsome crust,  
 All my smooth body.  
 Thus was I, sleeping, by a brother's hand,  
 Of life, of crown, of queen, at once despatch'd ;<sup>2</sup>  
 Cut off even in the blossoms of my sin,  
 Unhousel'd, disappointed, unanel'd ;<sup>3</sup>  
 No reckoning made, but sent to my account  
 With all my imperfections on my head :  
 O, horrible ! O, horrible ! most horrible !  
 If thou hast nature in thee, bear it not ;  
 Let not the royal bed of Denmark be  
 A couch for luxury and damned incest.  
 But, howsoever thou pursu'st this act,  
 Taint not thy mind, nor let thy soul contrive  
 Against thy mother aught ; leave her to heaven,  
 And to those thorns that in her bosom lodge,  
 To prick and sting her. Fare thee well at once !  
 The glow worm shows the matin to be near,  
 And 'gins to pale his uneffectual fire :<sup>4</sup>  
 Adieu, adieu, adieu ! remember me. [Exit.  
*Ham.* O all you host of heaven ! O earth ! What  
 else ?

<sup>2</sup> — at once despatch'd : ] *Despatch'd*, for *bereft*.

<sup>3</sup> *Unhousel'd, disappointed, unanel'd ;* ] *Unhousel'd* is without having received the sacrament. *Disappointed*, as Dr. Johnson observes, " is the same as *unappointed*, and may be properly explained *unprepared*. A man well furnished with things necessary for an enterprise, was said to be well *appointed*." *Unanel'd* is without extreme unction.

<sup>4</sup> — pale his uneffectual fire : ] Fire that is no longer seen when the light of morning approaches.

And shall I couple hell?—O fye!—Hold, hold, my heart;

And you, my sinews, grow not instant old,  
But bear me stiffly up!—Remember thee?  
Ay, thou poor ghost, while memory holds a seat  
In this distracted globe.<sup>5</sup> Remember thee?

Yea, from the table of my memory  
I'll wipe away all trivial fond records,  
All saws of books, all forms, all pressures past,  
That youth and observation copied there;  
And thy commandment all alone shall live  
Within the book and volume of my brain,  
Unmix'd with baser matter: yes, by heaven.

O most pernicious woman!

O villain, villain, smiling, damned villain!

My tables,<sup>6</sup>—meet it is, I set it down,

That one may smile, and smile, and be a villain;

At least, I am sure, it may be so in Denmark:

[Writing.

So, uncle, there you are. Now to my word;<sup>7</sup>

It is, *Adieu, adieu! remember me.*

I have sworn't.

Hor. [Within.] My lord, my lord,——

Mar. [Within.] Lord Hamlet,——

Hor. [Within.] Heaven secure him!

Ham. So be it!

Mar. [Within.] Illo, ho, ho, my lord!

Ham. Hillo, ho, ho, boy! come, bird, come.<sup>8</sup>

<sup>5</sup> ——— *this distracted globe.*] i. e. in this head confused with thought.

<sup>6</sup> *My tables.*——] *Table-books* in the time of our author appear to have been used by all ranks of people. In the church they were filled with short notes of the sermon, and at the theatre with the sparkling sentences of the play.

<sup>7</sup> ——— *Now to my word;*] Hamlet alludes to the *watch-word* given every day in military service, which at this time he says is, *Adieu, adieu! remember me.*

<sup>8</sup> ——— *come, bird, come.*] This is the call which falconers use to



*Enter HORATIO and MARCELLUS.*

*Mar.* How is't, my noble lord?

*Hor.* What news, my lord?

*Ham.* O, wonderful!

*Hor.* Good my lord, tell it.

*Ham.* No;

You will reveal it.

*Hor.* Not I, my lord, by heaven.

*Mar.* Nor I, my lord.

*Ham.* How say you then; would heart of man  
once think it?—

But you'll be secret,—

*Hor. Mar.* Ay, by heaven, my lord.

*Ham.* There's ne'er a villain, dwelling in all Den-  
mark,

But he's an arrant knave.

*Hor.* There needs no ghost, my lord, come from  
the grave,

To tell us this.

*Ham.* Why, right; you are in the right;

And so, without more circumstance at all,

I hold it fit, that we shake hands, and part:

You, as your business, and desire, shall point you;—

For every man hath business, and desire,

Such as it is,—and, for my own poor part,

Look you, I will go pray.

*Hor.* These art but wild and whirling words, my  
lord.

*Ham.* I am sorry they offend you, heartily; yes,  
'Faith, heartily.

*Hor.* There's no offence, my lord.

*Ham.* Yes, by Saint Patrick, but there is, Horatio,  
And much offence too. Touching this vision here,—

their hawk in the air, when they would have him come down to  
them.

It is an honest ghost, that let me tell you;  
 For your desire to know what is between us,  
 O'er-master it as you may. And now, good friends,  
 As you are friends, scholars, and soldiers,  
 Give me one poor request.

*Hor.*

What is't, my lord?

We will.

*Ham.* Never make known what you have seen to-night.

*Hor. Mar.* My lord, we will not.

*Ham.*

Nay, but swear't.

*Hor.*

In faith,

My lord, not I.

*Mar.* Nor I, my lord, in faith.

*Ham.* Upon my sword.

*Mar.* We have sworn, my lord, already.

*Ham.* Indeed, upon my sword, indeed.

*Ghost.* [*Beneath.*] Swear.

*Ham.* Ha, ha, boy! say'st thou so? art thou there, true-penny?

Come on,—you hear this fellow in the cellarage,—  
 Consent to swear.

*Hor.*

Propose the oath, my lord.

*Ham.* Never to speak of this that you have seen,  
 Swear by my sword.

*Ghost.* [*Beneath.*] Swear.

*Ham.* *Hic & ubique?* then we'll shift our ground:—  
 Come hither, gentlemen,

And lay your hands again upon my sword:

Swear by my sword,

Never to speak of this that you have heard.

*Ghost.* [*Beneath.*] Swear by his sword.

*Ham.* Well said, old mole! can'st work i'th' earth so fast?

A worthy pioneer!—Once more remove, good friends.

*Hor.* O day and night, but this is wondrous strange!

*Ham.* And therefore as a stranger give it welcome.  
There are more things in heaven and earth, Horatio,  
Than are dreamt of in your philosophy.

But come ;—

Here, as before, never, so help you mercy !

How strange or odd soe'er I bear myself,

As I, perchance, hereafter shall think meet

To put an antick disposition on,—

That you, at such times seeing me, never shall,

With arms encumber'd thus, or this head-shake,

Or by pronouncing of some doubtful phrase,

As, *Well, well, we know* ;—or, *We could, and if we would* ;—or, *If we list to speak* :—or, *There be, an if they might* ;—

Or such ambiguous giving out, to note

That you know aught of me :—This do you swear,

So grace and mercy at your most need help you !

*Ghost.* [*Beneath.*] Swear.

*Ham.* Rest, rest, perturbed spirit!<sup>9</sup> So, gentlemen,

<sup>9</sup> *Rest, rest, perturbed spirit!*] The skill displayed in Shakespeare's management of his Ghost, is too considerable to be overlooked. He has rivetted our attention to it by a succession of forcible circumstances :—by the previous report of the terrified centinels,—by the solemnity of the hour at which the phantom walks,—by its martial stride and discriminating armour, visible only *per incertam lunam*, by the glimpses of the moon,—by its long taciturnity,—by its preparation to speak, when interrupted by the morning cock,—by its mysterious reserve throughout its first scene with Hamlet,—by his resolute departure with it, and the subsequent anxiety of his attendants,—by its conducting him to a solitary angle of the platform,—by its voice from beneath the earth,—and by its unexpected burst on us in the closet.

Hamlet's late interview with the spectre, must in particular be regarded as a stroke of dramatick artifice. The phantom might have told his story in the presence of the Officers and Horatio, and yet have rendered itself as inaudible to them, as afterwards to the Queen. But suspense was our poet's object ; and never was it more effectually created, than in the present instance. Six times

With all my love I do commend me to you:  
 And what so poor a man as Hamlet is  
 May do, to express his love and friending to you,  
 God willing, shall not lack. Let us go in together;  
 And still your fingers on your lips, I pray.  
 The time is out of joint ;—O cursed spite!  
 That ever I was born to set it right!  
 Nay, come, let's go together. [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

SCENE I. *A Room in Polonius's House.*

*Enter* POLONIUS and REYNALDO.

*Pol.* Give him this money, and these notes, Reynaldo.

*Rey.* I will, my lord.

*Pol.* You shall do marvellous wisely, good Reynaldo,

Before you visit him, to make inquiry  
 Of his behaviour.

*Rey.* My lord, I did intend it.

has the royal semblance appeared, but till now has been withheld from speaking. For this event we have waited with impatient curiosity, unaccompanied by lassitude, or remitted attention.

The Ghost in this tragedy, is allowed to be the genuine product of Shakspeare's strong imagination. When he afterwards avails himself of traditional phantoms, as in *Julius Cæsar*, and *King Richard III.* they are but inefficacious pageants; nay, the apparition of Banquo is a mute exhibitor. Perhaps our poet despaired to equal the vigour of his early conceptions on the subject of preternatural beings, and therefore allotted them no further eminence in his dramas; or was unwilling to diminish the power of his principal shade, by an injudicious repetition of congenial images. STEEVENS.

*Pol.* Marry, well said : very well said : Look  
you, sir,  
Inquire me first what Danskers<sup>1</sup> are in Paris ;  
And how, and who, what means, and where they  
keep,

What company, at what expence ; and finding,  
By this encompassment and drift of question,  
That they do know my son, come you more nearer  
Than your particular demands will touch it :  
Take you, as 'twere, some distant knowledge of him ;  
As thus,—*I know his father, and his friends,*  
*And, in part, him ;*—Do you mark this, Reynaldo ?

*Rey.* Ay, very well, my lord.

*Pol.* *And, in part, him ;—but, you may say, not  
well :*

*But, if't be he I mean, he's very wild ;  
Addicted so and so ;—and there put on him  
What forgeries you please ; marry, none so rank  
As may dishonour him ; take heed of that ;  
But, sir, such wanton, wild, and usual slips,  
As are companions noted and most known  
To youth and liberty.*

*Rey.* As gaming, my lord.

*Pol.* Ay, or drinking, fencing, swearing, quar-  
relling,

*Drabbing :—You may go so far.*

*Rey.* My lord, that would dishonour him.

*Pol.* 'Faith, no ; as you may season it in the  
charge.

You must not put another scandal on him,<sup>2</sup>  
That he is open to incontinency ;  
That's not my meaning :<sup>3</sup> but breathe his faults so  
quaintly,

<sup>1</sup> — *Danskers*—] *Danske* is the ancient name of Denmark.

<sup>2</sup> — another scandal—] i. e. a very different and more scandalous failing, namely habitual incontinency.

<sup>3</sup> *That's not my meaning :*] That is not what I mean when I permit you to accuse him of drabbing.

That they may seem the taints of liberty :  
The flash and out-break of a fiery mind ;  
A savageness<sup>4</sup> in unreclaimed blood,  
Of general assault.<sup>5</sup>

*Rey.* But, my good lord,—

*Pol.* Wherefore should you do this ?

*Rey.* Ay, my lord,  
I would know that.

*Pol.* Marry, sir, here's my drift ;  
And, I believe, it is a fetch of warrant :  
You laying these slight sullies on my son,  
As 'twere a thing a little soil'd i'the working,  
Mark you,  
Your party in converse, him you would sound,  
Having ever seen in the prenominate crimes,<sup>6</sup>  
The youth you breathe of, guilty, be assur'd,  
He closes with you in this consequence ;  
*Good sir*, or so ; or *friend*, or *gentleman*,—  
According to the phrase, or the addition,  
Of man, and country.

*Rey.* Very good, my lord.

*Pol.* And then, sir, does he this,—He does—  
What was I about to say ? By the mass, I was about  
to say some something :—Where did I leave ?

*Rey.* At, closes in the consequence.

*Pol.* At, closes in the consequence,—*Ay, marry ;*  
He closes with you thus :—*I know the gentleman ;*  
*I saw him yesterday, or t'other day,*  
*Or then, or then ; with such, or such ; and, as you*  
*say,*  
*There was he gaming ; there o'ertook in his rouse :*  
*There falling out at tennis ; or, perchance,*  
*I saw him enter such a house of sale,*

<sup>4</sup> A savageness—] *Savageness*, for wildness.

<sup>5</sup> Of general assault.] i. e. such as youth in general is liable to.

<sup>6</sup> — prenominate crimes,] i. e. crimes already named.

(*Videlicet*, a brothel,) *or so forth*.—

See you now ;

Your bait of falsehood takes this carp of truth :

And thus do we of wisdom and of reach,

With windlances, and with assays of bias,

By indirections find directions out ;

So, by former lecture and advice,

Shall you my son : You have me, have you not ?

*Rey.* My lord, I have.

*Pol.* God be wi' you ; fare you well.

*Rey.* Good my lord,—

*Pol.* Observe his inclination in yourself.<sup>7</sup>

*Rey.* I shall, my lord.

*Pol.* And let him ply his musick.

*Rey.*

Well, my lord.

[*Exit.*

*Enter OPHELIA.*

*Pol.* Farewell !—How now, Ophelia ? what's the matter ?

*Oph.* O, my lord, my lord, I have been so affrighted !

*Pol.* With what, in the name of heaven ?

*Oph.* My lord, as I was sewing in my closet,  
Lord Hamlet,—with his doublet all unbrac'd ;  
No hat upon his head ; his stockings foul'd,  
Ungarter'd, and down-gyved to his ancle ;<sup>8</sup>  
Pale as his shirt ; his knees knocking each other ;  
And with a look so piteous in purport,  
As if he had been loosed out of hell,  
To speak of horrors,—he comes before me.

*Pol.* Mad for thy love ?

<sup>7</sup> — in yourself.] *In your own person*, not by spies.

<sup>8</sup> *Ungarter'd, and down-gyved to his ancle ;*] *Down-gyved* means, hanging down like the loose cincture which confines the fetters round the ancles.

*Oph.* My lord, I do not know ;  
But, truly, I do fear it.

*Pol.* What said he ?

*Oph.* He took me by the wrist, and held me hard ;  
Then goes he to the length of all his arm ;  
And, with his other hand thus o'er his brow,  
He falls to such perusal of my face,  
As he would draw it. Long stay'd he so ;  
At last,—a little shaking of mine arm,  
And thrice his head thus waving up and down,—  
He rais'd a sigh so piteous and profound,  
As it did seem to shatter all his bulk,<sup>9</sup>  
And end his being : That done, he lets me go :  
And, with his head over his shoulder turn'd,  
He seem'd to find his way without his eyes ;  
For out o'doors he went without their helps,  
And, to the last, bended their light on me.

*Pol.* Come, go with me ; I will go seek the king.  
This is the very ecstasy of love ;  
Whose violent property foredoes itself,<sup>1</sup>  
And leads the will to desperate undertakings,  
As oft as any passion under heaven,  
That does afflict our natures. I am sorry,—  
What, have you given him any hard words of late ?

*Oph.* No, my good lord ; but, as you did command,  
I did repel his letters, and denied  
His access to me.

*Pol.* That hath made him mad.  
I am sorry, that with better heed and judgment,  
I had not quoted him :<sup>2</sup> I fear'd, he did but trifle,  
And meant to wreck thee ; but, beshrew my jealousy !  
It seems, it is as proper to our age

<sup>9</sup> ——— *all his bulk,*] i. e. all his body.

<sup>1</sup> ——— *foredoes itself,*] To *foredo* is to destroy.

<sup>2</sup> *I had not quoted him :*] i. e. observed him.





That,—being of so young days brought up with him :

And, since, so neighbour'd to his youth and humour,—

That you vouchsafe your rest here in our court

Some little time : so by your companies

To draw him on to pleasures ; and to gather,

So much as from occasion you may glean,

Whether aught, to us unknown, afflicts him thus,

That, open'd, lies within our remedy.

*Queen.* Good gentlemen, he hath much talk'd of you ;

And, sure I am, two men there are not living,

To whom he more adheres. If it will please you

To show us so much gentry,<sup>5</sup> and good will,

As to expend your time with us a while,

For the supply and profit of our hope,<sup>6</sup>

Your visitation shall receive such thanks

As fits a king's remembrance.

*Ros.*

Both your majesties

Might, by the sovereign power you have of us,

Put your dread pleasures more into command

Than to entreaty.

*Guil.*

But we both obey ;

And here give up ourselves, in the full bent,<sup>7</sup>

To lay our service freely at your feet,

To be commanded.

*King.* Thanks, Rosencrantz, and gentle Guildenstern.

*Queen.* Thanks, Guildenstern, and gentle Rosencrantz :

And I beseech you instantly to visit

<sup>5</sup> To show us so much gentry,] Gentry, for complaisance.

<sup>6</sup> For the supply, &c.] That the hope which your arrival has raised may be completed by the desired effect. JOHNSON.

<sup>7</sup> — in the full bent,] The full bent, is the utmost extremity of exertion. The allusion is to a bow bent as far as it will go.

My too much changed son.—Go, some of you,  
And bring these gentlemen where Hamlet is.

*Guil.* Heavens make our presence, and our practices,

Pleasant and helpful to him!

*Queen.*

Ay, amen!

[*Exeunt ROSENCRANTZ, GUILDENSTERN, and some Attendants.*]

*Enter POLONIUS.*

*Pol.* The ambassadors from Norway, my good lord,  
Are joyfully return'd.

*King.* Thou still hast been the father of good news.

*Pol.* Have I, my lord? Assure you, my good liege, I hold my duty, as I hold my soul, Both to my God, and to my gracious king: And I do think, (or else this brain of mine Hunts not the trail of policy<sup>8</sup> so sure As it hath us'd to do,) that I have found The very cause of Hamlet's lunacy.

*King.* O, speak of that; that do I long to hear.

*Pol.* Give first admittance to the ambassadors; My news shall be the fruit<sup>9</sup> to that great feast.

*King.* Thyself do grace to them, and bring them in. [*Exit POLONIUS.*]

He tells me, my dear Gertrude, he hath found The head and source of all your son's distemper,

*Queen.* I doubt, it is no other but the main; His father's death, and our o'erhasty marriage.

<sup>8</sup> — the trail of policy—] The trail is the course of an animal pursued by the scent.

<sup>9</sup> — the fruit—] The desert after the meat.

*Re-enter* POLONIUS, *with* VOLTIMAND *and* CORNELIUS.

*King.* Well, we shall sift him.—Welcome, my good friends !

Say, Voltimand, what from our brother Norway ?

*Volt.* Most fair return of greetings, and desires,  
Upon our first, he sent out to suppress  
His nephew's levies ; which to him appear'd  
To be a preparation 'gainst the Polack ;  
But, better look'd into, he truly found  
It was against your highness : Whereat griev'd,—  
That so his sickness, age, and impotence,  
Was falsely borne in hand,<sup>1</sup>—sends out arrests  
On Fortinbras ; which he, in brief, obeys ;  
Receives rebuke from Norway ; and, in fine,  
Makes vow before his uncle, never more  
To give the assay<sup>2</sup> of arms against your majesty.  
Whereon old Norway, overcome with joy,  
Gives him three thousand crowns in annual fee ;  
And his commission, to employ those soldiers,  
So levied as before, against the Polack ;  
With an entreaty, herein further shown,

[*Gives a Paper.*]

That it might please you to give quiet pass  
Through your dominions for this enterprize ;  
On such regards of safety, and allowance,  
As therein are set down.

*King.* It likes us well ;  
And, at our more consider'd time, we'll read,  
Answer, and think upon this business.  
Mean time, we thank you for your well-took labour :

<sup>1</sup> — borne in hand,] i. e. deceived, imposed on.

<sup>2</sup> To give the assay—] To take the assay was a technical expression, originally applied to those who tasted wine for princes and great men.

Go to your rest; at night we'll feast together:  
Most welcome home!

[*Exeunt* VOLTIMAND and CORNELIUS.

*Pol.* This business is well ended.

My liege, and madam, to expostulate<sup>3</sup>  
What majesty should be, what duty is,  
Why day is day, night, night, and time is time,  
Were nothing but to waste night, day, and time.  
Therefore,—since brevity is the soul of wit,  
And tediousness the limbs and outward flourishes,—  
I will be brief: Your noble son is mad:  
Mad call I it: for, to define true madness,  
What is't, but to be nothing else but mad:  
But let that go.

*Queen.* More matter, with less art.

*Pol.* Madam, I swear, I use no art at all.

<sup>3</sup> *My liege, and madam, to expostulate—*] To *expostulate*, for to enquire or discuss.

WARBURTON makes the character of Polonius, a character only of manners, discriminated by properties superficial, accidental, and acquired. The poet intended a nobler delineation of a mixed character of manners and of nature. Polonius is a man bred in courts, exercised in business, stored with observation, confident in his knowledge, proud of his eloquence, and declining into dotage. His mode of oratory is truly represented as designed to ridicule the practice of those times, of prefaces that made no introduction, and of method that embarrassed rather than explained. This part of his character is accidental, the rest is natural. Such a man is positive and confident, because he knows that his mind was once strong, and knows not that it is become weak. Such a man excels in general principles, but fails in the particular application. He is knowing in retrospect, and ignorant in foresight. While he depends upon his memory, and can draw from his repositories of knowledge, he utters weighty sentences, and gives useful counsel; but as the mind in its enfeebled state cannot be kept long busy and intent, the old man is subject to sudden dereliction of his faculties, he loses the order of his ideas, and entangles himself in his own thoughts, till he recovers the leading principle, and falls again into his former train. This idea of dotage encroaching upon wisdom, will solve all the phenomena of the character of Polonius. JOHNSON.

That he is mad, 'tis true: 'tis true, 'tis pity;  
 And pity 'tis, 'tis true: a foolish figure;  
 But farewell it, for I will use no art.  
 Mad let us grant him then: and now remains,  
 That we find out the cause of this effect;  
 Or, rather say, the cause of this defect;  
 For this effect, defective, comes by cause:  
 Thus it remains, and the remainder thus.  
 Perpend.

I have a daughter; have, while she is mine;  
 Who, in her duty and obedience, mark,  
 Hath given me this: Now gather, and surmise.  
 —*To the celestial, and my soul's idol, the most  
 beautified Ophelia,*—

That's an ill phrase, a vile phrase; *beautified* is a  
 vile phrase; but you shall hear.—Thus:—

*In her excellent white bosom, these, &c.—*

*Queen.* Came this from Hamlet to her?

*Pol.* Good madam, stay awhile; I will be faithful.—

*Doubt thou, the stars are fire;* [Reads.

*Doubt, that the sun doth move:*

*Doubt truth to be a liar;*

*But never doubt, I love.*

*O dear Ophelia, I am ill at these numbers; I have  
 not art to reckon my groans: but that I love thee best,  
 O most best, believe it. Adieu.*

*Thine evermore, most dear lady, whilst  
 this machine is to him, Hamlet.*

This, in obedience, hath my daughter shown me:  
 And more above,<sup>4</sup> hath his solicitings,  
 As they fell out by time, by means, and place,  
 All given to mine ear.

<sup>4</sup> — more above,] is, moreover, besides.

*King.* But how hath she  
Receiv'd his love?

*Pol.* What do you think of me?

*King.* As of a man faithful and honourable.

*Pol.* I would fain prove so. But what might you think,

When I had seen this hot love on the wing,  
(As I perceiv'd it, I must tell you that,  
Before my daughter told me,) what might you,  
Or my dear majesty your queen here, think,  
If I had play'd the desk, or table-book;  
Or given my heart a working, mute and dumb;  
Or look'd upon this love with idle sight;  
What might you think? no, I went round to work,  
And my young mistress thus did I bespeak;  
*Lord Hamlet is a prince out of thy sphere;*  
*This must not be:* and then I precepts gave her,  
That she should lock herself from his resort,  
Admit no messengers, receive no tokens.  
Which done, she took the fruits of my advice;<sup>6</sup>  
And he, repulsed, (a short tale to make,)  
Fell into a sadness; then into a fast;  
Thence to a watch; thence into a weakness;  
Thence to a lightness; and, by this declension,  
Into the madness wherein now he raves,

*5 If I had play'd the desk, or table-book;  
Or given my heart a working, mute and dumb;  
Or look'd upon this love with idle sight;*

*What might you think?*] i. e. If either I had conveyed intelligence between them, and been the confident of their amours [*play'd the desk or table-book,*] or had conniv'd at it, only observed them in secret, without acquainting my daughter with my discovery [*giving my heart a mute and dumb working;*] or lastly, been negligent in observing the intrigue, and overlooked it [*looked upon this love with idle sight;*] or concealed it, what would you have thought of me?

<sup>6</sup> *Which done, she took the fruits of my advice;*] She took the fruits of advice when she obeyed advice, the advice was then made fruitful.

And all we mourn for.

*King.* Do you think, 'tis this?

*Queen.* It may be, very likely.

*Pol.* Hath there been such a time, (I'd fain know that,)

That I have positively said, 'Tis so,  
When it prov'd otherwise?

*King.* Not that I know.

*Pol.* Take this from this, if this be otherwise :

[*Pointing to his Head and Shoulder.*]

If circumstances lead me, I will find  
Where truth is hid, though it were hid indeed  
Within the centre.

*King.* How may we try it further?

*Pol.* You know, sometimes he walks four hours  
together,

Here in the lobby.

*Queen.* So he does, indeed.

*Pol.* At such a time I'll loose my daughter to him :  
Be you and I behind an arras then ;  
Mark the encounter : if he love her not,  
And be not from his reason fallen thereon,  
Let me be no assistant for a state,  
But keep a farm, and carters.

*King.* We will try it.

*Enter HAMLET, reading.*

*Queen.* But, look, where sadly the poor wretch  
comes reading.

*Pol.* Away, I do beseech you, both away ;  
I'll board him<sup>7</sup> presently :—O, give me leave.—

[*Exeunt King, Queen, and Attendants.*]

How does my good lord Hamlet?

*Ham.* Well, god'a-mercy.

*Pol.* Do you know me, my lord?

<sup>7</sup> I'll board him—] i. e. accost, address him.



*Ham.* Excellent well ; you are a fishmonger.

*Pol.* Not I, my lord ?

*Ham.* Then I would you were so honest a man.

*Pol.* Honest, my lord ?

*Ham.* Ay, sir ; to be honest, as this world goes, is to be one man picked out of ten thousand.

*Pol.* That's very true, my lord.

*Ham.* For if the sun breed maggots in a dead dog, being a god, kissing carrion,—Have you a daughter ?

*Pol.* I have, my lord.

*Ham.* Let her not walk i'the sun : conception is a blessing ; but as your daughter may conceive,—friend, look to't.

*Pol.* How say you by that ? [*Aside.*] Still harping on my daughter :—yet he knew me not at first ; he said, I was a fishmonger : He is far gone, far gone : and truly in my youth I suffered much extremity for love ; very near this. I'll speak to him again.—What do you read, my lord ?

*Ham.* Words, words, words !

*Pol.* What is the matter, my lord ?

*Ham.* Between who ?

*Pol.* I mean, the matter that you read, my lord.

*Ham.* Slanders, sir : for the satirical rogue says here, that old men have grey beards ; that their faces are wrinkled ; their eyes purging thick amber, and plum-tree gum ; and that they have a plentiful lack of wit, together with most weak hams : All of which, sir, though I most powerfully and potently believe, yet I hold it not honesty to have it thus set down ; for yourself, sir, shall be as old as I am, if, like a crab, you could go backward.

*Pol.* Though this be madness, yet there's method in it. [*Aside.*] Will you walk out of the air, my lord ?

*Ham.* Into my grave ?

*Pol.* Indeed, that is out o'the air.—How pregnant sometimes his replies are!<sup>8</sup> a happiness that often madness hits on, which reason and sanity could not so prosperously be delivered of. I will leave him, and suddenly contrive the means of meeting between him and my daughter.—My honourable lord, I will most humbly take my leave of you.

*Ham.* You cannot, sir, take from me any thing that I will more willingly part withal; except my life, except my life, except my life.

*Pol.* Fare you well, my lord.

*Ham.* These tedious old fools!

*Enter ROSENCRANTZ<sup>9</sup> and GUILDENSTERN.*

*Pol.* You go to seek the lord Hamlet; there he is.

*Ros.* God save you, sir! [*To POLONIUS.*

[*Exit POLONIUS.*

*Guil.* My honour'd lord!—

*Ros.* My most dear lord!—

*Ham.* My excellent good friends! How dost thou, Guildenstern? Ah, Rosencrantz! Good lads, how do ye both?

*Ros.* As the indifferent children of the earth.

*Guil.* Happy, in that we are not overhappy;  
On fortune's cap we are not the very button.

*Ham.* Nor the soles of her shoe?

*Ros.* Neither, my lord.

*Ham.* Then you live about her waist, or in the middle of her favours?

*Guil.* 'Faith, her privates we.

*Ham.* In the secret parts of fortune? O, most true; she is a strumpet. What news?

<sup>8</sup> *How pregnant, &c.*] *Pregnant* is ready, dexterous, apt.

<sup>9</sup> *Rosencrantz*—] There was an ambassador of that name in England about the time when this play was written.

*Ros.* None, my lord ; but that the world's grown honest.

*Ham.* Then is dooms-day near : But your news is not true. Let me question more in particular : What have you, my good friends, deserved at the hands of fortune, that she sends you to prison hither ?

*Guil.* Prison, my lord !

*Ham.* Denmark's a prison.

*Ros.* Then is the world one.

*Ham.* A goodly one ; in which there are many confines, wards, and dungeons ; Denmark being one of the worst.

*Ros.* We think not so, my lord.

*Ham.* Why, then 'tis none to you : for there is nothing either good or bad, but thinking makes it so : to me it is a prison.

*Ros.* Why, then your ambition makes it one ; 'tis too narrow for your mind.

*Ham.* O God ! I could be bounded in a nut-shell, and count myself a king of infinite space ; were it not that I have bad dreams.

*Guil.* Which dreams, indeed, are ambition ; for the very substance of the ambitious is merely the shadow of a dream.

*Ham.* A dream itself is but a shadow.

*Ros.* Truly, and I hold ambition of so airy and light a quality, that it is but a shadow's shadow.

*Ham.* Then are our beggars, bodies ;<sup>1</sup> and our monarchs, and outstretch'd heroes, the beggars' shadows : Shall we to the court ? for, by my fay, I cannot reason.

*Ros. Guil.* We'll wait upon you.

*Ham.* No such matter : I will not sort you with the rest of my servants ; for, to speak to you like

<sup>1</sup> *Then are our beggars, bodies ;*] Shakspeare seems here to design a ridicule of those declamations against wealth and greatness, that seem to make happiness consist in poverty.

an honest man, I am most dreadfully attended. But, in the beaten way of friendship, what make you at Elsinore?

*Ros.* To visit you, my lord; no other occasion.

*Ham.* Beggar that I am, I am even poor in thanks; but I thank you: and sure, dear friends, my thanks are too dear, a half-penny.<sup>2</sup> Were you not sent for? Is it your own inclining? Is it a free visitation? Come, come; deal justly with me: come, come; nay, speak.

*Guil.* What should we say, my lord?

*Ham.* Any thing—but to the purpose. You were sent for; and there is a kind of confession in your looks, which your modesties have not craft enough to colour: I know, the good king and queen have sent for you.

*Ros.* To what end, my lord?

*Ham.* That you must teach me. But let me conjure you, by the rights of our fellowship, by the consonancy of our youth, by the obligation of our ever-preserved love, and by what more dear a better proposer could charge you withal, be even and direct with me, whether you were sent for, or no?

*Ros.* What say you? [To GUILDENSTERN.]

*Ham.* Nay, then I have an eye of you;<sup>3</sup> [*Aside.*]—if you love me, hold not off.

*Guil.* My lord, we were sent for.

*Ham.* I will tell you why; so shall my anticipation prevent your discovery, and your secrecy to the king and queen moult no feather. I have of late, (but, wherefore, I know not,) lost all my mirth, forgone all custom of exercises: and, indeed, it goes so heavily with my disposition, that this goodly

<sup>2</sup> — too dear, a halfpenny.] i. e. a halfpenny too dear: they are worth nothing.

<sup>3</sup> Nay, then I have an eye of you;] An eye of you means, I have a glimpse of your meaning.

frame, the earth, seems to me a steril promontory; this most excellent canopy, the air, look you, this brave o'erhanging firmament, this majestical roof fretted with golden fire, why, it appears no other thing to me, than a foul and pestilent congregation of vapours. What a piece of work is a man! How noble in reason! how infinite in faculties! in form, and moving, how express and admirable! in action, how like an angel! in apprehension, how like a god! the beauty of the world! the paragon of animals! And yet, to me, what is this quintessence of dust? man delights not me, nor woman neither; though, by your smiling, you seem to say so.

*Ros.* My lord, there is no such stuff in my thoughts.

*Ham.* Why did you laugh then, when I said, *Man delights not me?*

*Ros.* To think, my lord, if you delight not in man, what lenten entertainment<sup>4</sup> the players shall receive from you: we coted them on the way;<sup>5</sup> and hither are they coming, to offer you service.

*Ham.* He that plays the king, shall be welcome; his majesty shall have tribute of me: the adventurous knight shall use his foil, and target: the lover shall not sigh gratis; the humorous man shall end his part in peace: the clown shall make those laugh, whose lungs are tickled o'the sere; and the lady shall say her mind freely,<sup>6</sup> or the blank verse shall halt for't.—What players are they?

*Ros.* Even those you were wont to take such delight in, the tragedians of the city.

<sup>4</sup> — lenten entertainment —] i. e. sparing, like the entertainments given in *Lent*.

<sup>5</sup> — we coted them on the way;] To cote is to overtake.

<sup>6</sup> — the lady shall say her mind, &c.] The lady shall mar the measure of the verse, rather than not express herself freely or fully.

*Ham.* How chances it, they travel?<sup>7</sup> their residence, both in reputation and profit, was better both ways.

*Ros.* I think, their inhibition comes by the means of the late innovation.

*Ham.* Do they hold the same estimation they did when I was in the city? Are they so followed?

*Ros.* No, indeed, they are not.

*Ham.* How comes it? Do they grow rusty?

*Ros.* Nay, their endeavour keeps in the wonted pace: But there is, sir, an aiery of children,<sup>8</sup> little eyases, that cry out on the top of question,<sup>9</sup> and are most tyrannically clapped for't: these are now the fashion; and so berattle the common stages, (so they call them) that many, wearing rapiers, are afraid of goose quills, and dare scarce come thither.

*Ham.* What, are they children? who maintains them? how are they escoted?<sup>1</sup> Will they pursue the quality no longer than they can sing?<sup>2</sup> will they not say afterwards, if they should grow themselves to common players, (as it is most like, if their means are no better,) their writers do them wrong,<sup>3</sup> to make them exclaim against their own succession?

<sup>7</sup> *How chances it, they travel?*] To travel in Shakspeare's time was the technical word, for which we have substituted to *stroll*.

<sup>8</sup> — *an aiery of children, &c.*] Relating to the play houses then contending, the *Bankside*, the *Fortune*, &c. played by the children of his majesty's chapel.

<sup>9</sup> — *little eyases, that cry out on the top of question,*] Little eyases; i. e. young nestlings, creatures just out of the egg. The meaning seems to allude to boys who ask a common question in the highest note of the voice, and declaim in common conversation.

<sup>1</sup> — *escoted?*] Paid. From the French *escot*, a shot or reckoning.

<sup>2</sup> *Will they pursue the quality no longer than they can sing?*] Will they follow the profession of players no longer than they keep the voices of boys, and sing in the choir?

<sup>3</sup> — *their writers do them wrong, &c.*] I should have been very much surprised if I had not found Ben Jonson among the writers here alluded to. STEEVENS.

*Ros.* 'Faith, there has been much to do on both sides; and the nation holds it no sin, to tarre them on to controversy:<sup>4</sup> there was, for a while, no money bid for argument, unless the poet and the player went to cuffs in the question.

*Ham.* Is it possible?

*Guil.* O, there has been much throwing about of brains.

*Ham.* Do the boys carry it away?

*Ros.* Ay, that they do, my lord; Hercules and his load too.<sup>5</sup>]

*Ham.* It is not very strange: for my uncle<sup>6</sup> is king of Denmark; and those, that would make mouths at him while my father lived, give twenty, forty, fifty, an hundred ducats a-piece, for his picture in little.<sup>7</sup> 'Sblood, there is something in this more than natural, if philosophy could find it out.

[*Flourish of Trumpets within.*

*Guil.* There are the players.

*Ham.* Gentlemen, you are welcome to Elsinore. Your hands. Come then: the appurtenance of welcome is fashion and ceremony: let me comply<sup>8</sup> with you in this garb; lest my extent to the players, which, I tell you, must show fairly outward, should more appear like entertainment than yours. You

<sup>4</sup> — to tarre them on to controversy:] To provoke any animal to rage, is to tarre him. The word is said to come from the Greek word *ταράσσω*.

<sup>5</sup> — Hercules and his load too.] The allusion may be to the *Globe* playhouse on the Bankside, the sign of which was *Hercules carrying the Globe*.

<sup>6</sup> It is not very strange: for my uncle —] I do not wonder that the new players have so suddenly risen to reputation, my uncle supplies another example of the facility with which honour is conferred upon new claimants. JOHNSON.

<sup>7</sup> — in little.] i. e. in miniature.

<sup>8</sup> — let me comply, &c.] To comply is apparently used in the sense of—to compliment.

are welcome: but my uncle-father, and aunt-mother, are deceived.

*Guil.* In what, my dear lord?

*Ham.* I am but mad north-north west: when the wind is southerly, I know a hawk from a hand-saw.<sup>9</sup>

*Enter* POLONIUS.

*Pol.* Well be with you, gentlemen!

*Ham.* Hark you, Guildenstern,—and you too;—at each ear a hearer; that great baby, you see there, is not yet out of his swaddling clouts.

*Ros.* Happily, he's the second time come to them; for, they say, an old man is twice a child.

*Ham.* I will prophecy, he comes to tell me of the players; mark it.—You say right, sir: o'Monday morning; 'twas then, indeed.

*Pol.* My lord, I have news to tell you.

*Ham.* My lord, I have news to tell you. When Roscius was an actor in Rome,—

*Pol.* The actors are come hither, my lord.

*Ham.* Buz, buz!

*Pol.* Upon my honour,—

*Ham.* *Then came each actor on his ass,*—

*Pol.* The best actors in the world, either for tragedy, comedy, history, pastoral, pastoral-comical, historical-pastoral, tragical-historical, tragical-comical-historical-pastoral, scene individable, or poem unlimited: Seneca cannot be too heavy, nor Plautus too light. For the law of writ,<sup>1</sup> and the liberty, these are the only men.

*Ham.* O *Jephthah, judge of Israel*,—what a treasure hadst thou!

*Pol.* What a treasure had he, my lord?

<sup>9</sup> — *I know a hawk from a hand-saw.*] A proverbial speech.

<sup>1</sup> For the law of writ,] *Writ*, for writing, composition.



*Ham.* Why—*One fair daughter, and no more,  
The which he loved passing well.*

*Pol.* Still on my daughter. [*Aside.*

*Ham.* Am I not i'the right, old Jephthah?

*Pol.* If you call me Jephthah, my lord, I have a daughter, that I love passing well.

*Ham.* Nay, that follows not.

*Pol.* What follows then, my lord?

*Ham.* Why, *As by lot, God wot,*<sup>2</sup> and then, you know, *It came to pass, As most like it was,*—The first row of the pious chanson<sup>3</sup> will show you more: for look, my abridgment<sup>4</sup> comes.

*Enter Four or Five Players.*

You are welcome, masters; welcome, all:—I am glad to see thee well:—welcome, good friends.—O, old friend! Why, thy face is valanced<sup>5</sup> since I saw thee last; Com'st thou to beard me<sup>6</sup> in Denmark?—What! my young lady and mistress! By'r-lady, your ladyship is nearer to heaven, than when

<sup>2</sup> Why, *As by lot, God wot,*—&c.] The old song from which these quotations are taken, I communicated to Dr. Percy, who has honoured it with a place in the second and third editions of his *Reliques of ancient English Poetry*. STEEVENS.

<sup>3</sup> — the pious chanson —] The *pious chansons* were a kind of *Christmas carols*, containing some scriptural history thrown into loose rhymes, and sung about the streets by the common people when they went at that season to solicit alms. Hamlet is here repeating some scraps from a song of this kind, and when Polonius enquires what follows them, he refers him to the *first row* (i. e. division) of one of these, to obtain the information he wanted.

<sup>4</sup> — my abridgment —] He calls the players afterwards, *the brief chronicles of the times*; but I think he now means only *those who will shorten my talk*. JOHNSON.

<sup>5</sup> — thy face is valanced —] i. e. fringed with a beard. The valance is the fringes or drapery hanging round the tester of a bed.

<sup>6</sup> — to beard me —] To beard, anciently signified to set at defiance.

I saw you last, by the altitude of a chopine.<sup>7</sup> Pray God, your voice, like a piece of uncurrent gold, be not cracked within the ring.<sup>8</sup>—Masters, you are all welcome. We'll e'en to't like French falconers, fly at any thing we see: We'll have a speech straight: Come, give us a taste of your quality; come, a passionate speech.

<sup>1</sup> *Play.* What speech, my lord?

*Ham.* I heard thee speak me a speech once,—but it was never acted; or, if it was, not above once: for the play, I remember, pleased not the million; 'twas caviare to the general:<sup>9</sup> but it was (as I received it, and others, whose judgments, in such matters, cried in the top of mine,<sup>1</sup>) an excellent play; well digested in the scenes, set down with as much modesty as cunning. I remember, one said, there were no sallets in the lines, to make the matter savoury; nor no matter in the phrase, that might indite the author of affection;<sup>2</sup> but called it, an honest method,<sup>3</sup> as wholesome as sweet, and by very much more handsome than fine. One speech in it I chiefly loved: 'twas Æneas' tale to Dido; and thereabout of it especially, where he speaks of Priam's slaughter: If it live in your memory, begin at this line; let me see, let me see;—

*The rugged Pyrrhus, like the Hyrcanian beast,—*

<sup>7</sup> — by the altitude of a chopine.] A *chioppine* is a high shoe, or rather clog, worn by the Italians.

<sup>8</sup> — be not cracked within the ring.] That is, cracked too much for use. This is said to a young player who acted the parts of women.

<sup>9</sup> — caviare to the general:] *Caviare* is a Russian delicacy made of the roe of the sturgeon. The *general*, the common people.

<sup>1</sup> — cried in the top of mine,] *Were higher than mine.*

<sup>2</sup> — indite the author of affection:] i. e. convict the author of being a fantastical affected writer.

<sup>3</sup> — an honest method.] *Honest*, for *chaste*.

'tis not so; it begins with Pyrrhus.

*The rugged Pyrrhus,—he, whose sable arms,  
Black as his purpose, did the night resemble  
When he lay couched in the ominous horse,  
Hath now this dread and black complexion smear'd  
With heraldry more dismal; head to foot  
Now is he total gules;<sup>4</sup> horridly trick'd<sup>5</sup>  
With blood of fathers, mothers, daughters, sons;  
Bak'd and impasted with the parching streets,  
That lend a tyrannous and a damned light  
To their lord's murder: Roasted in wrath, and fire,  
And thus o'er-sized with coagulate gore,  
With eyes like carbuncles, the hellish Pyrrhus  
Old grandsire Priam seeks;—So proceed you.*

*Pol.* 'Fore God, my lord, well spoken; with good accent, and good discretion.

1 Play. *Anon he finds him*

*Striking too short at Greeks; his antique sword,  
Rebellious to his arm, lies where it falls,  
Repugnant to command: Unequal match'd,  
Pyrrhus at Priam drives; in rage, strikes wide;  
But with the whiff and wind of his fell sword  
The unnerved father falls. Then senseless Ilium,  
Seeming to feel this blow, with flaming top  
Stoops to his base; and with a hideous crash  
Takes prisoner Pyrrhus' ear: for, lo! his sword  
Which was declining on the milky head  
Of reverend Priam, seem'd i' the air to stick:  
So, as a painted tyrant, Pyrrhus stood;  
And, like a neutral to his will and matter,  
Did nothing.*

*But, as we often see, against some storm,  
A silence in the heavens, the rack stand still,  
The bold winds speechless, and the orb below*

<sup>4</sup> Now is he total gules;] Gules is a term in the barbarous jargon peculiar to heraldry, and signifies red.

<sup>5</sup> — trick'd —] i.e. smeared, painted. An heraldick term.

*As hush as death : anon the dreadful thunder  
Doth rend the region : So, after Pyrrhus' pause,  
A roused vengeance sets him new a work ;  
And never did the Cyclops' hammers fall  
On Mars's armour, forg'd for proof eterne,  
With less remorse than Pyrrhus' bleeding sword  
Now falls on Priam.—*

*Out, out, thou strumpet, Fortune ! All you gods,  
In general synod, take away her power ;  
Break all the spokes and fellies from her wheel,  
And bowl the round nave down the hill of heaven,  
As low as to the fiends !*

*Pol.* This is too long.

*Ham.* It shall to the barber's, with your beard.—  
*Pr'ythee, say on :—He's for a jig, or a tale of baw-*  
*dry, or he sleeps :—say on : come to Hecuba.*

*1 Play.* *But who, ah woe ! had seen the mobled  
queen<sup>6</sup>—*

*Ham.* The mobled queen ?

*Pol.* That's good ; mobled queen is good.

*1 Play.* *Run barefoot up and down, threat'ning  
the flames*

*With bisson rheum ;<sup>7</sup> a clout upon that head,  
Where late the diadem stood ; and, for a robe,  
About her lank and all o'er-teemed loins,  
A blanket, in the alarm of fear caught up ;  
Who this had seen, with tongue in venom steep'd,  
'Gainst fortune's state would treason have pro-  
nounc'd :*

*But if the gods themselves did see her then,  
When she saw Pyrrhus make malicious sport  
In mincing with his sword her husband's limbs ;  
The instant burst of clamour that she made,*

<sup>6</sup> — the mobled queen —] *Mobled* or *mabled* signifies *veiled* ;  
or according to Johnson, *huddled*, *grossly covered*.

<sup>7</sup> *With bisson rheum ;*] *Bisson* or *beesen*, i. e. *blind*. A word  
still in use in some parts of the North of England.

*(Unless things mortal move them not at all,)  
Would have made milch the burning eye of heaven,  
And passion in the gods.*

*Pol.* Look, whether he has not turn'd his colour, and has tears in's eyes.—Pr'ythee, no more.

*Ham.* 'Tis well; I'll have thee speak out the rest of this soon.—Good my lord, will you see the players well bestowed? Do you hear, let them be well used; for they are the abstract, and brief chronicles, of the time: After your death you were better have a bad epitaph, than their ill report while you live.

*Pol.* My lord, I will use them according to their desert.

*Ham.* Odd's bodikin, man, much better: Use every man after his desert, and who shall 'scape whipping! Use them after your own honour and dignity: The less they deserve, the more merit is in your bounty. Take them in.

*Pol.* Come, sirs.

*[Exit POLONIUS, with some of the Players.]*

*Ham.* Follow him, friends: we'll hear a play to-morrow.—Dost thou hear me, old friend; can you play the murder of Gonzago?

*1 Play.* Ay, my lord.

*Ham.* We'll have it to-morrow night. You could, for a need, study a speech of some dozen or sixteen lines, which I would set down, and insert in't? could you not?

*1 Play.* Ay, my lord.

*Ham.* Very well.—Follow that lord; and look you mock him not. *[Exit Player.]* My good friends, *[To ROS. and GUIL.]* I'll leave you till night: you are welcome to Elsinore.

*Ros.* Good my lord!

*[Exeunt ROSENCRANTZ and GUILDENSTERN.]*

*Ham.* Ay, so, God be wi' you:—Now I am alone.

O, what a rogue and peasant slave am I!  
 Is it not monstrous, that this player here,  
 But in a fiction, in a dream of passion,  
 Could force his soul to his own conceit,  
 That from her working, all his visage wann'd;  
 Tears in his eyes, distraction in's aspect,  
 A broken voice, and his whole function suiting  
 With forms to his conceit? And all for nothing!  
 For Hecuba!

What's Hecuba to him, or he to Hecuba,  
 That he should weep for her? What would he do,  
 Had he the motive and the cue for passion,<sup>8</sup>  
 That I have? He would drown the stage with tears,  
 And cleave the general ear with horrid speech;  
 Make mad the guilty, and appal the free,  
 Confound the ignorant; and amaze, indeed,  
 The very faculties of eyes and ears.

Yet I,  
 A dull and muddy-mettled rascal, peak,  
 Like John a-dreams,<sup>9</sup> unpregnant of my cause,<sup>1</sup>  
 And can say nothing; no, not for a king,  
 Upon whose property, and most dear life,  
 A damn'd defeat was made.<sup>2</sup> Am I a coward?  
 Who calls me villain? breaks my pate across?  
 Plucks off my beard, and blows it in my face?  
 Tweaks me by the nose? gives me the lie i'the  
 throat,

As deep as to the lungs? Who does me this?  
 Ha!

Why, I should take it: for it cannot be,

<sup>8</sup> — the cue for passion,] The hint, the direction. This phrase is theatrical, and occurs at least a dozen times in our author's plays.

<sup>9</sup> Like John a-dreams,] *John a-dreams*, i. e. of dreams, means only *John the dreamer*; a nick-name for any ignorant silly fellow.

<sup>1</sup> — unpregnant of my cause,] Not quickened with a new desire of vengeance; not teeming with revenge.

<sup>2</sup> A damn'd defeat was made.] Defeat, for destruction.

But I am pigeon-liver'd, and lack gall  
 To make oppression bitter ; or, ere this,  
 I should have fatted all the region kites  
 With this slave's offal : Bloody, bawdy villain !  
 Remorseless, treacherous, lecherous, kindless<sup>3</sup> villain !  
 Why, what an ass am I ? This is most brave ;  
 That I, the son of a dear father murder'd,  
 Prompted to my revenge by heaven and hell,  
 Must, like a whore, unpack my heart with words,  
 And fall a cursing, like a very drab,  
 A scullion !

Fye upon't ! foh ! About my brains !<sup>4</sup> Humph ! I  
                   have heard,

That guilty creatures, sitting at a play,  
 Have by the very cunning of the scene  
 Been struck so to the soul, that presently  
 They have proclaim'd their malefactions ;  
 For murder, though it have no tongue, will speak  
 With most miraculous organ. I'll have these players  
 Play something like the murder of my father,  
 Before mine uncle : I'll observe his looks ;  
 I'll tent him<sup>5</sup> to the quick ; if he do blench,<sup>6</sup>  
 I know my course. The spirit, that I have seen,  
 May be a devil : and the devil hath power  
 To assume a pleasing shape ; yea, and, perhaps,  
 Out of my weakness, and my melancholy,  
 (As he is very potent with such spirits,)  
 Abuses me to damn me : I'll have grounds  
 More relative than this :<sup>7</sup> The play's the thing,  
 Wherein I'll catch the conscience of the king.

[*Exit.*

<sup>3</sup> — *kindless* —] *Unnatural.*

<sup>4</sup> — *About my brains !*] *Wits, to your work. Brain, go about the present business.*

<sup>5</sup> — *tent him* —] *Search his wounds.*

<sup>6</sup> — *if he do blench,*] *If he shrink, or start.*

<sup>7</sup> *More relative than this :*] *More nearly related, closely connected.*

## ACT III.

SCENE I. *A Room in the Castle.*

*Enter King, Queen, POLONIUS, OPHELIA, ROSENCRANTZ, and GUILDENSTERN.*

*King.* And can you, by no drift of conference  
Get from him, why he puts on this confusion;  
Grating so harshly all his days of quiet  
With turbulent and dangerous lunacy?

*Ros.* He does confess, he feels himself distracted;  
But from what cause he will by no means speak.

*Guil.* Nor do we find him forward to be sounded;  
But, with a crafty madness, keeps aloof,  
When we would bring him on to some confession  
Of his true state.

*Queen.* Did he receive you well?

*Ros.* Most like a gentleman.

*Guil.* But with much forcing of his disposition.

*Ros.* Niggard of question; but, of our demands,  
Most free in his reply.

*Queen.* Did you assay him  
To any pastime?

*Ros.* Madam, it so fell out, that certain players  
We o'er-raught on the way:<sup>8</sup> of these we told him;  
And there did seem in him a kind of joy  
To hear of it: They are about the court;  
And, as I think, they have already order  
This night to play before him.

*Pol.* 'Tis most true:  
And he beseech'd me to entreat your majesties,  
To hear and see the matter.

<sup>8</sup> — o'er-raught on the way:] *O'er-raught, is over-reached, that is, over-took.*



*King.* With all my heart; and it doth much—  
content me  
To hear him so inclin'd.  
Good gentlemen, give him a further edge,  
And drive his purpose on to these delights. . .

*Ros.* We shall, my lord.

[*Exeunt ROSENCRANTZ and GUILDENSTERN.*]

*King.* Sweet Gertrude, leave us too:  
For we have closely sent for Hamlet hither;  
That he, as 'twere by accident, may here  
Affront Ophelia :<sup>9</sup>  
Her father, and myself (lawful espials,)<sup>1</sup>  
Will so bestow ourselves, that, seeing, unseen,  
We may of their encounter frankly judge;  
And gather by him, as he is behav'd,  
If't be the affliction of his love or no,  
That thus he suffers for.

*Queen.* I shall obey you :  
And, for your part, Ophelia, I do wish,  
That your good beauties be the happy cause  
Of Hamlet's wildness : so shall I hope, your virtues  
Will bring him to his wonted way again,  
To both your honours.

*Oph.* • Madam, I wish it may.

[*Exit Queen.*]

*Pol.* Ophelia, walk you here :—Gracious, so  
please you,  
We will bestow ourselves :—Read on this book ;  
[*To OPHELIA.*]  
That show of such an exercise may colour  
Your loneliness.—We are oft to blame in this,—  
'Tis too much prov'd,<sup>2</sup> that, with devotion's visage,  
And pious action, we do sugar o'er  
The devil himself.

<sup>9</sup> Affront *Ophelia* :] To *affront*, is only to meet directly.

<sup>1</sup> — *espials*,] i. e. spies.

<sup>2</sup> 'Tis too much prov'd,] It is found by too frequent experience.

*King.* O, 'tis too true! how smart  
A lash that speech doth give my conscience!  
The harlot's cheek, beautied with plast'ring art,  
Is not more ugly to the thing that helps it,<sup>3</sup>  
Than is my deed to my most painted word:  
O heavy burden!

[*Aside.*

*Pol.* I hear him coming; let's withdraw, my lord.

[*Exeunt King and POLONIUS.*

*Enter HAMLET.*

*Ham.* To be, or not to be, that is the question:—  
Whether 'tis nobler in the mind, to suffer  
The slings and arrows of outrageous fortune;  
Or to take arms against a sea of troubles,  
And, by opposing, end them?—To die,—to sleep,—  
No more;—and, by a sleep, to say we end  
The heart-ach, and the thousand natural shocks  
That flesh is heir to,—'tis a consummation  
Devoutly to be wish'd. To die;—to sleep;—  
To sleep! perchance to dream;—ay, there's the rub;  
For in that sleep of death what dreams may come,  
When we have shuffled off this mortal coil,<sup>4</sup>  
Must give us pause: 'There's the respect,'  
That makes calamity of so long life:  
For who would bear the whips and scorns of time,<sup>5</sup>  
The oppressor's wrong, the proud man's contumely,  
The pangs of despis'd love, the law's delay,  
The insolence of office, and the spurns  
That patient merit of the unworthy takes,

<sup>3</sup> — more ugly to the thing that helps it,] That is, compared with the thing that helps it.

<sup>4</sup> — shuffled off this mortal coil,] i. e. turmoil, bustle.

<sup>5</sup> — There's the respect,] i. e. the consideration.

<sup>6</sup> — the whips and scorns of time,] It may be remarked, that Hamlet, in his enumeration of miseries, forgets, whether properly or not, that he is a prince, and mentions many evils to which inferior stations only are exposed. JOHNSON.

When he himself might his quietus make  
 With a bare bodkin?<sup>7</sup> who would fardels bear,  
 To grunt and sweat under a weary life ;  
 But that the dread of something after death,—  
 The undiscover'd country, from whose bourn  
 No traveller returns,—puzzles the will ;  
 And makes us rather bear those ills we have,  
 Than fly to others that we know not of ?  
 Thus conscience does make cowards of us all ;  
 And thus the native hue of resolution  
 Is sicklied o'er with the pale cast of thought ;  
 And enterprizes of great pith and moment,  
 With this regard, their currents turn awry,  
 And lose the name of action.—Soft you, now !  
 The fair Ophelia :—Nymph, in thy orisons<sup>8</sup>  
 Be all my sins remember'd.

*Oph.* Good my lord,  
 How does your honour for this many a day ?

*Ham.* I humbly thank you ; well.

*Oph.* My lord, I have remembrances of yours,  
 That I have longed long to re-deliver ;  
 I pray you, now receive them.

*Ham.* No, not I ;  
 I never gave you aught.

*Oph.* My honour'd lord, you know right well,  
 you did ;

<sup>7</sup> — *might his quietus make*

*With a bare bodkin ?*] The first expression probably alluded to the writ of discharge, which was formerly granted to those barons and knights who personally attended the king on any foreign expedition ; and were therefore exempted from the claims of scutage, or a tax on every knight's fee. This discharge was called a *quietus*. A *bodkin* was the ancient term for a *small dagger*.

<sup>8</sup> — *Nymph, in thy orisons, &c.*] This is a touch of nature. Hamlet, at the sight of Ophelia, does not immediately recollect that he is to personate madness, but makes her an address grave and solemn, such as the foregoing meditation excited in his thoughts. JOHNSON.

And, with them, words of so sweet breath compos'd  
As made the things more rich : their perfume lost,  
Take these again ; for to the noble mind,  
Rich gifts wax poor, when givers prove unkind.  
There, my lord.

*Ham.* Ha, ha ! are you honest ?

*Oph.* My lord ?

*Ham.* Are you fair ?

*Oph.* What means your lordship ?

*Ham.* That if you be honest, and fair, you should  
admit no discourse to your beauty.

*Oph.* Could beauty, my lord, have better commerce than with honesty ?

*Ham.* Ay, truly ; for the power of beauty will  
sooner transform honesty from what it is to a bawd,  
than the force of honesty can translate beauty into  
his likeness ;<sup>9</sup> this was some time a paradox, but now  
the time gives it proof. I did love you once.

*Oph.* Indeed, my lord, you made me believe so.

*Ham.* You should not have believed me : for virtue  
cannot so inoculate our old stock, but we shall  
relish of it : I loved you not.

*Oph.* I was the more deceived.

*Ham.* Get thee to a nunnery ; Why would'st thou  
be a breeder of sinners ? I am myself indifferent  
honest ; but yet I could accuse me of such things,  
that it were better, my mother had not borne me :  
I am very proud, revengeful, ambitious ; with more  
offences at my beck, than I have thoughts to put  
them in,<sup>1</sup> imagination to give them shape, or time  
to act them in : What should such fellows as I do  
crawling between earth and heaven ! We are arrant

<sup>9</sup> — into his likeness :] The modern editors read—its likeness ; but the text is right. Shakspeare and his contemporaries frequently use the personal for the neutral pronoun.

<sup>1</sup> — with more offences at my beck, than I have thoughts to put them in,] To put a thing into thought, is to think on it.

knaves, all; believe none of us: Go thy ways to a nunnery. Where's your father?

*Oph.* At home, my lord.

*Ham.* Let the doors be shut upon him; that he may play the fool no where but in's own house. Farewell.

*Oph.* O, help him, you sweet heavens!

*Ham.* If thou dost marry, I'll give thee this plague for thy dowry; Be thou as chaste as ice, as pure as snow, thou shalt not escape calumny. Get thee to a nunnery; farewell: Or, if thou wilt needs marry, marry a fool; for wise men know well enough what monsters you make of them. To a nunnery, go; and quickly too. Farewell.

*Oph.* Heavenly powers, restore him!

*Ham.* I have heard of your paintings too, well enough; God hath given you one face, and you make yourselves another: you jig, you amble, and you lisp, and nick-name God's creatures, and make your wantonness your ignorance:<sup>2</sup> Go to, I'll no more of't; it hath made me mad. I say, we will have no more marriages: those that are married already, all but one, shall live; the rest shall keep as they are. To a nunnery, go. [*Exit HAMLET.*]

*Oph.* O, what a noble mind is here o'erthrown! The courtier's, soldier's, scholar's, eye, tongue, sword:

The expectancy and rose of the fair state,  
The glass of fashion, and the mould of form,<sup>3</sup>  
The observ'd of all observers! quite, quite down!  
And I, of ladies most deject and wretched,  
That suck'd the honey of his musick vows,  
Now see that noble and most sovereign reason,

<sup>2</sup> — *make your wantonness your ignorance:*] You mistake by wanton affectation, and pretend to mistake by ignorance.

<sup>3</sup> — *The mould of form,*] The model by whom all endeavoured to form themselves. JOHNSON.

Like sweet bells jangled, out of tune and harsh ;  
That unmatch'd form and feature of blown youth,  
Blasted with ecstasy :<sup>4</sup> O, woe is me !  
To have seen what I have seen, see what I see !

*Re-enter King and POLONIUS.*

*King.* Love! his affections do not that way tend;  
Nor what he spake, though it lack'd form a little,  
Was not like madness. There's something in his  
soul.

O'er which his melancholy sits on brood ;  
And, I do doubt, the hatch, and the disclose,  
Will be some danger : Which for to prevent,  
I have, in quick determination,  
Thus set it down ; He shall with speed to England,  
For the demand of our neglected tribute :  
Haply, the seas, and countries different,  
With variable objects, shall expel  
This something-settled matter in his heart ;  
Whereon his brains still beating, puts him thus  
From fashion of himself. What think you on't ?

*Pol.* It shall do well ; but yet I do believe,  
The origin and commencement of his grief  
Sprung from neglected love.—How now, Ophelia ?  
You need not tell us what lord Hamlet said ;  
We heard it all.—My lord, do as you please ;  
But, if you hold it fit, after the play,  
Let his queen mother all alone entreat him  
To show his grief ; let her be round with him ;  
And I'll be plac'd, so please you, in the ear  
Of all their conference : If she find him not,  
To England send him : or confine him, where  
Your wisdom best shall think.

<sup>4</sup> ——— with ecstasy:] The word *ecstasy* was anciently used to signify some degree of alienation of mind.

5 ——— *be round with him ;* ] Reprimand him with freedom.

*King.* It shall be so :  
 Madness in great ones must not unwatch'd go.  
[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.

*A Hall in the same.*

*Enter HAMLET, and certain Players.*

*Ham.* Speak the speech, I pray you, as I pronounced it to you, trippingly on the tongue : but if you mouth it, as many of our players do, I had as lief the town-crier spoke my lines. Nor do not saw the air too much with your hand, thus : but use all gently : for in the very torrent, tempest, and (as I may say) whirlwind of your passion, you must acquire and beget a temperance, that may give it smoothness. O, it offends me to the soul, to hear a robustious periwig-pated<sup>6</sup> fellow tear a passion to tatters, to very rags, to split the ears of the groundlings ;<sup>7</sup> who, for the most part, are capable of nothing but inexplicable dumb shows, and noise : I would have such a fellow whipped for o'er-doing Termagant ;<sup>8</sup> it out-herods Herod :<sup>9</sup> Pray you, avoid it.

<sup>1</sup> *Play.* I warrant your honour.

*Ham.* Be not too tame neither, but let your own discretion be your tutor : suit the action to the word,

<sup>6</sup> — periwig-pated—] This is a ridicule on the quantity of false hair worn in Shakspeare's time, for wigs were not in common use till the reign of Charles II.

<sup>7</sup> — the groundlings ;] In our early play-houses the pit had neither floor nor benches. Hence the term of *groundlings* for those who frequented it.

<sup>8</sup> — Termagant ;] *Termagaunt* (says Dr. Percy) is the name given in the old romances to the god of the *Sarazens* ; in which he is constantly linked with *Mahound*, or *Mohammed*.

<sup>9</sup> — out-herods Herod :] The character of *Herod* in the ancient mysteries, was always a violent one.

the word to the action ; with this special observance, that you o'er-step not the modesty of nature ; for any thing so overdone is from the purpose of playing, whose end, both at the first, and now, was, and is, to hold, as 'twere, the mirror up to nature ; to show virtue her own feature, scorn her own image, and the very age and body of the time, his form and pressure.<sup>1</sup> Now this, overdone, or come tardy off, though it make the unskilful laugh, cannot but make the judicious grieve ; the censure of which one,<sup>2</sup> must, in your allowance,<sup>3</sup> o'er-weigh a whole theatre of others. O, there be players, that I have seen play,—and heard others praise, and that highly,—not to speak it profanely, that, neither having the accent of christians, nor the gait of christian, pagan, nor man, have so strutted, and bellowed, that I have thought some of nature's journeymen had made men, and not made them well, they imitated humanity so abominably.

1 *Play.* I hope, we have reformed that indifferently with us.

*Ham.* O, reform it altogether. And let those, that play your clowns, speak no more than is set down for them :<sup>4</sup> for there be of them, that will themselves laugh, to set on some quantity of barren spectators to laugh too ; though, in the mean time, some necessary question of the play be then to be considered : that's villainous ; and shows a most pi-

<sup>1</sup> — *pressure.*] Resemblance as in a print.

<sup>2</sup> — *the censure of which one,*] The meaning is, “ the censure of one of which.”

<sup>3</sup> — *in your allowance,*] In your approbation.

<sup>4</sup> — *speak no more than is set down for them :*] The clown very often addressed the audience, in the middle of the play, and entered into a contest of raillery and sarcasm with such of the audience as chose to engage with him. It is to this absurd practice that Shakspeare alludes.



tiful ambition in the fool that uses it. Go, make you ready.—  
[*Exeunt Players.*]

*Enter* POLONIUS, ROSENCRANTZ, and GUILDENSTERN.

How now, my lord? will the king hear this piece of work?

*Pol.* And the queen too, and that presently.

*Ham.* Bid the players make haste.—

[*Exit* POLONIUS.]

Will you two help to hasten them?

*Both.* Ay, my lord.

[*Exeunt* ROSENCRANTZ and GUILDENSTERN.]

*Ham.* What, ho; Horatio!

*Enter* HORATIO.

*Hor.* Here, sweet lord, at your service.

*Ham.* Horatio, thou art e'en as just a man  
As e'er my conversation cop'd withal.

*Hor.* O, my dear lord,—

*Ham.* Nay, do not think I flatter:  
For what advancement may I hope from thee,  
That no revenue hast, but thy good spirits,  
To feed, and clothe thee? Why should the poor be  
flatter'd?

No, let the candied tongue lick absurd pomp;  
And crook the pregnant hinges of the knee,<sup>s</sup>  
Where thrift may follow fawning. Dost thou hear?  
Since my dear soul was mistress of her choice,  
And could of men distinguish her election,  
She hath seal'd thee for herself: for thou hast been  
As one, in suffering all, that suffers nothing;  
A man, that fortune's buffets and rewards

<sup>s</sup> — the pregnant hinges of the knee,] I believe the sense is pregnant in this place, is, quick, ready, prompt. JOHNSON.

Hast ta'en with equal thanks : and bless'd are those,  
 Whose blood and judgment<sup>6</sup> are so well co-mingled,  
 That they are not a pipe for fortune's finger  
 To sound what stop she please : Give me that man  
 That is not passion's slave, and I will wear him  
 In my heart's core, ay, in my heart of heart,  
 As I do thee.—Something too much of this.—  
 There is a play to-night before the king ;  
 One scene of it comes near the circumstance,  
 Which I have told thee of my father's death.  
 I pr'ythee, when thou seest that act a-foot,  
 Even with the very comment of thy soul  
 Observe my uncle : if his occulted guilt  
 Do not itself unkennel in one speech,  
 It is a damned ghost that we have seen ;  
 And my imaginations are as foul  
 As Vulcan's stithy.<sup>7</sup> Give him heedful note :  
 For I mine eyes will rivet to his face ;  
 And, after, we will both our judgments join  
 In censure of his seeming.

*Hor.*

Well, my lord :

If he steal aught, the whilst this play is playing,  
 And scape detecting, I will pay the theft.

*Ham.* They are coming to the play ; I must be idle :  
 Get you a place.

*Danish March. A Flourish. Enter King, Queen,  
 POLONIUS, OPHELIA, ROSENCRANTZ, GUILDEN-  
 STERN, and Others.*

*King.* How fares our cousin Hamlet ?

*Ham.* Excellent, i'faith ; of the camelion's dish :

<sup>6</sup> *Whose blood and judgment—*] According to the doctrine of the four humours, *desire* and *confidence* were seated in the blood, and *judgment* in the phlegm, and the due mixture of the humours made a perfect character. JOHNSON.

<sup>7</sup> — *Vulcan's stithy.*] *Stithy* is a smith's anvil.

I eat the air, promise-crammed: You cannot feed capons so.

*King.* I have nothing with this answer, Hamlet; these words are not mine.

*Ham.* No, for mine now.<sup>8</sup> My lord,—you played once in the university, you say?

[*To POLONIUS.*

*Pol.* That did I, my lord; and was accounted a good actor.

*Ham.* And what did you enact?

*Pol.* I did enact Julius Cæsar: I was killed i'the Capitol; Brutus killed me.

*Ham.* It was a brute part of him, to kill so capital a calf there.—Be the players ready?

*Ros.* Ay, my lord; they stay upon your patience.

*Queen.* Come hither, my dear Hamlet, sit by me.

*Ham.* No, good mother, here's metal more attractive.

*Pol.* O ho! do you mark that? [*To the King.*

*Ham.* Lady, shall I lie in your lap?

[*Lying down at OPHELIA'S Feet.*<sup>9</sup>

*Oph.* No, my lord.

*Ham.* I mean, my head upon your lap?

*Oph.* Ay, my lord.

*Ham.* Do you think, I meant country matters?

*Oph.* I think nothing, my lord.

*Ham.* That's a fair thought to lie between maid's legs.

*Oph.* What is, my lord?

*Ham.* Nothing.

*Oph.* You are merry, my lord.

*Ham.* Who, I?

<sup>8</sup> — *for mine now.*] A man's words, says the proverb, are his own no longer than he keeps them unspoken.

<sup>9</sup> — *at Ophelia's feet.*] To lie at the feet of a mistress during any dramattick representation, seems to have been a common act of gallantry.

*Oph.* Ay, my lord.

*Ham.* O! your only jig-maker. What should a man do, but be merry? for, look you, how cheerfully my mother looks, and my father died within these two hours.

*Oph.* Nay, 'tis twice two months, my lord.

*Ham.* So long? Nay, then let the devil wear black, for I'll have a suit of sables.<sup>1</sup> O heavens! die two months ago, and not forgotten yet? Then there's hope, a great man's memory may outlive his life half a year: But, by'r-lady, he must build churches then: or else shall he suffer, not thinking on, with the hobby-horse;<sup>2</sup> whose epitaph is, *For, O, for, O, the hobby-horse is forgot.*

*Trumpets sound. The dumb Show follows.<sup>3</sup>*

*Enter a King and a Queen, very lovingly; the Queen embracing him, and he her. She kneels, and makes show of protestation unto him. He takes her up, and declines his head upon her neck: lays him down upon a bank of flowers; she, seeing him*

<sup>1</sup> — *Nay, then let the devil wear black, for I'll have a suit of sables.*] Nay then, says Hamlet, if my father be so long dead as you say, let the devil wear black; as for me, so far from wearing a mourning dress, I'll wear the most costly and magnificent suit that can be procured: *a suit trimmed with sables*; which in our poet's time was the richest dress worn in England.

<sup>2</sup> — *suffer not thinking on with the hobby-horse;*] Amongst the country May-games there was an hobby-horse, which, when the puritanical humour of those times opposed and discredited these games, was brought by the poets and ballad-makers as an instance of the ridiculous zeal of the sectaries: from these ballads Hamlet quotes a line or two. WAREBURTON.

<sup>3</sup> — *The dumb show follows.*] And appears to contain every circumstance of the murder of Hamlet's father. Now there is no apparent reason why the Usurper should not be as much affected by this mute representation of his crimes, as he is afterwards when the same action is accompanied by words.

*asleep, leaves him. Anon comes in a fellow, takes off his crown, kisses it, and pours poison in the King's ears, and exit. The Queen returns; finds the King dead, and makes passionate action. The poisoner, with some two or three Mutes, comes in again, seeming to lament with her. The dead body is carried away. The poisoner wooes the Queen with gifts; she seems loath and unwilling awhile, but, in the end, accepts his love. [Exeunt.*

*Oph.* What means this, my lord?

*Ham.* Marry, this is miching mallecho; it means mischief.<sup>4</sup>

*Oph.* Belike, this show imports the argument of the play.

*Enter Prologue.*

*Ham.* We shall know by this fellow: the players cannot keep counsel; they'll tell all.

*Oph.* Will he tell us what this show meant?

*Ham.* Ay, or any show that you'll show him: Be not you ashamed to show,<sup>5</sup> he'll not shame to tell you what it means.

*Oph.* You are naught, you are naught; I'll mark the play.

<sup>4</sup> *Marry, this is miching mallecho; it means mischief.*] The word *miching* is daily used in the West of England for *playing truant*, or sculking about in private for some sinister purpose; and *malicho*, inaccurately written for *malheco*, signifies *mischief*! so that *miching malicho* is *mischief on the watch for opportunity*.

<sup>5</sup> — *Be not you ashamed to show, &c.*] The conversation of Hamlet with Ophelia, which cannot fail to disgust every modern reader, is probably such as was peculiar to the young and fashionable of the age of Shakspeare, which was, by no means, the age of delicacy. The poet is, however, blameable: for extravagance of thought, not indecency of expression, is the characteristic of madness, at least of such madness as should be represented on the scene. STEEVENS.

*Pro.* For us, and for our tragedy,  
 Here stooping to your clemency,  
 We beg your hearing patiently.

*Ham.* Is this a prologue, or the posy of a ring?

*Oph.* 'Tis brief, my lord.

*Ham.* As woman's love.

*Enter a King and a Queen.*

*P. King.* Full thirty times hath Phœbus' cart<sup>6</sup>  
 gone round  
 Neptune's salt wash, and Tellus' orb'd ground;  
 And thirty dozen moons, with borrow'd sheen,<sup>7</sup>  
 About the world have times twelve thirties been;  
 Since love our hearts, and Hymen did our hands,  
 Unite commutual in most sacred bands.

*P. Queen.* So many journeys may the sun and moon  
 Make us again count o'er, ere love be done!  
 But, woe is me, you are so sick of late,  
 So far from cheer, and from your former state,  
 That I distrust you. Yet, though I distrust,  
 Discomfort you, my lord, it nothing must:  
 For women fear too much, even as they love;  
 And women's fear and love hold quantity;  
 In neither aught, or in extremity.  
 Now, what my love is, proof hath made you know;  
 And as my love is siz'd, my fear is so.  
 Where love is great, the littlest doubts are fear;  
 Where little fears grow great, great love grows there.

*P. King.* 'Faith, I must leave thee, love, and  
 shortly too;  
 My operant powers<sup>8</sup> their functions leave to do:  
 And thou shalt live in this fair world behind,  
 Honour'd, belov'd; and, haply, one as kind

<sup>6</sup> — cart—] A chariot was anciently so called.

<sup>7</sup> — sheen,] Splendor, lustre. JOHNSON.

<sup>8</sup> — operant powers—] Operant is active.

For husband shalt thou——

*P. Queen.* O, confound the rest!  
Such love must needs be treason in my breast:  
In second husband let me be accurst!  
None wed the second, but who kill'd the first,

*Ham.* That's wormwood.

*P. Queen.* The instances,<sup>9</sup> that second marriage  
move,  
Are base respects of thrift, but none of love;  
A second time I kill my husband dead,  
When second husband kisses me in bed.

*P. King.* I do believe, you think what now you  
speak;  
But, what we do determine, oft we break.  
Purpose is but the slave to memory;  
Of violent birth, but poor validity:  
Which now, like fruit unripe, sticks on the tree;  
But fall, unshaken, when they mellow be.  
Most necessary 'tis, that we forget  
To pay ourselves what to ourselves is debt:<sup>1</sup>  
What to ourselves in passion we propose,  
The passion ending, doth the purpose lose.  
The violence of either grief or joy  
Their own enactures with themselves destroy:<sup>2</sup>  
Where joy most revels, grief doth most lament;  
Grief joys, joy grieves, on slender accident.  
This world is not for aye; nor 'tis not strange,  
That even our loves should with our fortunes change;  
For 'tis a question left us yet to prove,  
Whether love lead fortune, or else fortune love.

<sup>9</sup> *The instances,] The motives.*

<sup>1</sup> — *what to ourselves is debt:]* The performance of a resolution, in which only the *resolver* is interested, is a debt only to himself which he may therefore remit at pleasure.

<sup>2</sup> *Their own enactures with themselves destroy:]* What grief or joy enact or determine in their violence, is revoked in their abatement. *Enactures* is the word in the quarto; all the modern editions have *enactors*. JOHNSON.

The great man down, you mark his favourite lies;  
 The poor advanc'd makes friends of enemies.  
 And hitherto doth love on fortune tend:  
 For who not needs, shall never lack a friend;  
 And who in want a hollow friend doth try,  
 Directly seasons him his enemy.  
 But, orderly to end where I begun,—  
 Our wills, and fates, do so contráry run,  
 That our devices still are overthrown;  
 Our thoughts are ours, their ends none of our  
 own:

So think thou wilt no second husband wed;  
 But die thy thoughts, when thy first lord is dead.

*P. Queen.* Nor earth to me give food, nor heaven  
 light!

Sport and repose lock from me, day, and night!  
 To desperation turn my trust and hope!  
 An anchor's cheer in prison be my scope!<sup>1</sup>  
 Each opposite, that blanks the face of joy,  
 Meet what I would have well, and it destroy!  
 Both here, and hence, pursue me lasting strife,  
 If, once a widow, ever I be wife!

*Ham.* If she should break it now,——

[*To OPHELIA.*

*P. King.* 'Tis deeply sworn. Sweet, leave me here  
 a while;

My spirits grow dull, and fain I would beguile  
 The tedious day with sleep.

[*Sleeps.*

*P. Queen.* Sleep rock thy brain;  
 And never come mischance between us twain!

[*Exit.*

*Ham.* Madam, how like you this play?

*Queen.* The lady doth protest too much, methinks.

*Ham.* O, but she'll keep her word.

<sup>1</sup> *An anchor's cheer in prison be my scope!]* May my whole liberty and enjoyment be to live on hermit's fare in a prison.  
*Anchor is for anchoret.* JOHNSON.



*King.* Have you heard the argument? Is there no offence in't?

*Ham.* No, no, they do but jest, poison in jest; no offence i'the world.

*King.* What do you call the play?

*Ham.* The mouse-trap.<sup>4</sup> Marry, how? Tropically. This play is the image of a murder done in Vienna: Gonzago is the duke's name; his wife, Baptista: you shall see anon; 'tis a knavish piece of work: But what of that? your majesty, and we that have free souls, it touches us not: Let the galled jade wince, our withers are unwrung.—

*Enter* LUCIANUS.

This is one Lucianus, nephew to the king.

*Oph.* You are as good as a chorus, my lord.

*Ham.* I could interpret between you and your love, if I could see the puppets dallying.

*Oph.* You are keen, my lord, you are keen.

*Ham.* It would cost you a groaning, to take off my edge.

*Oph.* Still better, and worse.

*Ham.* So you mistake your husbands.—Begin, murderer;—leave thy damnable faces, and begin. Come;—

——The croaking raven

Doth bellow for revenge.

*Luc.* Thoughts black, hands apt, drugs fit, and time agreeing;

Confederate season, else no creature seeing;

Thou mixture rank, of midnight weeds collected,  
With Hecat's ban thrice blasted, thrice infected,

<sup>4</sup> *The mouse-trap.*] He calls it the *mouse-trap*, because it is—

“ ——— the thing

“ In which he'll catch the conscience of the king.”

Thy natural magick and dire property,  
On wholesome life usurp immediately.

[*Pours the Poison into the Sleeper's Ears.*]

*Ham.* He poisons him i'the garden for his estate.  
His name's Gonzago; the story is extant, and written  
in very choice Italian: You shall see anon, how  
the murderer gets the love of Gonzago's wife.

*Oph.* The king rises.

*Ham.* What! frighted with false fire!

*Queen.* How fares my lord?

*Pol.* Give o'er the play.

*King.* Give me some light:—away!

*Pol.* Lights, lights, lights!

[*Exeunt all but HAMLET and HORATIO.*]

*Ham.* Why, let the stricken deer go weep,

The hart ungalled play:

For some must watch, while some must sleep;

Thus runs the world away.—

Would not this, sir, and a forest of feathers,<sup>5</sup> (if  
the rest of my fortunes turn Turk<sup>6</sup> with me,) with  
two Provencal roses on my razed<sup>7</sup> shoes, get me a  
fellowship in a cry of players,<sup>8</sup> sir?

*Hor.* Half a share.

*Ham.* A whole one; I.<sup>9</sup>

<sup>5</sup> *Would not this, sir, and a forest of feathers, &c.*] It appears from Decker's *Gul's Hornbooke*, that feathers were much worn on the stage in Shakspeare's time.

<sup>6</sup> — turn Turk *with me*,] This means to change condition fantastically.

<sup>7</sup> — Provencal roses on my razed shoes.] *Provencal*, or (with the French ç) *Provençal*. He means roses of *Provence*, a beautiful species of rose, much cultivated. *Razed* shoes may mean *slashed* shoes, i. e. with cuts or openings in them. The poet might have written *raised shoes*, i. e. shoes with *high heels*; such as by adding to the stature, are supposed to increase the dignity of a player.

<sup>8</sup> — a cry of players,] Allusion to a pack of hounds, which was once called a *cry* of hounds.

<sup>9</sup> *Ham.* *A whole one, I.*] The actors in our author's time had not

For thou dost know, O Damon dear,<sup>1</sup>  
 This realm dismantled was  
 Of Jove himself; and now reigns here  
 A very, very—peacock.

*Hor.* You might have rhymed.

*Ham.* O good Horatio, I'll take the ghost's word  
 for a thousand pound. Didst perceive?

*Hor.* Very well, my lord.

*Ham.* Upon the talk of the poisoning,—

*Hor.* I did very well note him.

*Ham.* Ah, ha!—Come, some musick; come, the  
 recorders.—

For if the king like not the comedy,  
 Why then, belike,<sup>2</sup>—he likes it not, perdy.<sup>3</sup>

*Enter ROSENCRANTZ and GUILDENSTERN.*

Come, some musick.

*Guil.* Good my lord, vouchsafe me a word with you.

*Ham.* Sir, a whole history.

*Guil.* The king, sir,—

*Ham.* Ay, sir, what of him?

*Guil.* Is, in his retirement, marvellous distempered.

*Ham.* With drink, sir?<sup>4</sup>

*Guil.* No, my lord, with choler.

*Ham.* Your wisdom should show itself more  
 richer, to signify this to the doctor; for, for me to

annual salaries as at present. The whole receipts of each theatre were divided into shares, of which the proprietors of the theatre, or house-keepers, as they were called, had some; and each actor had one or more shares, or part of a share, according to his merit.

<sup>1</sup> — O Damon dear,] Hamlet calls Horatio by this name, in allusion to the celebrated friendship between Damon and Pythias.

<sup>2</sup> Why then, belike,] Hamlet was going on to draw the consequence, when the courtiers entered. JOHNSON.

<sup>3</sup> — he likes it not, perdy.] *Perdy* is the corruption of *per Dieu*, and is not uncommon in the old plays.

<sup>4</sup> With drink, sir?] Hamlet takes particular care that his uncle's love of drink shall not be forgotten.

put him to his purgation, would, perhaps, plunge him into more choler.

*Guil.* Good my lord, put your discourse into some frame, and start not so wildly from my affair.

*Ham.* I am tame, sir:—pronounce.

*Guil.* The queen, your mother, in most great affliction of spirit, hath sent me to you.

*Ham.* You are welcome.

*Guil.* Nay, good my lord, this courtesy is not of the right breed. If it shall please you to make me a wholesome answer, I will do your mother's commandment: if not, your pardon, and my return, shall be the end of my business.

*Ham.* Sir, I cannot.

*Guil.* What, my lord?

*Ham.* Make you a wholesome answer; my wit's diseased: But, sir, such answer as I can make, you shall command; or, rather, as you say, my mother: therefore no more, but to the matter: My mother, you say,——

*Ros.* Then thus she says; Your behaviour hath struck her into amazement and admiration.

*Ham.* O wonderful son, that can so astonish a mother!—But is there no sequel at the heels of this mother's admiration? impart.

*Ros.* She desires to speak with you in her closet, ere you go to bed.

*Ham.* We shall obey, were she ten times our mother. Have you any further trade<sup>s</sup> with us?

*Ros.* My lord, you once did love me.

*Ham.* And do still, by these pickers and stealers.<sup>o</sup>

*Ros.* Good my lord, what is your cause of distemper? you do, surely, but bar the door upon your own liberty, if you deny your griefs to your friend.

<sup>s</sup> ——— further trade —] Further business; further dealing.

<sup>o</sup> ——— by these pickers, &c.] By these hands.

*Ham.* Sir, I lack advancement.

*Ros.* How can that be, when you have the voice of the king himself for your succession in Denmark?

*Ham.* Ay, sir, but, *While the grass grows*,—the proverb is something musty.<sup>7</sup>

*Enter the Players, with Recorders.\**

O, the recorders:—let me see one.—To withdraw with you:<sup>9</sup>—Why do you go about to recover the wind of me, as if you would drive me into a toil?

*Guil.* O, my lord, if my duty be too bold, my love is too unmannerly.

*Ham.* I do not well understand that. Will you play upon this pipe?

*Guil.* My lord, I cannot.

*Ham.* I pray you.

*Guil.* Believe me, I cannot.

*Ham.* I do beseech you.

*Guil.* I know no touch of it, my lord.

*Ham.* 'Tis as easy as lying: govern these ventages<sup>1</sup> with your fingers and thumb, give it breath with your mouth, and it will discourse most eloquent musick. Look you, these are the stops.

<sup>7</sup> — *the proverb is something musty.*] The remainder of this old proverb is

“*While grass doth growe, the silly horse he starves.*”

Hamlet means to intimate, that whilst he is waiting for the succession to the throne of Denmark, he may himself be taken off by death.

<sup>8</sup> — *Recorders.*] i. e. a kind of large flute.

<sup>9</sup> *To withdraw with you.*] Here Mr. Malone adds the following stage direction: [*Taking Guildenstern aside.*] But these obscure words may refer to some gesture which Guildenstern had used, and which, at first, was interpreted by Hamlet into a signal for him to attend the speaker into another room. “To withdraw with you?” (says he) Is that your meaning? But finding his friends continue to move mysteriously about him, he adds, with some resentment, a question more easily intelligible. STEEVENS.

<sup>1</sup> — *ventages* —] The holes of a flute.

*Guil.* But these cannot I command to any utterance of harmony; I have not the skill.

*Ham.* Why, look you now, how unworthy a thing you make of me? You would play upon me; you would seem to know my stops; you would pluck out the heart of my mystery; you would sound me from my lowest note to the top of my compass: and there is much musick, excellent voice, in this little organ; yet cannot you make it speak. S'blood, do you think, I am easier to be played on than a pipe? Call me what instrument you will, though you can fret me, you cannot play upon me.

*Enter POLONIUS.*

God bless you, sir!

*Pol.* My lord, the queen would speak with you, and presently.

*Ham.* Do you see yonder cloud, that's almost in shape of a camel?

*Pol.* By the mass, and 'tis like a camel, indeed.

*Ham.* Methinks, it is like a weasel.

*Pol.* It is backed like a weasel.

*Ham.* Or, like a whale?

*Pol.* Very like a whale.

*Ham.* Then will I come to my mother by and by.  
—They fool me to the top of my bent.<sup>2</sup>—I will come by and by.

*Pol.* I will say so. [*Exit POLONIUS.*

*Ham.* By and by is easily said.—Leave me, friends.

[*Exeunt ROS. GUIL. HOR. &c.*

'Tis now the very witching time of night;  
When churchyards yawn, and hell itself breathes out  
Contagion to this world: Now could I drink hot  
blood,

<sup>2</sup> *They fool me to the top of my bent.*] They compel me to play the fool, till I can endure it no longer.

And do such business as the bitter day  
 Would quake to look on. Soft; now to my mother.—  
 O, heart, lose not thy nature; let not ever  
 The soul of Nero enter this firm bosom :  
 Let me be cruel, not unnatural :  
 I will speak daggers to her, but use none ;  
 My tongue and soul in this be hypocrites :  
 How in my words soever she be shent,<sup>3</sup>  
 To give them seals<sup>4</sup> never, my soul, consent!  
[*Exit.*

## SCENE III.

*A Room in the same.*

*Enter King, ROSENCRANTZ, and GUILDENSTERN.*

*King.* I like him not; nor stands it safe with us,  
 To let his madness range. Therefore, prepare you ;  
 I your commission will forthwith despatch,  
 And he to England shall along with you :  
 The terms of our estate may not endure  
 Hazard so near us, as doth hourly grow  
 Out of his lunes.<sup>5</sup>

*Guil.* We will ourselves provide :  
 Most holy and religious fear it is,  
 To keep those many many bodies safe,  
 That live, and feed, upon your majesty.

*Ros.* The single and peculiar life is bound,  
 With all the strength and armour of the mind,  
 To keep itself from 'noyance ; but much more  
 That spirit, upon whose weal depend and rest  
 The lives of many. The cease of majesty  
 Dies not alone ; but, like a gulf, doth draw

<sup>3</sup> — *be shent,*] To *shend*, is to reprove harshly, to treat with rough language.

<sup>4</sup> *To give them seals —*] i. e. put them in execution.

<sup>5</sup> *Out of his lunes.*] i. e. his *madness, frenzy.*

What's near it, with it: it is a massy wheel,  
 Fix'd on the summit of the highest mount,  
 To whose huge spokes ten thousand lesser things  
 Are mortis'd and adjoin'd; which, when it falls,  
 Each small annexment, petty consequence,  
 Attends the boist'rous ruin. Never alone  
 Did the king sigh, but with a general groan.

*King.* Arm you, I pray you, to this speedy voyage;  
 For we will fetters put upon this fear,  
 Which now goes too free-footed.

*Ros. Guil.*

We will haste us.

[*Exeunt* ROSENCRANTZ and GUILDENSTERN.]

*Enter* POLONIUS.

*Pol.* My lord, he's going to his mother's closet:  
 Behind the arras I'll convey myself,<sup>6</sup>  
 To hear the process; I'll warrant, she'll tax him  
 home:

And, as you said, and wisely was it said,  
 'Tis meet, that some more audience, than a mother,  
 Since nature makes them partial, should o'erhear  
 The speech, of vantage.<sup>7</sup> Fare you well, my liege:  
 I'll call upon you ere you go to bed,  
 And tell you what I know.

*King.*

Thanks, dear my lord.

[*Exit* POLONIUS.]

O, my offence is rank, it smells to heaven;  
 It hath the primal eldest curse upon't,  
 A brother's murder!—Pray can I not,  
 Though inclination be as sharp as will;<sup>8</sup>

<sup>6</sup> *Behind the arras I'll convey myself,*] The arras-hangings, in Shakspeare's time, were hung at such a distance from the walls, that a person might easily stand behind them unperceived.

<sup>7</sup> *— of vantage.*] By some opportunity of secret observation.

<sup>8</sup> *Though inclination be as sharp as will;*] What the King means to say, is, "That though he was not only *willing* to pray, but strongly *inclined* to it, yet his intention was defeated by his guilt.



My stronger guilt defeats my strong intent ;  
 And, like a man to double business bound,  
 I stand in pause where I shall first begin,  
 And both neglect. What if this cursed hand  
 Were thicker than itself with brother's blood ?  
 Is there not rain enough in the sweet heavens,  
 To wash it white as snow ? Whereto serves mercy,  
 But to confront the visage of offence ?  
 And what's in prayer, but this two-fold force,—  
 To be forestalled, ere we come to fall,  
 Or pardon'd, being down ? Then I'll look up ;  
 My fault is past. But, O, what form of prayer  
 Can serve my turn ? Forgive me my foul murder !—  
 That cannot be ; since I am still possess'd  
 Of those effects for which I did the murder,  
 My crown, mine own ambition, and my queen.  
 May one be pardon'd, and retain the offence ?<sup>9</sup>  
 In the corrupted currents of this world,  
 Offence's gilded hand may shove by justice ;  
 And oft 'tis seen, the wicked prize itself  
 Buys out the law : But 'tis not so above :  
 There is no shuffling, there the action lies  
 In his true nature ; and we ourselves compell'd,  
 Even to the teeth and forehead of our faults,  
 To give in evidence. What then ? what rests ?  
 Try what repentance can : What can it not ?  
 Yet what can it, when one can not repent ?<sup>1</sup>  
 O wretched state ! O bosom, black as death !  
 O limed soul ;<sup>2</sup> that struggling to be free,  
 Art more engag'd ! Help, angels, make assay !

<sup>9</sup> *May one be pardon'd, and retain the offence ?* He that does not amend what can be amended, retains his offence. The King kept the crown from the right heir. JOHNSON.

<sup>1</sup> *Yet what can it, when one can not repent ?* What can repentance do for a man that cannot be penitent, for a man who has only part of penitence, distress of conscience, without the other part, resolution of amendment ? JOHNSON.

<sup>2</sup> *O limed soul ;* This alludes to bird-lime.

Bow, stubborn knees! and, heart, with strings of  
steel,

Be soft as sinews of the new-born babe;

All may be well! [Retires, and kneels.

*Enter HAMLET.*

*Ham.* Now might I do it, pat, now he is praying;  
And now I'll do't;—and so he goes to heaven:  
And so am I reveng'd! That would be scann'd:<sup>3</sup>  
A villain kills my father; and, for that,  
I, his sole son, do this same villain send  
To heaven.

Why, this is hire and salary, not revenge.  
He took my father grossly, full of bread;  
With all his crimes broad blown, as flush as May;  
And, how his audit stands, who knows, save heaven?  
But, in our circumstance and course of thought,  
'Tis heavy with him: And am I then reveng'd,  
To take him in the purging of his soul,  
When he is fit and season'd for his passage?  
No.

Up, sword; and know thou a more horrid hent:<sup>4</sup>  
When he is drunk, asleep, or in his rage;  
Or in the incestuous pleasures of his bed;  
At gaming, swearing; or about some act  
That has no relish of salvation in't:  
Then trip him, that his heels may kick at heaven:  
And that his soul may be as damn'd, and black,  
As hell, whereto it goes.<sup>5</sup> My mother stays:  
This physick but prolongs thy sickly days. [Exit.

<sup>3</sup> — That would be scann'd:] i. e. that should be considered, estimated.

<sup>4</sup> Up, sword; and know thou a more horrid hent:] To hent is used by Shakspeare for to seize, to catch, to lay hold on. Hent is, therefore, hold, or seizure. Lay hold on him, sword, at a more horrid time.

<sup>5</sup> As hell, whereto it goes.] This speech, in which Hamlet, re-

*The King rises, and advances.*

*King.* My words fly up, my thoughts remain below:

Words, without thoughts, never to heaven go.  
[*Exit.*]

#### SCENE IV.

*Another Room in the same.*

*Enter Queen and POLONIUS.*

*Pol.* He will come straight. Look, you lay home to him :

Tell him, his pranks have been too broad to bear with;  
And that your grace hath screen'd and stood between  
Much heat and him. I'll silence me e'en here.<sup>6</sup>  
Pray you, be round with him.

*Queen.* I'll warrant you;  
Fear me not:—withdraw, I hear him coming.  
[*POLONIUS hides himself.*]

*Enter HAMLET.*

*Ham.* Now, mother ; what's the matter ?

*Queen.* Hamlet, thou hast thy father much offended.

*Ham.* Mother, you have my father much offended.

presented as a virtuous character, is not content with taking blood for blood, but contrives damnation for the man that he would punish, is too horrible to be read or to be uttered. JOHNSON.

This speech of Hamlet's, as Johnson observes, is horrible indeed ; yet some moral may be extracted from it, as all his subsequent calamities were owing to this savage refinement of revenge.

M. MASON,

<sup>6</sup> — I'll silence me e'en here.] i. e. I'll use no more words.

*Queen.* Come, come, you answer with an idle tongue.

*Ham.* Go, go, you question with a wicked tongue.

*Queen.* Why, how now, Hamlet?

*Ham.* What's the matter now?

*Queen.* Have you forgot me?

*Ham.* No, by the rood, not so :  
You are the queen, your husband's brother's wife ;  
And,—'would it were not so !—you are my mother.

*Queen.* Nay, then I'll set those to you that can speak.

*Ham.* Come, come, and sit you down ; you shall not budge ;

You go not, till I set you up a glass  
Where you may see the inmost part of you.

*Queen.* What wilt thou do? thou wilt not murder me?

Help, help, ho !

*Pol.* [*Behind.*] What, ho ! help !

*Ham.* How now ! a rat ?  
[*Draws.*]

Dead, for a ducat, dead.

[*HAMLET makes a pass through the Arras.*]

*Pol.* [*Behind.*] O, I am slain.

[*Falls, and dies.*]

*Queen.* O me, what hast thou done?

*Ham.* Nay, I know not :

Is it the king?

[*Lifts up the Arras, and draws forth POLONIUS.*]

*Queen.* O, what a rash and bloody deed is this !

*Ham.* A bloody deed ;—almost as bad, good mother,

As kill a king, and marry with his brother.

*Queen.* As kill a king !<sup>7</sup>

<sup>7</sup> *Queen.* *As kill a king !*] This exclamation may be considered as some hint that the Queen had no hand in the murder of Hamlet's father.

*Ham.* Ay, lady, 'twas my word.—  
Thou wretched, rash, intruding fool, farewell!

[*To POLONIUS.*

I took thee for thy better; take thy fortune:  
Thou find'st, to be too busy, is some danger.—  
Leave wringing of your hands: Peace; sit you down,  
And let me wring your heart: for so I shall,  
If it be made of penetrable stuff;  
If damned custom have not braz'd it so,  
That it be proof and bulwark against sense.

*Queen.* What have I done, that thou dar'st wag  
thy tongue  
In noise so rude against me?

*Ham.* Such an act,  
That blurs the grace and blush of modesty;  
Calls virtue, hypocrite; takes off the rose  
From the fair forehead of an innocent love,  
And sets a blister there; makes marriage vows  
As false as dicers' oaths: O, such a deed  
As from the body of contraction<sup>a</sup> plucks  
The very soul; and sweet religion makes  
A rhapsody of words: Heaven's face doth glow;  
Yea, this solidity and compound mass,  
With tristful visage, as against the doom,  
Is thought-sick at the act.

*Queen.* Ah me, what act,  
That roars so loud, and thunders in the index?<sup>b</sup>

*Ham.* Look here, upon this picture, and on this;

<sup>a</sup> ——— *from the body of contraction* —] *Contraction* for *marriage contract*.

<sup>b</sup> ——— *and thunders in the index?*] Bullokar in his *Expositor*, 8vo. 1616, defines an *Index* by "A table in a booke." The *table* was almost always *prefixed* to the books of our poet's age. Indexes, in the sense in which we now understand the word, were very uncommon.

<sup>c</sup> *Look here, upon this picture, and on this:*] It is evident from the following words,

"A station, like the herald Mercury," &c.

The counterfeit presentment of two brothers.  
 See, what a grace was seated on this brow :  
 Hyperion's curls ; the front of Jove himself ;  
 An eye like Mars, to threaten and command ;  
 A station like the herald Mercury,<sup>2</sup>  
 New-lighted on a heaven-kissing hill ;  
 A combination, and a form, indeed,  
 Where every god did seem to set his seal,  
 To give the world assurance of a man :  
 This was your husband.—Look you now, what follows :

Here is your husband ; like a mildew'd ear,  
 Blasting his wholesome brother. Have you eyes ?  
 Could you on this fair mountain leave to feed,  
 And batten<sup>3</sup> on this moor ? Ha ! have you eyes ?  
 You cannot call it, love : for, at your age,  
 The hey-day in the blood is tame, it's humble,  
 And waits upon the judgment ; And what judgment  
 Would step from this to this ? Sense, sure, you have,  
 Else, could you not have motion :<sup>4</sup> But, sure, that sense  
 Is apoplex'd : for madness would not err ;  
 Nor sense to ecstasy was ne'er so thrall'd,  
 But it reserv'd some quantity of choice,  
 To serve in such a difference. What devil was't,  
 That thus hath cozen'd you at hoodman-blind ?<sup>5</sup>

that these pictures which are introduced as miniatures on the stage, were meant for whole lengths, being part of the furniture of the Queen's closet.

<sup>2</sup> *A station like the herald Mercury, &c.] Station, in this instance, does not mean the spot where any one is placed, but the act of standing.*

<sup>3</sup> *—— batten——] i. e. to grow fat. Bat is an ancient word for increase.*

<sup>4</sup> *—— Sense, sure, you have,*

*Else could you not have motion :] Sense is sometimes used by Shakspeare for sensation or sensual appetite : as motion is the effect produced by the impulse of nature.*

<sup>5</sup> *—— at hoodman-blind ?] Probably the same as blindman's-buff.*

Eyes without feeling, feeling without sight,  
 Ears without hands or eyes, smelling sans all,  
 Or but a sickly part of one true sense  
 Could not so mope.<sup>6</sup>  
 O shame! where is thy blush? Rebellious hell,  
 If thou canst mutine in a matron's bones,<sup>7</sup>  
 To flaming youth let virtue be as wax,  
 And melt in her own fire: proclaim no shame,  
 When the compulsive ardour gives the charge;  
 Since frost itself as actively doth burn,  
 And reason panders will.

*Queen.* O Hamlet, speak no more:  
 Thou turn'st mine eyes into my very soul;  
 And there I see such black and grained<sup>8</sup> spots,  
 As will not leave their tinct.<sup>9</sup>

*Ham.* Nay, but to live  
 In the rank sweat of an enseamed bed;<sup>1</sup>  
 Stew'd in corruption; honeying, and making love  
 Over the nasty sty;—

*Queen.* O, speak to me no more;  
 These words, like daggers, enter in mine ears;  
 No more, sweet Hamlet.

*Ham.* A murderer, and a villain;  
 A slave, that is not twentieth part the tythe  
 Of your precedent lord:—a vice of kings;<sup>2</sup>  
 A cutpurse of the empire and the rule;  
 That from a shelf the precious diadem stole,  
 And put it in his pocket!

<sup>6</sup> *Could not so mope.*] i. e. could not exhibit such marks of stupidity.

<sup>7</sup> *If thou canst mutine, &c.*] To *mutine*, was the ancient term, signifying to rise in *mutiny*.

<sup>8</sup> — *grained*—] Died in grain, or perhaps, indented.

<sup>9</sup> *As will not leave their tinct.*] To *leave* is to part with, give up, resign.

<sup>1</sup> — *enseamed bed*;] i. e. *greasy* bed.

<sup>2</sup> — *vice of kings*:] A low mimick of kings. The *vice* is the fool of a farce; from whence the modern *punch* is descended.

Queen.

No more.

*Enter Ghost.*

*Ham.* A king  
Of shreds and patches :<sup>3</sup>—  
Save me, and hover o'er me with your wings,  
You heavenly guards !—What would your gracious  
figure ?

*Queen.* Alas, he's mad.

*Ham.* Do you not come your tardy son to chide,  
That, laps'd in time and passion,<sup>4</sup> lets go by  
The important acting of your dread command ?  
O, say !

*Ghost.* Do not forget : This visitation  
Is but to whet thy almost blunted purpose.  
But, look ! amazement on thy mother sits :  
O, step between her and her fighting soul ;  
Conceit in weakest bodies<sup>5</sup> strongest works :  
Speak to her, Hamlet.

*Ham.* How is it with you, lady ?

*Queen.* Alas, how is't with you ?  
That you do bend your eye on vacancy,  
And with the incorporal air do hold discourse ?  
Forth at your eyes your spirits wildly peep ;  
And as the sleeping soldiers in the alarm,  
Your bedded hair, like life in excrements,<sup>6</sup>  
Starts up, and stands on end. O gentle son,

<sup>3</sup> *A king*

*Of shreds and patches :*] This is said, pursuing the idea of the *vice of kings*. The *vice* was dressed as a fool, in a coat of party-coloured patches.

<sup>4</sup> — *laps'd in time and passion,*] That, having suffered *time* to slip, and *passion* to cool, *lets go*, &c.

<sup>5</sup> *Conceit in weakest bodies—*] *Conceit* for *imagination*.

<sup>6</sup> — *like life in excrements,*] Not only the hair of animals having neither life nor sensation was called an *excrement*, but the feathers of birds had the same appellation.



Upon the heat and flame of thy distemper  
Sprinkle cool patience. Whereon do you look?

*Ham.* On him! on him!—Look you, how pale  
he glares!

His form and cause conjoin'd, preaching to stones,  
Would make them capable.<sup>7</sup>—Do not look upon me,  
Lest, with this piteous action, you convert  
My stern effects:<sup>8</sup> then what I have to do  
Will want true colour; tears, perchance, for blood.

*Queen.* To whom do you speak this?

*Ham.* Do you see nothing there?

*Queen.* Nothing at all; yet all, that is, I see.

*Ham.* Nor did you nothing hear?

*Queen.* No, nothing, but ourselves.

*Ham.* Why, look you there! look, how it steals  
away!

My father, in his habit as he liv'd!

Look, where he goes, even now, out at the portal!  
[*Exit Ghost.*

*Queen.* This is the very coinage of your brain :  
This bodiless creation ecstasy  
Is very cunning in.

*Ham.* Ecstasy!

My pulse, as yours, doth temperately keep time,  
And makes as healthful musick : It is not madness,  
That I have utter'd : bring me to the test,  
And I the matter will re-word ; which madness  
Would gambol from. Mother, for love of grace,  
Lay not that flattering unction to your soul,  
That not your trespass, but my madness speaks :  
It will but skin and film the ulcerous place ;  
Whiles rank corruption, mining all within,  
Infects unseen. Confess yourself to heaven ;

<sup>7</sup> *Would make them capable.*] *Capable* here signifies *intelligent* ;  
endued with understanding.

<sup>8</sup> *My stern effects :*] *Effects* for actions ; deeds *effected*.

Repent what's past : avoid what is to come ;  
 And do not spread the compost<sup>9</sup> on the weeds,  
 To make them ranker. Forgive me this my virtue :  
 For in the fatness of these pury times,  
 Virtue itself of vice must pardon beg ;  
 Yea, curb<sup>1</sup> and woo, for leave to do him good.

*Queen.* O Hamlet ! thou hast cleft my heart in twain.

*Ham.* O throw away the worser part of it,  
 And live the purer with the other half.  
 Good night : but go not to my uncle's bed ;  
 Assume a virtue, if you have it not.  
 That monster, custom, who all sense doth eat  
 Of habit's devil, is angel yet in this ;  
 That to the use of actions fair and good  
 He likewise gives a frock, or livery,  
 That aptly is put on : Refrain to-night :  
 And that shall lend a kind of easiness  
 To the next abstinence : the next more easy :  
 For use almost can change the stamp of nature,  
 And either curb the devil, or throw him out  
 With wondrous potency. Once more, good night ;  
 And when you are desirous to be bless'd,  
 I'll blessing beg of you.—For this same lord,  
 [*Pointing to POLONIUS.*]

I do repent : But heaven hath pleas'd it so,—  
 To punish me with this, and this with me,<sup>2</sup>  
 That I must be their scourge and minister.  
 I will bestow him, and will answer well  
 The death I gave him. So, again, good night !

<sup>9</sup> — do not spread the compost, &c.] Do not, by any new indulgence, heighten your former offences.

<sup>1</sup> — curb—] That is, bend and truck. Fr. courber.

<sup>2</sup> To punish me with this, and this with me.] To punish me by making me the instrument of this man's death, and to punish this man by my hand.

I must be cruel, only to be kind :  
 Thus bad begins, and worse remains behind.—  
 But one word more, good lady.

*Queen.*

What shall I do ?

*Ham.* Not this, by no means, that I bid you do :  
 Let the bloat king<sup>3</sup> tempt you again to bed ;  
 Pinch wanton on your cheek ; call you, his mouse ;<sup>4</sup>  
 And let him for a pair of reechy kisses,<sup>5</sup>  
 Or padding in your neck with his damn'd fingers,  
 Make you to ravel all this matter out,  
 That I essentially am not in madness,  
 But mad in craft. 'Twere good, you let him know :  
 For who, that's but a queen, fair, sober, wise,  
 Would from a paddock, from a bat, a gib,<sup>6</sup>  
 Such dear concernings hide ? who would do so ?  
 No, in despite of sense, and secrecy,  
 Unpeg the basket on the house's top,  
 Let the birds fly ; and like the famous ape,  
 To try conclusions,<sup>7</sup> in the basket creep,  
 And break your own neck down.

*Queen.* Be thou assur'd, if words be made of  
 breath,  
 And breath of life, I have no life to breathe  
 What thou hast said to me.

*Ham.* I must to England ;<sup>8</sup> you know that ?

<sup>3</sup> *Let the bloat king—*] This again hints at his intemperance. He had already drank himself into a dropsy. BLACKSTONE.

<sup>4</sup> — *his mouse* ;] *Mouse* was once a term of endearment.

<sup>5</sup> — *reechy kisses*,] *Reechy* is smoky. The author meant to convey a coarse idea, and was not very scrupulous in his choice of an epithet.

<sup>6</sup> — *a gib*,] *Gib* was a common name for a cat.

<sup>7</sup> *To try conclusions*,] i. e. experiments.

<sup>8</sup> *I must to England* ;] Shakspeare does not inform us how Hamlet came to know that he was to be sent to England. Rosencrantz and Guildenstern were made acquainted with the King's intentions for the first time in the very last scene ; and they do not appear to have had any communication with the Prince since that time.

*Queen.*

Alack,

I had forgot ; 'tis so concluded on.

*Ham.* There's letters seal'd : and my two school-fellows,—

Whom I will trust, as I will adders fang'd,<sup>1</sup>—  
They bear the mandate ; they must sweep my way,  
And marshal me to knavery : Let it work ;  
For 'tis the sport, to have the engineer  
Hoist<sup>1</sup> with his own petar : and it shall go hard,  
But I will delve one yard below their mines,  
And blow them at the moon : O, 'tis most sweet,  
When in one line two crafts directly meet.<sup>2</sup>—  
This man shall set me packing.  
I'll lug the guts into the neighbour room :—  
Mother, good night.—Indeed, this counsellor  
Is now most still, most secret, and most grave,  
Who was in life a foolish prating knave.  
Come, sir, to draw toward an end with you :<sup>3</sup>  
Good night, mother.

[*Exeunt severally ; HAMLET dragging in POLONIUS.*

<sup>1</sup> — *adders fang'd,*] That is, adders with their fangs or poisonous teeth, undrawn.

<sup>2</sup> *Hoist, &c.*] *Hoist*, for *hoised* ; as *past*, for *passed*.

<sup>3</sup> *When in one line two crafts directly meet.*] Still alluding to a countermine.

<sup>3</sup> *Come, sir, to draw toward an end with you :*] Shakspeare has been unfortunate in his management of the story of this play, the most striking circumstances of which arise so early in its formation, as not to leave him room for a conclusion suitable to the importance of its beginning. After this last interview with the Ghost, the character of Hamlet has lost all its consequence.

## ACT IV.\*

SCENE I. *The same.*

*Enter King, Queen, ROSENCRANTZ, and GUILDENSTERN.*

*King.* There's matter in these sighs ; these profound heaves ;  
You must translate : 'tis fit we understand them :  
Where is your son ?

*Queen.* Bestow this place on us a little while.—  
[*To ROSENCRANTZ and GUILDENSTERN, who go out.*]

Ah, my good lord, what have I seen to-night !

*King.* What, Gertrude ? How does Hamlet ?

*Queen.* Mad as the sea, and wind, when both contend

Which is the mightier : In his lawless fit,  
Behind the arras hearing something stir,  
Whips out his rapier, cries, *A rat ! a rat !*  
And, in this brainish apprehension, kills  
The unseen good old man.

*King.* O heavy deed !  
It had been so with us, had we been there :  
His liberty is full of threats to all ;  
To you yourself, to us, to every one.  
Alas ! how shall this bloody deed be answer'd ?  
It will be laid to us, whose providence

\* *Act IV.*] This play is printed in the old editions without any separation of the Acts. The division is modern and arbitrary ; and is here not very happy, for the pause is made at a time when there is more continuity of action than in almost any other of the scenes. JOHNSON.

Should have kept short, restrain'd, and out of haunt,<sup>5</sup>  
 This mad young man : but, so much was our love,  
 We would not understand what was most fit ;  
 But, like the owner of a foul disease,  
 To keep it from divulging, let it feed  
 Even on the pith of life. Where is he gone ?

*Queen.* To draw apart the body he hath kill'd :  
 O'er whom his very madness, like some ore,  
 Among a mineral<sup>6</sup> of metals base,  
 Shows itself pure ; he weeps for what is done.

*King.* O, Gertrude, come away !  
 The sun no sooner shall the mountains touch,  
 But we will ship him hence : and this vile deed  
 We must, with all our majesty and skill,  
 Both countenance and excuse.—Ho ! Guildenstern !

*Enter ROSENCRANTZ and GUILDENSTERN.*

Friends both, go join you with some further aid :  
 Hamlet in madness hath Polonius slain,  
 And from his mother's closet hath he dragg'd him :  
 Go, seek him out ; speak fair, and bring the body  
 Into the chapel. I pray you, haste in this.

[*Exeunt ROS. and GUIL.*

Come, Gertrude, we'll call up our wisest friends ;  
 And let them know, both what we mean to do,  
 And what's untimely done : so, haply, slander,—  
 Whose whisper o'er the world's diameter,  
 As level as the cannon to his blank,<sup>7</sup>  
 Transports his poison'd shot,—may miss our name,  
 And hit the woundless air.—O come away !  
 My soul is full of discord, and dismay. [*Exeunt.*

<sup>5</sup> — out of haunt,] i. e. out of company.

<sup>6</sup> Among a mineral—] Minerals are mines.

<sup>7</sup> — cannon to his blank,] The blank was the white mark at which shot or arrows were directed.

## SCENE II.

*Another Room in the same.*

*Enter HAMLET.*

*Ham.* — Safely stowed,—[*Ros. &c. within.*  
*Hamlet! lord Hamlet!*] But soft,—what noise?  
who calls on Hamlet? O, here they come.

*Enter ROSENCRANTZ and GUILDENSTERN.*

*Ros.* What have you done, my lord, with the  
dead body?

*Ham.* Compounded it with dust, whereto 'tis kin.

*Ros.* Tell us where 'tis; that we may take it  
thence,

And bear it to the chapel.

*Ham.* Do not believe it.

*Ros.* Believe what?

*Ham.* That I can keep your counsel, and not  
mine own. Besides, to be demanded of a sponge!  
—what replication should be made by the son of a  
king?

*Ros.* Take you me for a sponge, my lord?

*Ham.* Ay, sir; that soaks up the king's counte-  
nance, his rewards, his authorities. But such offi-  
cers do the king best service in the end: He keeps  
them, like an ape,<sup>s</sup> in the corner of his jaw; first  
mouthed, to be last swallowed: When he needs what  
you have gleaned, it is but squeezing you, and,  
sponge, you shall be dry again.

*Ros.* I understand you not, my lord.

*Ham.* I am glad of it: A knavish speech sleeps  
in a foolish ear.

<sup>s</sup> — *like an ape,*] i. e. as an ape does an apple.

*Ros.* My lord, you must tell us where the body is, and go with us to the king.

*Ham.* The body is with the king, but the king is not with the body. The king is a thing——

*Guil.* A thing, my lord?

*Ham.* Of nothing: bring me to him. Hide fox, and all after.<sup>9</sup> [Exeunt

## SCENE III.

*Another Room in the same.*

*Enter King, attended.*

*King.* I have sent to seek him, and to find the body.

How dangerous is it, that this man goes loose?  
Yet must not we put the strong law on him:  
He's lov'd of the distracted multitude,  
Who like not in their judgment, but their eyes;  
And, where 'tis so, the offender's scourge is weigh'd,  
But never the offence. To bear all smooth and even,  
This sudden sending him away must seem  
Deliberate pause: Diseases, desperate grown,  
By desperate appliance are reliev'd,

*Enter ROSENCRANTZ.*

Or not at all.—How now? what hath befallen?

*Ros.* Where the dead body is bestow'd, my lord,  
We cannot get from him.

*King.* But where is he?

*Ros.* Without, my lord; guarded, to know your pleasure.

<sup>9</sup> — *Hide fox, &c.]* There is a play among children called, *Hide fox, and all after.*



*King.* Bring him before us.

*Ros.* Ho, Guildenstern! bring in my lord.

*Enter HAMLET and GUILDENSTERN.*

*King.* Now, Hamlet, where's Polonius?

*Ham.* At supper.

*King.* At supper? Where?

*Ham.* Not where he eats, but where he is eaten: a certain convocation of politick worms are e'en at him. Your worm is your only emperor for diet: we fat all creatures else, to fat us; and we fat ourselves for maggots: Your fat king, and your lean beggar, is but variable service; two dishes, but to one table; that's the end.

*King.* Alas, alas!

*Ham.* A man may fish with the worm that hath eat of a king; and eat of the fish that hath fed of that worm.

*King.* What dost thou mean by this?

*Ham.* Nothing, but to show you how a king may go a progress<sup>\*</sup> through the guts of a beggar.

*King.* Where is Polonius?

*Ham.* In heaven; send thither to see: if your messenger find him not there, seek him i'the other place yourself. But, indeed, if you find him not within this month, you shall nose him as you go up the stairs into the lobby.

*King.* Go seek him there. [*To some Attendants.*]

*Ham.* He will stay till you come.

[*Exeunt Attendants.*]

*King.* Hamlet, this deed, for thine especial safety,—

\* — go a progress —] Alluding to the royal journeys of state, always styled *progresses*; a familiar idea to those who, like our author, lived during the reigns of Queen Elizabeth and King James I.

Which we do tender, as we dearly grieve  
For that which thou hast done,—must send thee  
hence

With fiery quickness: Therefore, prepare thyself;  
The bark is ready, and the wind at help,<sup>2</sup>  
The associates tend, and every thing is bent  
For England.

*Ham.* For England?

*King.* Ay, Hamlet.

*Ham.* Good.

*King.* So is it, if thou knew'st our purposes.

*Ham.* I see a cherub, that sees them.—But, come;  
for England!—Farewell, dear mother.

*King.* Thy loving father, Hamlet.

*Ham.* My mother: Father and mother is man  
and wife; man and wife is one flesh; and so, my  
mother. Come, for England. [*Exit.*

*King.* Follow him at foot; tempt him with speed  
aboard;

Delay it not, I'll have him hence to-night:

Away; for every thing is seal'd and done

That else leans on the affair: Pray you, make haste.

[*Exeunt Ros. and GUIL.*

And, England, if my love thou hold'st at aught,  
(As my great power thereof may give thee sense;  
Since yet thy cicatrice looks raw and red

After the Danish sword, and thy free awe

Pays homage to us,) thou may'st not coldly set<sup>3</sup>

Our sovereign process; which imports at full,

By letters conjuring to that effect,

The present death of Hamlet. Do it, England;

For like the hectick in my blood he rages,

And thou must cure me: Till I know 'tis done,

Howe'er my haps,<sup>4</sup> my joys will ne'er begin. [*Exit.*

<sup>2</sup> — the wind at help,] i. e. at hand, ready.

<sup>3</sup> — thou may'st not coldly set] i. e. set at nought.

<sup>4</sup> Howe'er my haps,] i. e. whatever befall me.

## SCENE IV.

*A Plain in Denmark.*

*Enter FORTINBRAS, and Forces, marching.*

*For.* Go, captain, from me greet the Danish king;  
Tell him, that, by his licence, Fortinbras  
Craves the conveyance of a promis'd march  
Over his kingdom. You know the rendezvous.  
If that his majesty would aught with us,  
We shall express our duty in his eye,<sup>5</sup>  
And let him know so.

*Cap.* I will do't, my lord.

*For.* Go softly on.

*[Exeunt FORTINBRAS and Forces.]*

*Enter HAMLET, ROSENCRANTZ, GUILDENSTERN, &c.*

*Ham.* Good sir, whose powers are these?

*Cap.* They are of Norway, sir.

*Ham.* How purpos'd, sir,  
I pray you?

*Cap.* Against some part of Poland.

*Ham.* Who  
Commands them, sir?

*Cap.* The nephew to old Norway, Fortinbras.

*Ham.* Goes it against the main of Poland, sir,  
Or for some frontier?

*Cap.* Truly to speak, sir, and with no addition,  
We go to gain a little patch of ground,  
That hath in it no profit but the name.  
To pay five ducats, five, I would not farm it;  
Nor will it yield to Norway, or the Pole,

<sup>5</sup> — in his eye,] i. e. in his presence. The phrase appears to have been formularly.

A ranker rate, should it be sold in fee.

*Ham.* Why, then the Polack never will defend it.

*Cap.* Yes, 'tis already garrison'd.

*Ham.* Two thousand souls, and twenty thousand ducats,

Will not debate the question of this straw :

This is the imposthume of much wealth and peace;

That inward breaks, and shows no cause without

Why the man dies.—I humbly thank you, sir.

*Cap.* God be wi'you, sir. [*Exit Captain.*]

*Ros.* Will't please you go, my lord?

*Ham.* I will be with you straight. Go a little before. [*Exeunt Ros. and GUIL.*]

How all occasions do inform against me,

And spur my dull revenge! What is a man,

If his chief good, and market of his time,<sup>6</sup>

Be but to sleep and feed? a beast, no more.

Sure, he, that made us with such large discourse,<sup>7</sup>

Looking before, and after, gave us not

That capability and godlike reason

To fust in us unus'd. Now, whether it be

Bestial oblivion, or some craven scruple<sup>8</sup>

Of thinking too precisely on the event,—

A thought, which, quarter'd, hath but one part wisdom,

And, ever, three parts coward,—I do not know

Why yet I live to say, *This thing's to do*;

Sith I have cause, and will, and strength, and means,

To do't. Examples, gross as earth, exhort me:

Witness, this army of such mass, and charge,

Led by a delicate and tender prince;

Whose spirit, with divine ambition puff'd,

<sup>6</sup> — chief good, and market of his time, &c.] If his highest good, and that for which he sells his time, be to sleep and feed.

<sup>7</sup> — large discourse,] Such latitude of comprehension, such power of reviewing the past, and anticipating the future.

<sup>8</sup> — some craven scruple—] Some cowardly scruple.

Makes mouths at the invisible event;  
 Exposing what is mortal, and unsure,  
 To all that fortune, death, and danger, dare,  
 Even for an egg-shell. Rightly to be great,  
 Is, not to stir without great argument;<sup>9</sup>  
 But greatly to find quarrel in a straw,  
 When honour's at the stake. How stand I then,  
 That have a father kill'd, a mother stain'd,  
 Excitements of my reason, and my blood,  
 And let all sleep? while, to my shame, I see  
 The imminent death of twenty thousand men,  
 That, for a fantasy, and trick of fame,  
 Go to their graves like beds; fight for a plot<sup>1</sup>  
 Whereon the numbers cannot try the cause,  
 Which is not tomb enough, and continent,<sup>2</sup>  
 To hide the slain?—O, from this time forth,  
 My thoughts be bloody, or be nothing worth!

[*Exit.*]

## SCENE V.

Elsinore. *A Room in the Castle.*

*Enter Queen and HORATIO.*

*Queen.* —I will not speak with her.

*Hor.* She is importunate; indeed, distract;  
 Her mood will needs be pitied.

*Queen.* What would she have?

*Hor.* She speaks much of her father; says, she  
 hears,

<sup>9</sup> — *Rightly to be great,  
 Is, not to stir without, &c.] But then, honour is an argument,  
 or subject of debate, sufficiently great, and when honour is at stake,  
 we must find cause of quarrel in a straw.*

<sup>1</sup> — *a plot]* A piece, or portion.

<sup>2</sup> — *continent,]* Continent, in our author, means that which  
 comprehends or encloses.

There's tricks i'the world ; and hems, and beats her  
heart ;

Spurns enviously at straws ;<sup>3</sup> speaks things in doubt,  
That carry but half sense : her speech is nothing,  
Yet the unshaped use of it doth move

The hearers to collection ;<sup>4</sup> they aim at it,<sup>5</sup>

And botch the words up fit to their own thoughts ;  
Which, as her winks, and nods, and gestures yield  
them,

Indeed would make one think, there might be  
thought,

Though nothing sure, yet much unhappily.<sup>6</sup>

*Queen.* 'Twere good, she were spoken with ; for  
she may strew

Dangerous conjectures in ill-breeding minds :

Let her come in.

[*Exit* HORATIO.]

To my sick soul, as sin's true nature is,

Each toy seems prologue to some great amiss :<sup>7</sup>

So full of artless jealousy is guilt,

It spills itself in fearing to be spilt.

*Re-enter* HORATIO, with OPHELIA.

*Oph.* Where is the beauteous majesty of Denmark ?

*Queen.* How now, Ophelia ?

<sup>3</sup> *Spurns enviously at straws ;*] *Envy* is much oftener put by our poet (and those of his time) for direct aversion, than for malignity conceived at the sight of another's excellence or happiness.

<sup>4</sup> ——— *to collection ;*] i. e. to deduce consequences from such premises ; or, as Mr. M. Mason observes, "endeavour to collect some meaning from them."

<sup>5</sup> ——— *they aim at it,*] *To aim* is to guess.

<sup>6</sup> *Though nothing sure, yet much unhappily.*] i. e. though her meaning cannot be certainly collected, yet there is enough to put a mischievous interpretation to it.

<sup>7</sup> ——— *to some great amiss ;*] Shakspeare is not singular in his use of this word as a substantive. Each *toy* is, each trifle.

Oph. *How should I your true love know<sup>8</sup>  
 From another one?  
 By his cockle hat and staff,  
 And his sandal shoon.<sup>9</sup>* [Singing.

Queen. Alas, sweet lady, what imports this song?

Oph. Say you? nay, pray you, mark.

*He is dead and gone, lady,* [Sings.  
*He is dead and gone;*  
*At his head a grass-green turf,*  
*At his heels a stone.*

O, ho!

Queen. Nay, but Ophelia,——

Oph. *White his shroud as the mountain snow,*  
 Pray you, mark. [Sings.

*Enter King.*

Queen. Alas, look here, my lord.

Oph. *Larded<sup>1</sup> all with sweet flowers;  
 Which bewept to the grave did go,  
 With true-love showers.*

<sup>8</sup> *How should I your true love, &c.*] There is no part of this play in its representation on the stage, more pathetick than this scene; which, I suppose, proceeds from the utter insensibility Ophelia has to her own misfortunes.

A great sensibility, or none at all, seems to produce the same effect. In the latter the audience supply what she wants, and with the former they sympathize. SIR J. REYNOLDS.

<sup>9</sup> *By his cockle hat and staff,  
 And his sandal shoon.*] This is the description of a pilgrim. While this kind of devotion was in favour, love-intrigues were carried on under that mask. Hence the old ballads and novels made pilgrimages the subjects of their plots. The cockle-shell hat was one of the essential badges of this vocation: for the chief places of devotion being beyond sea, or on the coasts, the pilgrims were accustomed to put cockle-shells upon their hats, to denote the intention or performance of their devotion.

*King.* How do you, pretty lady?

*Oph.* Well, God'ield you!<sup>1</sup> They say, the owl was a baker's daughter.<sup>2</sup> Lord, we know what we are, but know not what we may be. God be at your table!

*King.* Conceit upon her father.

*Oph.* Pray, let us have no words of this; but when they ask you what it means, say you this:

*Good morrow, 'tis Saint Valentine's day,  
All in the morning betime,  
And I a maid at your window,  
To be your Valentine:*

*Then up he rose, and don'd his clothes,<sup>4</sup>  
And dupp'd the chamber door;<sup>5</sup>  
Let in the maid, that out a maid  
Never departed more.*

*King.* Pretty Ophelia!

*Oph.* Indeed, without an oath, I'll make an end on't:

*By Gis,<sup>6</sup> and by Saint Charity,<sup>7</sup>  
Alack, and fye for shame!  
Young men will do't, if they come to't;  
By cock,<sup>8</sup> they are to blame.*

<sup>1</sup> Larded——;] The expression is taken from cookery.

<sup>2</sup> Well, God'ield you!] i. e. Heaven reward you!

<sup>3</sup> —— the owl was a baker's daughter.] This was a legendary story.—Our Saviour being refused bread by the daughter of a baker, is described as punishing her by turning her into an owl.

<sup>4</sup> —— don'd his clothes,] To don is to do on, to put on, as doff is to do off, put off.

<sup>5</sup> And dupp'd the chamber door;] To dup, is to do up; to lift the latch.

<sup>6</sup> By Gis,] Probably the contraction of some Saint's name.

<sup>7</sup> —— by Saint Charity,] Saint Charity is a saint among the Roman Catholicks.

<sup>8</sup> By cock,] This is a corruption of the sacred name.



*Quoth she, before you tumbled me,  
You promis'd me to wed:*

[He answers.]

*So would I ha' done, by yonder sun,  
An thou hadst not come to my bed.*

*King.* How long hath she been thus?

*Oph.* I hope, all will be well. We must be patient: but I cannot choose but weep, to think, they should lay him i'the cold ground: My brother shall know of it, and so I thank you for your good counsel. Come, my coach! Good night, ladies; good night, sweet ladies; good night, good night.

[*Exit.*

*King.* Follow her close; give her good watch, I pray you.

[*Exit* HORATIO.]

O! this is the poison of deep grief; it springs  
All from her father's death: And now behold,  
O Gertrude, Gertrude,  
When sorrows come, they come not single spies,  
But in battalions! First, her father slain,  
Next, your son gone; and he most violent author  
Of his own just remove: The people muddied,  
Thick and unwholesome in their thoughts and  
whispers,  
For good Polonius' death; and we have done but  
greenly,<sup>9</sup>

In hugger-mugger to inter him: ' Poor Ophelia

<sup>9</sup> — *but greenly,*] But *unskilfully*; with *greenness*; that is, without *maturity* of judgment.

<sup>1</sup> *In hugger-mugger to inter him:*] All the modern editions that I have consulted, give it:

*In private to inter him;*—

That the words now replaced are better, I do not undertake to prove; it is sufficient that they are Shakspeare's: if phraseology is to be changed as words grow uncouth by disuse, or gas by vul-

Divided from herself, and her fair judgment;  
 Without the which we are pictures, or mere beasts.  
 Last, and as much containing as all these,  
 Her brother is in secret come from France:  
 Feeds on his wonder, keeps himself in clouds,  
 And wants not buzzers to infect his ear  
 With pestilent speeches of his father's death;  
 Wherein necessity, of matter beggar'd,  
 Will nothing stick our person to arraign  
 In ear and ear. O my dear Gertrude, this,  
 Like to a murdering piece,<sup>2</sup> in many places  
 Gives me superfluous death. [*A Noise within.*  
*Queen.* Alack! what noise is this?

*Enter a Gentleman.*

*King.* Attend

Where are my Switzers?<sup>3</sup> Let them guard the door:  
 What is the matter?

*Gent.* Save yourself, my lord;  
 The ocean, overpeering of his list,<sup>4</sup>  
 Eats not the flats with more impetuous haste,  
 Than young Laertes, in a riotous head,  
 O'erbears your officers! The rabble call him, lord?

garity, the history of every language will be lost; we shall no longer have the words of any author; and, as these alterations will be often unskillfully made, we shall in time have very little of his meaning. JOHNSON.

<sup>2</sup> *Like to a murdering piece,*] The small cannon, which are, or were used in the forecastle, half-deck, or steerage of a ship-of-war, were within this century called *murdering-pieces*.

<sup>3</sup> — *my Switzers?*] In many of our old plays, the guards attendant on Kings are called *Switzers*, and that without any regard to the country where the scene lies, because the Swiss in the time of our poet, as at present, were hired to fight the battles of other nations.

<sup>4</sup> *The ocean, overpeering of his list,*] The lists are the barriers which the spectators of a tournament must not pass. In this place, it signifies *boundary*, i. e. the shore.

And, as the world were now but to begin,  
 Antiquity forgot, custom not known,  
 The ratifiers and props of every word,  
 They cry, *Choose we ; Laertes shall be king !*  
 Caps, hands, and tongues, applaud it to the clouds,  
*Laertes shall be king, Laertes king !*

*Queen.* How cheerfully on the false trail they  
 cry !

O, this is counter,<sup>5</sup> you false Danish dogs.

*King.* The doors are broke. [*Noise within.*]

*Enter LAERTES, armed ; Danes following.*

*Laer.* Where is this king?—Sirs, stand you all  
 without.

*Dan.* No, let's come in.

*Laer.* I pray you, give me leave.

*Dan.* We will, we will.

[*They retire without the Door.*]

*Laer.* I thank you:—keep the door.—O thou  
 vile king,

Give me my father.

*Queen.* Calmly, good Laertes.

*Laer.* That drop of blood, that's calm, pro-  
 claims me bastard ;

Cries, cuckold, to my father ; brands the harlot  
 Even here, between the chaste unsmirched brow<sup>6</sup>  
 Of my true mother.

*King.* What is the cause, Laertes,  
 That thy rebellion looks so giant-like?—  
 Let him go, Gertrude ; do not fear our person ;  
 There's such divinity doth hedge a king,  
 That treason can but peep to what it would,  
 Acts little of his will.—Tell me, Laertes,

<sup>5</sup> O, this is counter,—] Hounds run counter when they trace  
 the trail backwards.

<sup>6</sup> —, unsmirched brow,] i. e. clean, not defiled.

Why thou art thus incens'd;—Let him go, Gertrude;—

Speak, man.

*Laer.* Where is my father?

*King.* Dead.

*Queen.* But not by him.

*King.* Let him demand his fill.

*Laer.* How came he dead? I'll not be juggled with:

To hell, allegiance! vows, to the blackest devil!  
Conscience, and grace, to the profoundest pit!  
I dare damnation: To this point I stand,—  
That both the worlds I give to negligence,  
Let come what comes; only I'll be reveng'd  
Most thoroughly for my father.

*King.* Who shall stay you?

*Laer.* My will, not all the world's:  
And, for my means, I'll husband them so well,  
They shall go far with little.

*King.* Good Laertes,  
If you desire to know the certainty  
Of your dear father's death, is't writ in your revenge,  
That, sweepstake, you will draw both friend and foe,  
Winner and loser?

*Laer.* None but his enemies.

*King.* Will you know them then?

*Laer.* To his good friends thus wide I'll ope my  
arms;  
And, like the kind life-rend'ring pelican,  
Repast them with my blood.

*King.* Why, now you speak  
Like a good child, and a true gentleman.  
That I am guiltless of your father's death,  
And am most sensibly in grief for it,  
It shall as level to your judgment 'pear,

7 ——— to your judgment 'pear,] For appear

As day does to your eye.

Danes. [*Within.*] Let her come in.

Laer. How now! what noise is that?

*Enter OPHELIA, fantastically dressed with Straws and Flowers.*

O heat, dry up my brains! tears seven times salt,  
Burn out the sense and virtue of mine eye!—  
By heaven, thy madness shall be paid with weight,  
Till our scale turn the beam. O rose of May!  
Dear maid, kind sister, sweet Ophelia!—  
O heavens! is't possible, a young maid's wits  
Should be as mortal as an old man's life?  
Nature is fine in love: and, where 'tis fine,  
It sends some precious instance of itself  
After the thing it loves.<sup>8</sup>

Oph. *They bore him barefac'd on the bier;  
Hey no nonny, nonny hey nonny:  
And in his grave rain'd many a tear;—*

Fare you well, my dove!

Laer. Hadst thou thy wits, and didst persuade  
revenge,

It could not move thus.

Oph. You must sing, *Down a-down, an you call  
him a-down-a.* O, how the wheel becomes it!<sup>9</sup> It  
is the false steward, that stole his master's daughter.

<sup>8</sup> *Nature is fine in love: and, where 'tis fine,  
It send some precious instance of itself*

*After the thing it loves.] Love (says Laertes) is the passion by which nature is most exalted and refined; and as substances, refined and subtilised, easily obey any impulse, or follow any attraction, some part of nature, so purified and refined, flies off after the attracting object, after the thing it loves.*

<sup>9</sup> *O, how the wheel becomes it! &c.] The wheel means the burden of the song, which she had just repeated, and as such was formerly used. But Mr. Malone thinks that wheel is here used in its ordinary sense, and that these words allude to the occupation of the girl who is supposed to sing the song alluded to by Ophelia.*

*Laer.* This nothing's more than matter.

*Oph.* There's rosemary, that's for remembrance;<sup>1</sup> pray you, love, remember: and there is pansies, that's for thoughts.

*Laer.* A document in madness; thoughts and remembrance fitted.

*Oph.* There's fennel for you, and columbines:—there's rue for you; and here's some for me:—we may call it, herb of grace o'Sundays:—you may wear your rue with a difference.<sup>2</sup>—There's a daisy:—I would give you some violets; but they withered all, when my father died:—They say, he made a good end,——

*For bonny sweet Robin is all my joy,—*

[Sings.

*Laer.* Thought and affliction,<sup>3</sup> passion, hell itself, She turns to favour, and to prettiness.

*Oph.* *And will he not come again?*

[Sings.

*And will he not come again?*

*No, no, he is dead,*

*Go to thy death-bed,*

*He never will come again.*

<sup>1</sup> *There's rosemary, that's for remembrance;*] Rosemary was anciently supposed to strengthen the memory, and was not only carried at funerals, but worn at weddings.

<sup>2</sup> —— *you may wear your rue with a difference.*] This seems to refer to the rules of heraldry, where the younger brothers of a family bear the same arms *with a difference*, or mark of distinction. There may, however, be somewhat more implied here than is expressed. *You, madam,* (says Ophelia to the Queen,) *may call your RUE by its Sunday name, HERB OF GRACE, and so wear it with a difference to distinguish it from mine, which can never be any thing but merely RUE, i. e. sorrow.* STEEVENS.

<sup>3</sup> *Thought and affliction,*] *Thought* here, as in many other places, signifies melancholy.

*His beard was as white as snow,  
 All flaxen was his poll:  
 He is gone, he is gone,  
 And we cast away moan;  
 God'a mercy on his soul!*

And of all christian souls!<sup>4</sup> I pray God. God be wi' you! [Exit OPHELIA.]

*Laer.* Do you see this, O God?

*King.* Laertes, I must commune with your grief,  
 Or you deny me right. Go but apart,  
 Make choice of whom your wisest friends you will,  
 And they shall hear and judge 'twixt you and me:  
 If by direct or by collateral hand  
 They find us touch'd, we will our kingdom give,  
 Our crown, our life, and all that we call ours,  
 To you in satisfaction; but, if not,  
 Be you content to lend your patience to us,  
 And we shall jointly labour with your soul  
 To give it due content.

*Laer.* Let this be so;  
 His means of death, his obscure funeral,—  
 No trophy, sword, nor hatchment, o'er his bones,<sup>5</sup>  
 No noble rite, nor formal ostentation,—  
 Cry to be heard, as 'twere from heaven to earth,  
 That I must call't in question.

*King.* So you shall;  
 And, where the offence is, let the great axe fall.  
 I pray you, go with me. [Exeunt.]

<sup>4</sup> *God'a mercy on his soul!*

*And of all christian souls!]* This is the common conclusion to many of the ancient monumental inscriptions.

<sup>5</sup> *No trophy, sword, nor hatchment, o'er his bones,]* It was the custom, in the times of our author, to hang a sword over the grave of a knight, and it is uniformly kept up to this day. Not only the sword, but the helmet, gauntlet, spurs, and tabard (i. e. a coat whereon the armorial ensigns were anciently depicted, from whence the term *coat of armour*,) are hung over the grave of every knight.

## SCENE VI.

*Another Room in the same.*

*Enter HORATIO, and a Servant.*

*Hor.* What are they, that would speak with me ?

*Serv.*

Sailors, sir ;

They say, they have letters for you.

*Hor.*

Let them come in.—

[*Exit Servant.*]

I do not know from what part of the world  
I should be greeted, if not from lord Hamlet.

*Enter Sailors.*

1 *Sail.* God bless you, sir.

*Hor.* Let him bless thee too.

1 *Sail.* He shall, sir, an't please him. There's a letter for you, sir ; it comes from the ambassador that was bound for England ; if your name be Horatio, as I am let to know it is.

*Hor.* [*Reads.*] Horatio, *when thou shalt have overlooked this, give these fellows some means to the king ; they have letters for him. Ere we were two days old at sea, a pirate of very warlike appointment gave us chase: Finding ourselves too slow of sail, we put on a compelled valour ; and in the grapple I boarded them : on the instant, they got clear of our ship ; so I alone became their prisoner. They have dealt with me, like thieves of mercy ; but they knew what they did ; I am to do a good turn for them. Let the king have the letters I have sent ; and repair thou to me with as much haste as thou would'st fly death. I have words to speak in thine ear, will make*



*thee dumb; yet are they much too light for the bore of the matter.*<sup>6</sup> *These good fellows will bring thee where I am. Rosencrantz and Guildenstern hold their course for England; of them I have much to tell thee. Farewell.*

*He that thou knowest thine, Hamlet.*

Come, I will give you way for these your letters ;  
And do't the speedier, that you may direct me  
To him from whom you brought them. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE VII.

*Another Room in the same.*

*Enter King and LAERTES.*

*King.* Now must your conscience my acquittance  
seal,

And you must put me in your heart for friend ;  
Sith you have heard, and with a knowing ear,  
That he, which hath your noble father slain,  
Pursu'd my life.

*Laer.* It well appears:—But tell me,  
Why you proceeded not against these feats,  
So crimeful and so capital in nature,  
As by your safety, greatness, wisdom, all things else,  
You mainly were stirr'd up.

*King.* O, for two special reasons ;  
Which may to you, perhaps, seem much unsinew'd,  
But yet to me they are strong. The queen his mother,  
Lives almost by his looks ; and for myself,

<sup>6</sup> — *for the bore of the matter.*] The bore is the caliber of a gun, or the capacity of the barrel. The matter (says Hamlet) would carry heavier words.

(My virtue, or my plague, be it either which,) She is so conjunctive to my life and soul, That, as the star moves not but in his sphere, I could not but by her. The other motive, Why to a publick count I might not go, Is, the great love the general gender<sup>7</sup> bear him : Who, dipping all his faults in their affection, Work like the spring<sup>8</sup> that turneth wood to stone, Convert his gyves to graces ; so that my arrows, Too slightly timber'd for so loud a wind, Would have reverted to my bow again, And not where I had aim'd them.

*Laer.* And so have I a noble father lost ; A sister driven into desperate terms ; Whose worth, if praises may go back again,<sup>9</sup> Stood challenger on mount of all the age For her perfections :—But my revenge will come.

*King.* Break not your sleeps for that : you must not think, That we are made of stuff so flat and dull, That we can let our beard be shook with danger, And think it pastime. You shortly shall hear more ; I loved your father, and we love ourself ; And that, I hope, will teach you to imagine,— How now ? what news ?

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* Letters, my lord, from Hamlet : This to your majesty ; this to the queen.

*King.* From Hamlet ! Who brought them ?

*Mess.* Sailors, my lord, they say : I saw them not ; They were given me by Claudio, he receiv'd them

<sup>7</sup> — the general gender —] The common race of the people.

<sup>8</sup> Work like the spring, &c.] The allusion here is to the quality still ascribed to the dropping well at Knaresborough in Yorkshire.

<sup>9</sup> — if praises may go back again,] If I may praise what has been, but is now to be found no more.

Of him that brought them.

*King.* Laertes, you shall hear them :—  
Leave us. [Exit Messenger.]

[Reads.] *High and mighty, you shall know, I am set naked on your kingdom. To-morrow shall I beg leave to see your kingly eyes: when I shall, first asking your pardon thereunto, recount the occasion of my sudden and more strange return.* Hamlet.  
What should this mean! Are all the rest come back? Or is it some abuse, and no such thing?

*Laer.* Know you the hand?

*King.* 'Tis Hamlet's character. *Naked,—*  
And, in a postscript here, he says, *alone*:  
Can you advise me?

*Laer.* I am lost in it, my lord. But let him come;  
It warms the very sickness in my heart,  
That I shall live and tell him to his teeth,  
*Thus diddest thou.*

*King.* If it be so, Laertes,  
As how should it be so? how otherwise?—  
Will you be rul'd by me?

*Laer.* Ay, my lord;  
So you will not o'er-rule me to a peace.

*King.* To thine own peace. If he be now re-  
turn'd,—

As checking at his voyage,<sup>1</sup> and that he means  
No more to undertake it,—I will work him  
To an exploit, now ripe in my device,  
Under the which he shall not choose but fall;  
And for his death no wind of blame shall breathe;  
But even his mother shall uncharge the practice,  
And call it, accident.

*Laer.* My lord, I will be rul'd;  
The rather, if you could devise it so,  
That I might be the organ.

<sup>1</sup> *As checking at his voyage,]* The phrase is from falconry.

*King.* It falls right.  
 You have been talk'd of since your travel much,  
 And that in Hamlet's hearing, for a quality  
 Wherein, they say, you shine: your sum of parts  
 Did not together pluck such envy from him,  
 As did that one; and that, in my regard,  
 Of the unworthiest siege.<sup>2</sup>

*Laer.* What part is that, my lord?

*King.* A very ribband in the cap of youth,  
 Yet needful too; for youth no less becomes  
 The light and careless livery that it wears,  
 Than settled age his sables, and his weeds,  
 Importing health and graveness.<sup>3</sup>—Two months  
 since,

Here was a gentleman of Normandy,—  
 I have seen myself, and serv'd against, the French,  
 And they can well on horseback: but this gallant  
 Had witchcraft in't; he grew unto his seat;  
 And to such wond'rous doing brought his horse,  
 As he had been incorp'd and demi-natur'd  
 With the brave beast: so far he topp'd my thought,  
 That I, in forgery of shapes and tricks,  
 Come short of what he did.

*Laer.* A Norman, was't?

*King.* A Norman.

*Laer.* Upon my life, Lamord.

*King.* The very same.

*Laer.* I know him well: he is the brooch, indeed,  
 And gem of all the nation.

*King.* He made confession of you;  
 And gave you such a masterly report,  
 For art and exercise in your defence,<sup>4</sup>  
 And for your rapier most especial,  
 That he cried out, 'twould be a sight indeed,

<sup>2</sup> *Of the unworthiest siege.*] Of the lowest rank. *Siege*, for seat, place.

<sup>3</sup> *Importing health and graveness.*] i. e. *implying, denoting.*

<sup>4</sup> — *in your defence,*] That is, in the *science* of defence.

If one could match you : the scrimers<sup>5</sup> of their nation,  
 He swore, had neither motion, guard, nor eye,  
 If you oppos'd them : Sir, this report of his  
 Did Hamlet so envenom with his envy,  
 That he could nothing do, but wish and beg  
 Your sudden coming o'er, to play with you.  
 Now, out of this,—

*Laer.* What out of this, my lord?

*King.* Laertes, was your father dear to you?  
 Or are you like the painting of a sorrow,  
 A face without a heart?

*Laer.* Why ask you this?

*King.* Not that I think, you did not love your  
 father;

But that I know, love is begun by time;<sup>6</sup>  
 And that I see, in passages of proof,<sup>7</sup>  
 Time qualifies the spark and fire of it.  
 There lives within the very flame of love  
 A kind of wick, or snuff, that will abate it;  
 And nothing is at a like goodness still;  
 For goodness, growing to a plurisy,  
 Dies in his own too-much: That we would do,  
 We should do when we would; for this *would* changes,  
 And hath abatements and delays as many,  
 As there are tongues, are hands, are accidents;  
 And then this *should* is a spendthrift sigh,  
 That hurts by easing.<sup>8</sup> But, to the quick o'the ulcer:  
 Hamlet comes back: what would you undertake,

<sup>5</sup> —the scrimers—] *The fencers.* From *escrimeur*, Fr. a fencer.

<sup>6</sup> —love is begun by time;] This is obscure. The meaning may be, love is not innate in us, and co-essential to our nature, but begins at a certain time from some external cause, and being always subject to the operations of time, suffers change and diminution. JOHNSON.

<sup>7</sup> —passages of proof;] In transactions of daily experience.

<sup>8</sup> And then this *should* is like a spendthrift sigh,  
*That hurts by easing.*] A *spendthrift sigh* is a *sigh* that makes an unnecessary waste of the vital flame. It is a notion very prevalent, that *sighs* impair the strength, and wear out the animal powers. JOHNSON.

To show yourself in deed your father's son  
More than in words ?

*Laer.* To cut his throat i'the church.

*King.* No place, indeed, should murdersanctuarize;  
Revenge should have no bounds. But, good Laertes,  
Will you do this, keep close within your chamber :  
Hamlet, return'd, shall know you are come home :  
We'll put on those shall praise your excellence,  
And set a double varnish on the fame  
The Frenchman gave you ; bring you, in fine, together,  
And wager o'er your heads : he, being remiss,  
Most generous, and free from all contriving,  
Will not peruse the foils ; so that, with ease,  
Or with a little shuffling, you may choose  
A sword unbated,<sup>9</sup> and, in a pass of practice,  
Requite him for your father.

*Laer.* I will do't :  
And, for the purpose, I'll anoint my sword.  
I bought an unction of a mountebank,  
So mortal, that but dip a knife in it,  
Where it draws blood no cataplasm so rare,  
Collected from all simples that have virtue  
Under the moon, can save the thing from death,  
That is but scratch'd withal : I'll touch my point  
With this contagion ; that, if I gall him slightly,  
It may be death.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>9</sup> *A sword unbated,*] i. e. not blunted as foils are.

<sup>1</sup> — *a pass of practice,*] *Practice* is often by Shakspeare, and other writers, taken for an *insidious stratagem*, or *privy treason*, a sense not incongruous to this passage, where yet it may mean a *thrust for exercise* ; or perhaps, a favourite pass, one he was well practised in.

<sup>2</sup> *It may be death.*] It is a matter of surprise, that no one of Shakspeare's numerous and able commentators has remarked, with proper warmth and detestation, the villainous assassin-like treachery of Laertes in this horrid plot. There is the more occasion that he should be here pointed out an object of abhorrence, as he is a character we are, in some preceding parts of the play, led to respect and admire. RITSON.

*King.* Let's further think of this,  
 Weigh, what convenience, both of time and means,  
 May fit us to our shape:<sup>3</sup> if this should fail,  
 And that our drift look through our bad performance,  
 'Twere better not assay'd; therefore this project  
 Should have a back, or second, that might hold,  
 If this should blast in proof.<sup>4</sup> Soft;—let me see:—  
 We'll make a solemn wager on your cunnings,  
 I ha't:  
 When in your motion you are hot and dry,  
 (As make your bouts more violent to that end,)  
 And that he calls for drink, I'll have preferr'd him<sup>5</sup>  
 A chalice for the nonce; whereon but sipping,  
 If he by chance escape your venom'd stuck,<sup>6</sup>  
 Our purpose may hold there. But stay, what noise?

*Enter Queen.*

How now, sweet queen?

*Queen.* One woe doth tread upon another's heel,  
 So fast they follow:—Your sister's drown'd, Laertes.

*Laer.* Drown'd! O, where?

*Queen.* There is a willow grows ascaunt the brook,  
 That shows his hoar leaves in the glassy stream;  
 Therewith fantastick garlands did she make  
 Of crow-flowers, nettles, daisies, and long purples,  
 That liberal<sup>7</sup> shepherds give a grosser name,  
 But our cold maids do dead men's fingers call them;  
 There on the pendent boughs her coronet weeds

<sup>3</sup> *May fit us to our shape:]* May enable us to assume proper characters, and to act our part.

<sup>4</sup> *—blast in proof:]* A metaphor taken from the trying or proving fire-arms or cannon, which often *blast* or *burst* in the proof.

<sup>5</sup> *I'll have preferr'd him—]* i. e. presented to him.

<sup>6</sup> *If he by chance escape your venom'd stuck,]* i. e. your venom'd thrust. *Stuck* was a term of the fencing-school.

<sup>7</sup> *—liberal—]* *Liberal* is free-spoken, licentious in language.

Clambering to hang, an envious sliver broke ;  
 When down her weedy trophies, and herself,  
 Fell in the weeping brook. Her clothes spread wide ;  
 And, mermaid-like, a while they bore her up :  
 Which time, she chanted snatches of old tunes ;  
 As one incapable of her own distress,<sup>8</sup>  
 Or like a creature native and indu'd  
 Unto that element : but long it could not be,  
 Till that her garments, heavy with their drink,  
 Pull'd the poor wretch from her melodious lay  
 To muddy death.

*Laer.* Alas then, she is drown'd ?

*Queen.* Drown'd, drown'd.

*Laer.* Too much of water hast thou, poor Ophelia,  
 And therefore I forbid my tears : But yet  
 It is our trick ; nature her custom holds,  
 Let shame say what it will : when these are gone,  
 The woman will be out.<sup>9</sup>—Adieu, my lord !  
 I have a speech of fire, that fain would blaze,  
 But that this folly drowns it. [*Exit.*

*King.* Let's follow, Gertrude ;  
 How much I had to do to calm his rage !  
 Now fear I, this will give it start again ;  
 Therefore, let's follow. [*Exeunt.*

## ACT V.

### SCENE I. A Church Yard.

*Enter Two Clowns, with Spades, &c.*

1 *Clo.* Is she to be buried in christian burial, that  
 wilfully seeks her own salvation ?

<sup>8</sup> *As one incapable of her own distress,]* As one having no understanding or knowledge of her danger.

<sup>9</sup> *The woman will be out.]* i. e. tears will flow.



2 *Clo.* I tell thee, she is ; therefore make her grave straight :<sup>1</sup> the crowner hath set on her, and finds it christian burial.

1 *Clo.* How can that be, unless she drowned herself in her own defence ?

2 *Clo.* Why, 'tis found so.

1 *Clo.* It must be *se offendendo* ; it cannot be else. For here lies the point : If I drown myself wittingly, it argues an act : and an act hath three branches ; it is, to act, to do, and to perform :<sup>2</sup> Argal, she drowned herself wittingly.

2 *Clo.* Nay, but hear you, goodman delver.

1 *Clo.* Give me leave. Here lies the water ; good : here stands the man ; good : If the man go to this water, and drown himself, it is, will he, nill he, he goes ; mark you that : but if the water come to him, and drown him, he drowns not himself : Argal, he, that is not guilty of his own death, shortens not his own life.

2 *Clo.* But is this law ?

1 *Clo.* Ay, marry is't ; crowner's-quest law.

2 *Clo.* Will you ha' the truth on't ? If this had not been a gentlewoman, she should have been buried out of christian burial.

1 *Clo.* Why, there thou say'st : And the more pity ; that great folks shall have countenance in this world to drown or hang themselves, more than their even christian.<sup>3</sup> Come, my spade. There is no ancient gentlemen but gardeners, ditchers, and grave-makers ; they hold up Adam's profession.

2 *Clo.* Was he a gentleman ?

<sup>1</sup> ——— *make her grave straight :*] i. e. immediately.

<sup>2</sup> ——— *an act hath three branches : it is, to act, to do, and to perform :*] Ridicule on scholastick divisions without distinction ; and of distinctions without difference. WARBURTON.

<sup>3</sup> ——— *their even christian.*] An old English expression for fellow-christian.

1 *Clo.* He was the first that ever bore arms.

2 *Clo.* Why, he had none.

1 *Clo.* What, art a heathen? How dost thou understand the scripture? The scripture says, Adam digged; Could he dig without arms? I'll put another question to thee: if thou answerest me not to the purpose, confess thyself——

2 *Clo.* Go to.

1 *Clo.* What is he, that builds stronger than either the mason, the shipwright, or the carpenter?

2 *Clo.* The gallows-maker; for that frame outlives a thousand tenants.

1 *Clo.* I like thy wit well, in good faith; the gallows does well: But how does it well? it does well to those that do ill: now thou dost ill, to say, the gallows is built stronger than the church; argal, the gallows may do well to thee. To't again; come.

2 *Clo.* Who builds stronger than a mason, a shipwright, or a carpenter?

1 *Clo.* Ay, tell me that, and unyoke.

2 *Clo.* Marry, now I can tell.

1 *Clo.* To't.

2 *Clo.* Mass, I cannot tell.

*Enter HAMLET and HORATIO, at a distance.*

1 *Clo.* Cudgel thy brains no more about it; for your dull ass will not mend his pace with beating: and, when you are asked this question next, say, a grave-maker; the houses that he makes, last till doomsday. Go, get thee to Yaughan, and fetch me a stoup of liquor. [*Exit* 2 Clown.]

1 Clown digs, and sings.

*In youth, when I did love, did love,<sup>4</sup>*

*Methought it was very sweet,*

*To contract, O, the time, for, ah, my behave.*

*O, methought, there was nothing meet.*

*Ham.* Has this fellow no feeling of his business? he sings at grave-making.

*Hor.* Custom hath made it in him a property of easiness.

*Ham.* Tis e'en so: the hand of little employment hath the daintier sense.

1 *Clo.* *But age, with his stealing steps,*

*Hath claw'd me in his clutch,*

*And hath shipped me into the land,*

*As if I had never been such.*

[Throws up a scull.

*Ham.* That scull had a tongue in it, and could sing once: How the knave jowls it to the ground, as if it were Cain's jaw-bone, that did the first murder! This might be the pate of a politician, which this ass now o'er-reaches; one that would circumvent God, might it not?

*Hor.* It might, my lord.

*Ham.* Or of a courtier; which could say, *Good-morrow, sweet lord! How dost thou, good lord?* This might be my lord such-a-one, that praised my lord such-a-one's horse, when he meant to beg it; might it not?

*Hor.* Ay, my lord.

*Ham.* Why, e'en so: and now my lady Worm's; chapless, and knocked about the mazzard with a

\* *In youth when I did love, &c.*] The three stanzas, sung here by the Grave-Digger, are extracted, with a slight variation, from a little poem, called *The aged Lover renounceth Love*, written by Henry Howard, Earl of Surrey, but it has been since attributed to Lord Vaux; and Mr. T. Warton says, that there is in the British Museum, a copy of Vaux's poem, beginning, *I lothe that I did love*, with the title, "A dyttie or sonet made by the lord Vaus, in the time of the noble quene Marye, representing the image of death."

The entire Song is published by Dr. Percy, in the first volume of his *Reliques of Ancient English Poetry*.

sexton's spade : Here's fine revolution, an we had the trick to see't. Did these bones cost no more the breeding, but to play at loggats with them ?<sup>5</sup> mine ache to think on't.

1 Clo. *A pick-axe, and a spade, a spade,* [Sings.  
*For—and a shrouding sheet :*  
*O, a pit of clay for to be made*  
*For such a guest is meet.*  
 [Throws up a scull.

*Ham.* There's another : Why may not that be the scull of a lawyer ? Where be his quiddits<sup>6</sup> now, his quillets,<sup>7</sup> his cases, his tenures, and his tricks ? why does he suffer this rude knave now to knock him about the sconce<sup>8</sup> with a dirty shovel, and will not tell him of his action of battery ? Humph ! This fellow might be in's time a great buyer of land, with his statutes, his recognizances, his fines, his double vouchers,<sup>9</sup> his recoveries : Is this the fine of his fines, and the recovery of his recoveries, to have

<sup>5</sup> ——— *to play at loggats with them ?*] This is a game played in several parts of England even at this time. A stake is fixed into the ground ; those who play, throw *loggats* or pins of wood at it, and he that is nearest the stake wins.

<sup>6</sup> ——— *quiddits, &c.*] i. e. subtilties.

<sup>7</sup> ——— *his quillets,*] *Quillets* are nice and frivolous distinctions.

<sup>8</sup> ——— *the sconce—*] i. e. the head.

<sup>9</sup> ——— *his double vouchers, &c.*] A recovery with *double voucher* is the one usually suffered, and is so denominated from *two* persons (the latter of whom is always the common cryer, or some such inferior person,) being successively *voucher*, or called upon, to warrant the tenant's title. Both *fines* and *recoveries* are fictions of law, used to convert an estate tail into a fee simple. *Statutes* are (not acts of parliament, but) *statutes-merchant* and *staple*, particular modes of *recognizance* or acknowledgment for securing *debts*, which thereby become a charge upon the party's land. *Statutes* and *recognizances* are constantly mentioned together in the covenants of a purchase deed.

his fine pate full of fine dirt? will his vouchers vouch him no more of his purchases, and double ones too, than the length and breadth of a pair of indentures? The very conveyances of his lands will hardly lie in this box; and must the inheritor himself have no more? ha?

*Hor.* Not a jot more, my lord.

*Ham.* Is not parchment made of sheep-skins?

*Hor.* Ay, my lord, and of calves-skins too.

*Ham.* 'They are sheep, and calves, which seek out assurance in that.' I will speak to this fellow:—  
Whose grave's this, sirrah?

1 *Clo.* Mine, sir.—

*O, a pit of clay for to be made* [Sings.  
*For such a guest is meet.*

*Ham.* I think it be thine, indeed; for thou liest in't.

1 *Clo.* You lie out on't, sir, and therefore it is not yours: for my part, I do not lie in't, yet it is mine.

*Ham.* 'Thou dost lie in't, to be in't, and say it is thine: 'tis for the dead, not for the quick; therefore thou liest.

1 *Clo.* 'Tis a quick lie, sir; 'twill away again, fom me to you.

*Ham.* What man dost thou dig it for?

1 *Clo.* For no man, sir.

*Ham.* What woman then?

1 *Clo.* For none neither.

*Ham.* Who is to be buried in't?

1 *Clo.* One, that was a woman, sir; but, rest her soul, she's dead.

*Ham.* How absolute the knave is! we must speak

<sup>1</sup> — assurance. in that.] A quibble is intended. 'Deeds, which are usually written on parchment, are called the common assurances of the kingdom.

by the card,<sup>2</sup> or equivocation will undo us. By the lord, Horatio, these three years I have taken note of it; the age is grown so picked,<sup>3</sup> that the toe of the peasant comes so near the heel of the courtier, he galls his kibe.—How long hast thou been a grave maker?

1 *Clo.* Of all the days i'the year, I came to't that day that our last king Hamlet overcame Fortinbras.

*Ham.* How long's that since?

1 *Clo.* Cannot you tell that? every fool can tell that: It was that very day that young Hamlet was born:<sup>4</sup> he that is mad, and sent into England.

*Ham.* Ay, marry, why was he sent into England?

1 *Clo.* Why, because he was mad: he shall recover his wits there; or, if he do not, 'tis no great matter there.

*Ham.* Why?

1 *Clo.* 'Twill not be seen in him there; there the men are as mad as he.

*Ham.* How came he mad?

1 *Clo.* Very strangely, they say.

*Ham.* How strangely?

<sup>2</sup> — *by the card.*] i. e. we must speak with the same precision and accuracy as is observed in marking the true distances of coasts, the heights, courses, &c. in a *sea-chart*, which in our poet's time was called a *card*.

<sup>3</sup> — *the age is grown so picked,*] So *smart*, so *sharp*, says Sir T. Hanmer, very properly; but there was, I think, about that time, a *picked shoe*, that is, a *shoe with a long pointed toe*, in fashion, to which the allusion seems likewise to be made. *Every man now is smart; and every man now is a man of fashion.*

JOHNSON.

<sup>4</sup> — *that young Hamlet was born:*] By this scene it appears that Hamlet was then thirty years old, and knew Yorick well, who had been dead twenty-two years. And yet in the beginning of the play he is spoken of as a *very young man*, one that designed to go back to school, i. e. to the University of Wittenberg. The poet in the fifth Act had forgot what he wrote in the first. BLACKSTONE.

1 *Clo.* 'Faith, e'en with losing his wits.

*Ham.* Upon what ground?

1 *Clo.* Why, here in Denmark; I have been sexton here, man, and boy, thirty years.

*Ham.* How long will a man lie i'the earth ere he rot?

1 *Clo.* 'Faith, if he be not rotten before he die, (as we have many pocky corses now-a-days, that will scarce hold the laying in,) he will last you some eight year, or nine year: a tanner will last you nine year.

*Ham.* Why he more than another?

1 *Clo.* Why, sir, his hide is so tanned with his trade, that he will keep out water a great while; and your water is a sore decayer of your whoreson dead body. Here's a scull now hath lain you i'the earth three-and-twenty years.

*Ham.* Whose was it?

1 *Clo.* A whoreson mad fellow's it was; Whose do you think it was?

*Ham.* Nay, I know not.

1 *Clo.* A pestilence on him for a mad rogue! he poured a flagon of Rhenish on my head once. This same scull, sir, was Yorick's scull, the king's jester.

*Ham.* This?

[*Takes the scull.*]

1 *Clo.* E'en that.

*Ham.* Alas, poor Yorick!—I knew him, Horatio; a fellow of infinite jest, of most excellent fancy: he hath borne me on his back a thousand times; and now how abhorred in my imagination it is! my gorge rises at it. Here hung those lips, that I have kissed I know not how oft. Where be your gibes now? your gambols? your songs? your flashes of merriment, that were wont to set the table on a roar? Not one now, to mock your own grinning? quite chap-fallen? Now get you to my lady's chamber, and tell her, let her paint an inch thick, to this

favour<sup>5</sup> she must come; make her laugh at that,—  
Pr'ythee, Horatio, tell me one thing.

*Hor.* What's that, my lord?

*Ham.* Dost thou think, Alexander looked o'this  
fashion i'the earth?

*Hor.* E'en so.

*Ham.* And smelt so? pah!

[*Throws down the Scull.*]

*Hor.* E'en so, my lord.

*Ham.* To what base uses we may return, Horatio!  
Why may not imagination trace the noble dust of  
Alexander, till he find it stopping a bung-hole?

*Hor.* 'Twere to consider too curiously, to con-  
sider so.

*Ham.* No, faith, not a jot; but to follow him  
thither with modesty enough, and likelihood to lead  
it: As thus; Alexander died, Alexander was buried,  
Alexander returneth to dust; the dust is earth; of  
earth we make loam: And why of that loam,  
whereto he was converted, might they not stop a  
beer-barrel?

Imperious Cæsar, dead, and turn'd to clay,

Might stop a hole to keep the wind away:

O, that the earth, which kept the world in awe,

Should patch a wall to expel the winter's flaw!<sup>6</sup>

But soft! but soft! aside;—Here comes the king,

*Enter Priests, &c. in Procession; the Corpse of  
OPHELIA, LAERTES and Mourners following;  
King, Queen, their Trains, &c.*

The queen, the courtiers: Who is this they follow?  
And with such maimed rites!<sup>7</sup> This doth betoken,  
The corse, they follow, did with desperate hand

<sup>5</sup> ——— to this favour—] i. e. to this countenance or complexion.

<sup>6</sup> ——— winter's flaw!] Winter's blast.

<sup>7</sup> ——— maimed rites!] Imperfect obsequies.



Fordo its own life.<sup>8</sup> 'Twas of some estate :<sup>9</sup>  
Couch we a while, and mark.

[Retiring with HORATIO.

*Laer.* What ceremony else ?

*Ham.*

That is Laertes,

A very noble youth : Mark.

*Laer.* What ceremony else ?

1 *Priest.* Her obsequies have been as far enlarg'd  
As we have warrant : Her death was doubtful ;  
And, but that great command o'ersways the order,  
She should in ground unsanctified have lodg'd  
Till the last trumpet ; for charitable prayers,  
Shards,<sup>1</sup> flints, and pebbles, should be thrown on  
her,

Yet here she is allow'd her virgin crants,<sup>2</sup>  
Her maiden strewments, and the bringing home  
Of bell and burial.

*Laer.* Must there no more be done ?

1 *Priest.*

No more be done !

We should profane the service of the dead,  
To sing a *requiem*,<sup>3</sup> and such rest to her  
As to peace-parted souls.

*Laer.*

Lay her i'the earth ;—

And from her fair and unpolluted flesh  
May violets spring !—I tell thee, churlish priest,  
A minist'ring angel shall my sister be,  
When thou liest howling.

*Ham.*

What, the fair Ophelia !

*Queen.* Sweets to the sweet : Farewell !

[Scattering Flowers.

<sup>8</sup> *Fordo its own life.*] To *fordo* is to undo, to destroy.

<sup>9</sup> — *some estate :*] Some person of high rank.

<sup>1</sup> *Shards,*] i. e. broken pots or tiles, called *pot-sherds*, *tile-sherds*.

<sup>2</sup> — *allow'd her virgin crants,*] Evidently corrupted from *chants*, which is the true word.

<sup>3</sup> *To sing a requiem,*] A *requiem*, is a mass performed in Popish churches for the rest of the soul of a person deceased.

I hop'd, thou should'st have been my Hamlet's wife;  
I thought, thy bride-bed to have deck'd, sweet maid,  
And not have strew'd thy grave.

*Laer.*

O, treble woe

Fall ten times treble on that cursed head,  
Whose wicked deed thy most ingenious sense  
Depriv'd thee of!—Hold off the earth a while,  
Till I have caught her once more in mine arms:

*[Leaps into the Grave.]*

Now pile your dust upon the quick and dead;  
Till of this flat a mountain you have made,  
To o'er-top old Pelion, or the skyish head  
Of blue Olympus.

*Ham. [Advancing.]* What is he, whose grief  
Bears such an emphasis? whose phrase of sorrow  
Conjures the wand'ring stars, and makes them stand  
Like wonder-wounded hearers? this is I,

Hamlet the Dane.

*[Leaps into the Grave.]*

*Laer.*

The devil take thy soul!

*[Grappling with him.]*

*Ham.* Thou pray'st not well.

I pr'ythee, take thy fingers from my throat;  
For, though I am not splenetic and rash,  
Yet have I in me something dangerous,  
Which let thy wisdom fear: Hold off thy hand.

*King.* Pluck them asunder.

*Queen.*

Hamlet, Hamlet!

*All.* Gentlemen,—

*Hor.*

Good my lord, be quiet.

*[The Attendants part them, and they come out of the Grave.]*

*Ham.* Why, I will fight with him upon this theme,  
Until my eyelids will no longer wag.

*Queen.* O my son! what theme?

*Ham.* I lov'd Ophelia; forty thousand brothers  
Could not, with all their quantity of love  
Make up my sum.—What wilt thou do for her?

*King.* O, he is mad, Laertes.

*Queen.* For love of God, forbear him.

*Ham.* 'Zounds, show me what thou'lt do :  
Would't weep ? would't fight ? would't fast ? would't tear  
thyself ?

Would't drink up Esil ?<sup>4</sup> eat a crocodile ?  
I'll do't.—Dost thou come here to whine ?  
To outface me with leaping in her grave ?  
Be buried quick with her, and so will I :  
And, if thou prate of mountains, let them throw  
Millions of acres on us ; till our ground,  
Singeing his pate against the burning zone,  
Make Ossa like a wart ! Nay, an thou'lt mouth,  
I'll rant as well as thou.

*Queen.* This is mere madness :  
And thus a while the fit will work on him ;  
Anon, as patient as the female dove,  
When that her golden couplets are disclos'd,<sup>5</sup>  
His silence will sit drooping.

*Ham.* Hear you, sir ;  
What is the reason that you use me thus ?  
I lov'd you ever : But it is no matter ;  
Let Hercules himself do what he may,  
The cat will mew, and dog will have his day.

*King.* I pray thee, good Horatio, wait upon  
him.—[Exit.

[Exit HORATIO.  
Strengthen your patience in our last night's speech ;  
[To LAERTES.

We'll put the matter to the present push.—  
Good Gertrude set some watch over your son.—  
This grave shall have a living monument :

<sup>4</sup> *Would't drink up Esil ?*] This is understood by some of the commentators to mean a river so called, or to mean only *vinegar*.

<sup>5</sup> *When that her golden couplets are disclos'd,*] To disclose was anciently used for to hatch.

An hour of quiet shortly shall we see ;  
Till then, in patience our proceeding be. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.

*A Hall in the Castle.*

*Enter HAMLET and HORATIO.*

*Ham.* So much for this, sir : now shall you see  
the other ;—

You do remember all the circumstance ?

*Hor.* Remember it, my lord !

*Ham.* Sir, in my heart there was a kind of fighting,  
That would not let me sleep : methought, I lay  
Worse than the mutines in the bilboes.<sup>6</sup> Rashly,  
And prais'd be rashness for it,—Let us know,  
Our indiscretion sometimes serves us well,  
When our deep plots do pall;<sup>7</sup> and that should  
teach us,

<sup>6</sup> — mutines in the bilboes.] *Mutines*, the French word for seditious or disobedient fellows in the army or fleet.

The *bilboes* is a bar of iron with fetters annexed to it, by which mutinous or disorderly sailors were anciently linked together. The word is derived from *Bilboa*, a place in Spain where instruments of steel were fabricated in the utmost perfection. To understand Shakspeare's allusion completely, it should be known, that as these fetters connect the legs of the offenders very close together, their attempts to rest must be as fruitless as those of Hamlet, in whose mind *there was a kind of fighting that would not let him sleep*. Every motion of one must disturb his partner in confinement. The *bilboes* are still shown in the Tower of London, among the other spoils of the Spanish Armada.

<sup>7</sup> — rashly,

*And prais'd be rashness for it,—Let us know,*

*Our indiscretion sometimes serves us well,*

*When, &c.*] Hamlet delivering an account of his escape, begins with saying—That he *rashly*—and then is carried into a reflection upon the weakness of human wisdom. I *rashly*—praised be rashness for it—*Let us* not think these events casual,

There's a divinity that shapes our ends,  
Rough-hew them how we will.

*Hor.* That is most certain.

*Ham.* Up from my cabin,  
My sea-gown scarf'd about me, in the dark  
Grop'd I to find out them : had my desire ;  
Finger'd their packet ; and, in fine, withdrew  
To mine own room again : making so bold,  
My fears forgetting manners, to unseal  
Their grand commission ; where I found, Horatio,  
A royal knavery ; an exact command,—  
Larded with many several sorts of reasons,  
Importing Denmark's health, and England's too,  
With, ho ! such bugs and goblins in my life,<sup>8</sup>—  
That, on the supervise, no leisure bated,<sup>9</sup>  
No, not to stay the grinding of the axe,  
My head should be struck off.

*Hor.* Is't possible ?

*Ham.* Here's the commission ; read it at more  
leisure.

But wilt thou hear now how I did proceed ?

*Hor.* Ay, 'beseech you.

*Ham.* Being thus benetted round with villainies,  
Or I could make<sup>1</sup> a prologue to my brains,  
They had begun the play ;—I sat me down ;  
Devis'd a new commission ; wrote it fair :  
I once did hold it, as our statists do,<sup>2</sup>

but let us know, that is, take notice and remember, that we sometimes succeed by *indiscretion* when we fail by *deep plots*, and infer the perpetual superintendence and agency of the *Divinity*. The observation is just, and will be allowed by every human being, who shall reflect on the course of his own life. JOHNSON.

<sup>8</sup> With, ho ! such bugs and goblins in my life,] With such causes of terror, rising from my character and designs.

<sup>9</sup> — no leisure bated,] Without any abatement or intermission of time.

<sup>1</sup> Or I could make —] Or in old English signified before.

<sup>2</sup> — as our statists do,] A *statist* is a statesman. Most of the

A baseness to write fair, and labour'd much  
 How to forget that learning; but, sir, now  
 It did me yeoman's service:<sup>3</sup> Wilt thou know  
 The effect of what I wrote?

*Hor.* Ay, good my lord.

*Ham.* An earnest conjuration from the king,—  
 As England was his faithful tributary;  
 As love between them like the palm might flourish;  
 As peace should still her wheaten garland wear,  
 And stand a comma 'tween their amities;<sup>4</sup>  
 And many such like as's of great charge,—  
 That on the view and knowing of these contents,  
 Without debatement further, more, or less,  
 He should the bearers put to sudden death,  
 Not shriving-time allow'd.<sup>5</sup>

*Hor.* How was this seal'd?

*Ham.* Why, even in that was heaven ordinaunt;  
 I had my father's signet in my purse,  
 Which was the model of that Danish seal:<sup>6</sup>

great men of Shakspeare's times, whose autographs have been preserved, wrote very bad hands; their secretaries very neat ones.

<sup>3</sup> — *yeoman's service:*] The meaning is, *This yeomanly qualification was a most useful servant, or yeoman, to me; i. e. did me eminent service.* The ancient *yeomen* were famous for their military valour.

<sup>4</sup> *As peace should still her wheaten garland wear,*

*And stand a comma 'tween their amities;]* The expression of our author is, like many of his phrases, sufficiently constrained and affected, but it is not incapable of explanation. The *comma* is the note of *connection* and continuity of sentences; the *period* is the note of *abruption* and disjunction. Shakspeare had it perhaps in his mind to write,—That unless England complied with the mandate, *war should put a period to their amity*; he altered his mode of diction, and thought that, in an opposite sense, he might put, *that peace should stand a comma between their amities*. This is not an easy style; but is it not the style of Shakspeare? JOHNSON.

<sup>5</sup> *Not shriving-time allow'd.]* i. e. without time for confession of their sins: another proof of Hamlet's christian-like disposition.

<sup>6</sup> — *the model of that Danish seal:]* The *model* is in old language the *copy*.

Folded the writ up in form of the other;  
 Subscrib'd it; gave't the impression; plac'd it safely,  
 The changeling never known: Now, the next day  
 Was our sea-fight: and what to this was sequent  
 Thou know'st already.

*Hor.* So Guildenstern and Rosencrantz go to't.

*Ham.* Why, man, they did make love to this  
 employment;

They are not near my conscience; their defeat  
 Does by their own insinuation<sup>7</sup> grow:  
 'Tis dangerous, when the baser nature comes  
 Between the pass and fell incensed points  
 Of mighty opposites.

*Hor.* Why, what a king is this!

*Ham.* Does it not, think thee, stand me now  
 upon?

He that hath kill'd my king, and whor'd my mother;  
 Popp'd in between the election and my hopes;  
 Thrown out his angle for my proper life,  
 And with such cozenage; is't not perfect conscience,  
 To quit him<sup>8</sup> with this arm? and is't not to be  
 damn'd,

To let this canker of our nature come  
 In further evil?

*Hor.* It must be shortly known to him from Eng-  
 land,

What is the issue of the business there.

*Ham.* It will be short: the interim is mine;  
 And a man's life no more than to say, one.  
 But I am very sorry, good Horatio,  
 That to Laertes I forgot myself;  
 For by the image of my cause, I see

<sup>7</sup> — by their own insinuation —] By their having insinuated  
 or thrust themselves into the employment.

<sup>8</sup> To quit him —] To requite him; to pay him his due.

The portraiture of his : I'll count his favours :<sup>9</sup>  
 But, sure, the bravery of his grief did put me  
 Into a towering passion.

*Hor.*

Peace ; who comes here ?

*Enter OSRIC.*

*Osr.* Your lordship is right welcome back to Denmark.

*Ham.* I humbly thank you, sir.—Dost know this water-fly ?<sup>1</sup>

*Hor.* No, my good lord.

*Ham.* Thy state is the more gracious ; for 'tis a vice to know him : He hath much land, and fertile : let a beast be lord of beasts, and his crib shall stand at the king's mess : 'Tis a chough ;<sup>2</sup> but, as I say, spacious in the possession of dirt.

*Osr.* Sweet lord, if your lordship were at leisure, I should impart a thing to you from his majesty.

*Ham.* I will receive it, sir, with all diligence of spirit : Your bonnet to its right use ; 'tis for the head.

*Osr.* I thank your lordship, 'tis very hot.

*Ham.* No, believe me, 'tis very cold ; the wind is northerly.

*Osr.* It is indifferent cold, my lord, indeed.

*Ham.* But yet, methinks it is very sultry and hot ; or my complexion —

*Osr.* Exceedingly, my lord ; it is very sultry,—as 'twere,—I cannot tell how.—My lord, his majesty bade me signify to you, that he has laid a great wager on your head : Sir, this is the matter,—

<sup>9</sup> — *I'll count his favours :*] *I will make account of them, i. e. reckon upon them, value them.*

<sup>1</sup> — *Dost know this water-fly !*] *A water-fly* skips up and down upon the surface of the water, without any apparent purpose or reason, and is thence the proper emblem of a busy trifler.

<sup>2</sup> — *'Tis a chough ;*] A kind of jackdaw.



*Ham.* I beseech you, remember ——

[*HAMLET moves him to put on his Hat.*

*Osr.* Nay, good my lord; for my ease, in good faith.<sup>3</sup> Sir, here is newly come to court, Laertes: believe me, an absolute gentleman, full of most excellent differences,<sup>4</sup> of very soft society, and great showing: Indeed, to speak feelingly of him, he is the card or calendar of gentry,<sup>5</sup> for you shall find in him the continent of what part a gentleman would see.<sup>6</sup>

*Ham.* Sir, his definement suffers no perdition in you;<sup>7</sup>—though, I know, to divide him inventorially, would dizzy the arithmetick of memory; and yet but raw neither, in respect of his quick sail. But, in the verity of extolment, I take him to be a soul of great article; and his infusion of such dearth and rareness, as, to make true diction of him, his semblable is his mirrour; and, who else would trace him, his umbrage, nothing more.

*Osr.* Your lordship speaks most infallibly of him.

<sup>3</sup> *Nay, good my lord; for my ease, in good faith.*] This seems to have been the affected phrase of the time.

<sup>4</sup> —— *full of most excellent differences,*] Full of distinguishing excellencies.

<sup>5</sup> —— *the card or calendar of gentry,*] The general preceptor of elegance; the card by which a gentleman is to direct his course; the calendar by which he is to choose his time, that what he does may be both excellent and seasonable. JOHNSON.

<sup>6</sup> —— *for you shall find in him the continent of what part a gentleman would see.*] You shall find him containing and comprising every quality which a gentleman would desire to contemplate for imitation.

<sup>7</sup> *Sir, his definement, &c.*] This is designed as a specimen, and ridicule of the court jargon amongst the *precieux* of that time. The sense in English is, "Sir, he suffers nothing in your account of him, though to enumerate his good qualities particularly would be endless; yet when we had done our best, it would still come short of him. However, in strictness of truth, he is a great genius, and of a character so rarely to be met with, that to find any thing like him we must look into his mirrour, and his imitators will appear no more than his shadows."

*Ham.* The concernancy, sir? why do we wrap the gentleman in our more rawer breath?

*Osr.* Sir?

*Hor.* Is't not possible to understand in another tongue? You will do't, sir, really.

*Ham.* What imports the nomination of this gentleman?

*Osr.* Of Laertes?

*Hor.* His purse is empty already; all his golden words are spent.

*Ham.* Of him, sir.

*Osr.* I know, you are not ignorant——

*Ham.* I would, you did, sir; yet, in faith, if you did, it would not much approve me;<sup>8</sup>—Well, sir.

*Osr.* You are not ignorant of what excellence Laertes is——

*Ham.* I dare not confess that, lest I should compare with him in excellence; but, to know a man well, were to know himself.

*Osr.* I mean, sir, for his weapon; but in the imputation laid on him by them, in his meed<sup>9</sup> he's unfellowed.

*Ham.* What's his weapon?

*Osr.* Rapier and dagger.

*Ham.* That's two of his weapons: but, well.

*Osr.* The king, sir, hath wagered with him six Barbary horses: against the which he has impawned,<sup>1</sup> as I take it, six French rapiers and poniards, with their assigns, as girdle, hangers,<sup>2</sup> and so: Three of the carriages, in faith, are very dear to fancy, very

<sup>8</sup> — *if you did, it would not much approve me:*] If you knew I was not ignorant, your esteem would not much advance my reputation. To approve, is to recommend to approbation.

<sup>9</sup> — *in his meed* —] In his excellence.

<sup>1</sup> — *impawned,*] Wagered and staked.

<sup>2</sup> — *hangers,*] Under this term were comprehended four graduated straps, &c. that hung down in a belt on each side of its receptacle for the sword.

responsive to the hilts, most delicate carriages, and of very liberal conceit.

*Ham.* What call you the carriages?

*Hor.* I knew, you must be edified by the margent,<sup>3</sup> ere you had done.

*Osr.* The carriages, sir, are the hangers.

*Ham.* The phrase would be more german<sup>4</sup> to the matter, if we could carry a cannon by our sides; I would, it might be hangers till then. But, on: Six Barbary horses against six French swords, their assigns, and three liberal-conceited carriages; that's the French bet against the Danish: Why is this impawned, as you call it?

*Osr.* The king, sir, hath laid,<sup>5</sup> that in a dozen passes between yourself and him, he shall not exceed you three hits; he hath laid, on twelve for nine; and it would come to immediate trial, if your lordship would vouchsafe the answer.

*Ham.* How, if I answer, no?

*Osr.* I mean, my lord, the opposition of your person in trial.

*Ham.* Sir, I will walk here in the hall; If it please his majesty, it is the breathing time of day with me: let the foils be brought, the gentleman willing, and the king hold his purpose, I will win

<sup>3</sup> — *you must be edified by the margent,*] Dr. Warburton very properly observes, that in the old books the gloss or comment was usually printed on the margent of the leaf.

<sup>4</sup> — *more german* —] *More a-kin.*

<sup>5</sup> *The king, sir, hath laid,*] As three or four complete pages would scarcely hold the remarks already printed, together with those which have lately been communicated to me in MS. on this very unimportant passage, I shall avoid both partiality and tediousness, by the omission of them all. I therefore leave the conditions of this wager to be adjusted by the members of Brookes's or the Jockey-Club, at Newmarket, who on such subjects may prove the most enlightened commentators, and most successfully bestir themselves in the cold unpoetick dabble of calculation.

for him, if I can ; if not, I will gain nothing but my shame, and the odd hits.

*Osr.* Shall I deliver you so ?

*Ham.* To this effect, sir ; after what flourish your nature will.

*Osr.* I commend my duty to your lordship.

[*Exit.*

*Ham.* Yours, yours.—He does well, to commend it himself ; there are no tongues else for's turn.

*Hor.* This lapwing runs away with the shell on his head.

*Ham.* He did comply<sup>6</sup> with his dug, before he sucked it. Thus has he (and many more of the same breed, that, I know, the drossy age dotes on,) only got the tune of the time, and outward habit of encounter ;<sup>7</sup> a kind of yesty collection, which carries them through and through the most fond and winnowed opinions ;<sup>8</sup> and do but blow them to their trial, the bubbles are out.

*Enter a Lord.*

*Lord.* My lord, his majesty commended him to you by young Osric, who brings back to him, that you attend him in the hall : He sends to know, if your pleasure hold to play with Laertes, or that you will take longer time.

*Ham.* I am constant to my purposes, they follow the king's pleasure : if his fitness speaks, mine is

<sup>6</sup> *He did comply —*] For compliment.

<sup>7</sup> ——— *outward habit of encounter ;*] i. e. exterior politeness of address ; in allusion to Osric's last speech.

<sup>8</sup> ——— *a kind of yesty collection, which carries them through and through the most fond and winnowed opinions ;*] The meaning is, "these men have got the cant of the day, a superficial readiness of slight and cursory conversation, a kind of frothy collection of fashionable prattle, which yet carries them through the most select and approving judgments. This airy facility of talk sometimes imposes upon wise men."

ready; now, or whensoever, provided I be so able as now.

*Lord.* The king, and queen, and all are coming down.

*Ham.* In happy time.

*Lord.* The queen desires you, to use some gentle entertainment<sup>9</sup> to Laertes, before you fall to play.

*Ham.* She well instructs me. [*Exit Lord.*]

*Hor.* You will lose this wager, my lord.

*Ham.* I do not think so; since he went into France, I have been in continual practice; I shall win at the odds.<sup>1</sup> But thou would'st not think, how ill all's here about my heart: but it is no matter.

*Hor.* Nay, good my lord,—

*Ham.* It is but foolery; but it is such a kind of gain-giving,<sup>2</sup> as would, perhaps, trouble a woman.

*Hor.* If your mind dislike any thing, obey it:<sup>3</sup> I will forestal their repair hither, and say, you are not fit.

*Ham.* Not a whit, we defy augury; there is a special providence in the fall of a sparrow. If it be now, 'tis not to come; if it be not to come, it will be now; if it be not now, yet it will come: the rea-

<sup>9</sup> — *gentle entertainment*—] Mild and temperate conversation.

<sup>1</sup> — *I shall win at the odds.*] I shall succeed with the advantage that I am allowed.

<sup>2</sup> — *a kind of gain-giving,*] the same as *misgiving*.

<sup>3</sup> *If your mind dislike any thing, obey it:*] With these presages of future evils arising in the mind, the poet has fore-run many events which are to happen at the conclusions of his plays; and sometimes so particularly, that even the circumstances of calamity are minutely hinted at, as in the instance of Juliet, who tells her lover from the window, that he appears *like one dead in the bottom of a tomb*. The supposition that the genius of the mind gave an alarm before approaching dissolution, is a very ancient one, and perhaps can never be totally driven out: yet it must be allowed the merit of adding beauty to poetry, however injurious it may sometimes prove to the weak and superstitious. STEEVENS.

diness is all: Since no man, of aught he leaves, knows, what is't to leave betimes?<sup>4</sup> Let be.

*Enter King, Queen, LAERTES, Lords, OSRIC, and Attendants with Foils, &c.*

*King.* Come, Hamlet, come, and take this hand from me.

*[The King puts the Hand of LAERTES into that of HAMLET.]*

*Ham.* Give me your pardon, sir:<sup>5</sup> I have done you wrong;

But pardon it, as you are a gentleman.

This presence knows, and you must needs have heard,

How I am punish'd with a sore distraction.

What I have done,

That might your nature, honour, and exception,

Roughly awake, I here proclaim was madness.

Was't Hamlet wrong'd Laertes? Never, Hamlet:

If Hamlet from himself be ta'en away,

And, when he's not himself, does wrong Laertes,

Then Hamlet does it not, Hamlet denies it.

Who does it then? His madness: If't be so,

Hamlet is of the faction that is wrong'd;

His madness is poor Hamlet's enemy.

Sir, in this audience,

Let my disclaiming from a purpos'd evil

Free me so far in your most generous thoughts,

<sup>4</sup> *Since no man, of aught he leaves, knows, what is't to leave betimes?*] The meaning may be, "It is true, that, by death, we lose all the goods of life; yet seeing this loss is no otherwise an evil than as we are sensible of it, and since death removes all sense of it, what matters it how soon we lose them? Therefore come what will, I am prepared."

<sup>5</sup> *Give me your pardon, sir:*] I wish Hamlet had made some other defence; it is unsuitable to the character of a good or a brave man, to shelter himself in falsehood. JOHNSON.

That I have shot my arrow o'er the house,  
And hurt my brother.

*Laer.* I am satisfied in nature,<sup>6</sup>  
Whose motive, in this case, should stir me most  
To my revenge: but in my terms of honour,  
I stand aloof; and will no reconciliation,  
Till by some elder masters, of known honour,  
I have a voice and precedent of peace,  
To keep my name ungor'd: But till that time,  
I do receive your offer'd love like love,  
And will not wrong it.

*Ham.* I embrace it freely;  
And will this brother's wager frankly play.—  
Give us the foils; come on.

*Laer.* Come, one for me.

*Ham.* I'll be your foil, Laertes; in mine ignorance  
Your skill shall, like a star i'the darkest night,  
Stick fiery off indeed.

*Laer.* You mock me, sir.

*Ham.* No, by this hand.

*King.* Give them the foils, young Osric.—  
Cousin Hamlet,

You know the wager?

*Ham.* Very well, my lord;  
Your grace hath laid the odds o'the weaker side.

*King.* I do not fear it: I have seen you both;—  
But since he's better'd, we have therefore odds.<sup>7</sup>

*Laer.* This is too heavy, let me see another.

*Ham.* This likes me well: These foils have all a  
length? [*They prepare to play.*]

*Osr.* Ay, my good lord.

<sup>6</sup> *I am satisfied in nature, &c.*] This was a piece of satire on fantastical honour. Though *nature* is satisfied, yet he will ask advice of older men of the sword, whether *artificial honour* ought to be contented with Hamlet's submission.

<sup>7</sup> *But since he's better'd, we have therefore odds.*] These odds were twelve to nine in favour of Hamlet, by Laertes giving him three

*King.* Set me the stoups of wine<sup>8</sup> upon that table :—

If Hamlet give the first or second hit,  
Or quit in answer of the third exchange,  
Let all the battlements their ordnance fire ;  
The king shall drink to Hamlet's better breath ;  
And in the cup an union<sup>9</sup> shall he throw,  
Richer than that which four successive kings  
In Denmark's crown have worn ; Give me the cups,  
And let the kettle to the trumpet speak,  
The trumpet to the cannoneer without,  
The cannons to the heavens, the heaven to earth,  
*Now the king drinks to Hamlet.*—Come, begin ;—  
And you, the judges, bear a wary eye.

*Ham.* Come on, sir.

*Laer.* Come, my lord. [*They play.*]

*Ham.* One.

*Laer.* No.

*Ham.* Judgment.

*Osr.* A hit, a very palpable hit.

*Laer.* Well,—again.

*King.* Stay, give me drink : Hamlet, this pearl is thine ;<sup>1</sup>

Here's to thy health.—Give him the cup.

[*Trumpets sound ; and Cannon shot off within.*]

*Ham.* I'll play this bout first, set it by awhile.  
Come.—Another hit ; What say you ? [*They play.*]

*Laer.* A touch, a touch, I do confess.

*King.* Our son shall win.

*Queen.* He's fat, and scant of breath.—

Here, Hamlet, take my napkin, rub thy brows :

<sup>8</sup> — the stoups of wine—] A *stoup* is a kind of *flagon*.

<sup>9</sup> And in the cup an union—] A species of pearl.

<sup>1</sup> — this pearl is thine ;] Under pretence of throwing a *pearl* into the cup, the King may be supposed to drop some poisonous drug into the wine. Hamlet seems to suspect this, when he afterwards discovers the effects of the poison, and tauntingly asks him, —“ Is the union here ?”



The queen carouses<sup>2</sup> to thy fortune, Hamlet.

*Ham.* Good madam,——

*King.* Gertrude, do not drink.<sup>3</sup>

*Queen.* I will, my lord ;—I pray you, pardon me.

*King.* It is the poison'd cup ; it is too late.

[*Aside.*

*Ham.* I dare not drink yet, madam ; by and by.

*Queen.* Come, let me wipe thy face.

*Laer.* My lord, I'll hit him now.

*King.* I do not think it.

*Laer.* And yet it is almost against my conscience.

[*Aside.*

*Ham.* Come, for the third, Laertes : You do but dally ;

I pray you, pass with your best violence ;

I am afeard, you make a wanton of me.<sup>3</sup>

*Laer.* Say you so ? come on. [*They play.*

*Osr.* Nothing neither way.

*Laer.* Have at you now.

[*LAERTES wounds HAMLET ; then, in scuffling, they change Rapiers, and HAMLET wounds LAERTES.*

*King.* Part them, they are incens'd.

*Ham.* Nay, come again. [*The Queen falls.*

*Osr.* Look to the queen there, ho !

*Hor.* They bleed on both sides :—How is it, my lord ?

*Osr.* How is't, Laertes ?

*Laer.* Why, as a woodcock to my own springe,  
Osric ;

I am justly kill'd with mine own treachery.

*Ham.* How does the queen ?

*King.* She swoons to see them bleed.

<sup>2</sup> *The queen carouses—*] i. e. (in humbler language) drinks good luck to you.

<sup>3</sup> *—— you make a wanton of me.*] You trifle with me as if you were playing with a child.

*Queen.* No, no, the drink, the drink,—O my dear Hamlet!—

The drink, the drink;—I am poison'd! [*Dies.*]

*Ham.* O villainy!—Ho! let the door be lock'd: Treachery! seek it out. [*LAERTES falls.*]

*Laer.* It is here, Hamlet: Hamlet, thou art slain; No medicine in the world can do thee good, In thee there is not half an hour's life; The treacherous instrument is in thy hand, Unbated, and envenom'd: the foul practice Hath turn'd itself on me; lo, here I lie, Never to rise again: Thy mother's poison'd; I can no more; the king, the king's to blame.

*Ham.* The point Envenom'd too!—Then, venom, to thy work. [*Stabs the King.*]

*Osr. & Lords.* Treason! treason!

*King.* O, yet defend me, friends, I am but hurt.

*Ham.* Here, thou incestuous, murd'rous, damned Dane,

Drink off this potion:—Is the union here?<sup>4</sup> Follow my mother. [*King dies.*]

*Laer.* He is justly serv'd; It is a poison temper'd by himself.— Exchange forgiveness with me, noble Hamlet: Mine and my father's death come not upon thee; Nor thine on me! [*Dies.*]

*Ham.* Heaven make thee free of it! I follow thee. I am dead, Horatio:—Wretched queen, adieu!— You that look pale and tremble at this chance, That are but mutes or audience to this act,<sup>5</sup>

<sup>4</sup> — *Is the union here?*] It should seem from this line, and *Laertes's* next speech, that Hamlet here forces the expiring King to drink some of the poisoned cup, and that he dies while it is at his lips.

<sup>5</sup> *That are but mutes or audience to this act,*] That are either *auditors* of this catastrophe, or at most only *mute performers*, that fill the stage without any part in the action.

Had I but time, (as this fell sergeant,<sup>6</sup> death,  
Is strict in his arrest,) O, I could tell you,—  
But let it be:—Horatio, I am dead;  
Thou liv'st; report me and my cause aright  
To the unsatisfied.

*Hor.* Never believe it;  
I am more an antique Roman than a Dane,  
Here's yet some liquor left.

*Ham.* As thou'rt a man,—  
Give me the cup; let go; by heaven I'll have it.—  
O God!—Horatio, what a wounded name,  
Things standing thus unknown, shall live behind me?  
If thou didst ever hold me in thy heart,  
Absent thee from felicity awhile,  
And in this harsh world draw thy breath in pain,  
To tell my story.—

[*March afar off, and Shot within.*  
What warlike noise is this?

*Osr.* Young Fortinbras, with conquest come from  
Poland,  
To the ambassadors of England gives  
This warlike volley.

*Ham.* O, I die, Horatio;  
The potent poison quite o'er-crows<sup>7</sup> my spirit;  
I cannot live to hear the news from England:  
But I do prophecy the election lights  
On Fortinbras; he has my dying voice;  
So tell him, with the occurrents,<sup>8</sup> more or less,  
Which have solicited,<sup>9</sup>—The rest is silence. [*Dies.*

*Hor.* Now cracks a noble heart;—Good night,  
sweet prince;

<sup>6</sup> — (as this fell sergeant,) A *serjeant* is a bailiff, or sheriff's officer.

<sup>7</sup> The potent poison quite o'er-crows—] Alluding to a victorious cock exulting over his conquered antagonist.

<sup>8</sup> — the occurrents,] i. e. incidents.

<sup>9</sup> Which have solicited,] Solicited for excited.

And flights of angels sing thee to thy rest !  
Why does the drum come hither ? [*March within.*

*Enter FORTINBRAS, the English Ambassadors, and Others.*

*Fort.* Where is this sight ?

*Hor.* What is it, you would see ?  
If aught of woe, or wonder, cease your search.

*Fort.* This quarry cries on havock !<sup>1</sup>—O proud death !

What feast is toward in thine eternal cell,<sup>2</sup>  
That thou so many princes, at a shot,  
So bloodily hast struck ?

1 *Amb.* The sight is dismal ;  
And our affairs from England come too late :  
The ears are senseless, that should give us hearing,  
To tell him, his commandment is fulfill'd,  
That Rosencrantz and Guildenstern are dead :  
Where should we have our thanks ?

*Hor.* Not from his mouth,<sup>3</sup>  
Had it the ability of life to thank you ;  
He never gave commandment for their death.  
But since, so jump upon this bloody question,  
You from the Polack wars, and you from England,  
Are here arriv'd ; give order, that these bodies  
High on a stage be placed to the view ;  
And let me speak, to the yet unknowing world,  
How these things come about : So shall you hear

<sup>1</sup> *This quarry cries on havock !]* To cry on, was to exclaim against. I suppose, when unfair sportsmen destroyed more quarry or game than was reasonable, the censure was to cry, *Havock*.

JOHNSON.

<sup>2</sup> *What feast is toward in thine eternal cell,]* An Allusion to the *Choæ*, or feasts of the dead, which were anciently celebrated at Athens, and are mentioned by Plutarch in *The Life of Antonius*.

<sup>3</sup> — his mouth,] i. e. the king's.

Of carnal, bloody, and unnatural acts ;<sup>4</sup>  
 Of accidental judgments, casual slaughters ;  
 Of deaths put on<sup>5</sup> by cunning, and forc'd cause ;  
 And, in this upshot, purposes mistook  
 Fall'n on the inventors' heads : all this can I  
 Truly deliver.

*Fort.* Let us haste to hear it,  
 And call the noblest to the audience.

For me, with sorrow I embrace my fortune ;  
 I have some rights of memory in this kingdom,<sup>6</sup>  
 Which now to claim my vantage doth invite me.

*Hor.* Of that I shall have also cause to speak,  
 And from his mouth whose voice will draw no more :  
 But let this same be presently perform'd,  
 Even while men's minds are wild ; lest more mis-  
 chance,

On plots, and errors, happen.

*Fort.* Let four captains  
 Bear Hamlet, like a soldier, to the stage ;  
 For he was likely, had he been put on,  
 To have prov'd most royally : and, for his passage,  
 The soldier's musick, and the rites of war,  
 Speak loudly for him.—  
 Take up the bodies :—Such a sight as this  
 Becomes the field, but here shows much amiss,  
 Go, bid the soldiers shoot. [*A dead March.*  
*[Exeunt, bearing off the dead Bodies ; after*  
*which, a Peal of Ordnance is shot off.]*

<sup>4</sup> *Of carnal, bloody, and unnatural acts ;*] *Of sanguinary and unnatural acts, to which the perpetrator was instigated by concupiscence, or, to use our poet's own words, by "carnal stings."* The speaker alludes to the murder of old Hamlet by his brother, previous to his incestuous union with Gertrude.

<sup>5</sup> *Of deaths put on—*] i. e. instigated, produced.

<sup>6</sup> — *some rights of memory in this kingdom,*] Some rights, which are remembered in this kingdom.

<sup>7</sup> If the dramas of Shakspeare were to be characterised, each by the particular excellence which distinguishes it from the rest,

we must allow to the tragedy of Hamlet the praise of variety. The incidents are so numerous, that the argument of the play would make a long tale. The scenes are interchangeably diversified with merriment and solemnity: with merriment that includes judicious and instructive observations; and solemnity not strained by poetical violence above the natural sentiments of man. New characters appear from time to time in continual succession, exhibiting various forms of life and particular modes of conversation. The pretended madness of Hamlet causes much mirth, the mournful distraction of Ophelia fills the heart with tenderness, and every personage produces the effect intended, from the apparition that in the first Act chills the blood with horror, to the fop in the last, that exposes affectation to just contempt.

The conduct is perhaps not wholly secure against objections. The action is indeed for the most part in continual progression, but there are some scenes which neither forward nor retard it. Of the feigned madness of Hamlet there appears no adequate cause, for he does nothing which he might not have done with the reputation of sanity. He plays the madman most, when he treats Ophelia with so much rudeness, which seems to be useless and wanton cruelty.

Hamlet is, through the whole piece, rather an instrument than an agent. After he has, by the stratagem of the play, convicted the King, he makes no attempt to punish him; and his death is at last effected by an incident which Hamlet had no part in producing.

The catastrophe is not very happily produced; the exchange of weapons is rather an expedient of necessity, than a stroke of art. A scheme might easily be formed to kill Hamlet with the dagger, and Laertes with the bowl.

The poet is accused of having shown little regard to poetical justice, and may be charged with equal neglect of poetical probability. The apparition left the regions of the dead to little purpose; the revenge which he demands is not obtained, but by the death of him that was required to take it; and the gratification, which would arise from the destruction of an usurper and a murderer, is abated by the untimely death of Ophelia, the young, the beautiful, the harmless, and the pious. JOHNSON.



# OTHELLO.\*

VOL. IX.

Y





\* OTHELLO.] The story is taken from *Cynthia's Novels*.

POPE.

I have not hitherto met with any translation of this novel (the seventh in the third decad) of so early a date as the age of Shakespeare; but undoubtedly many of those little pamphlets have perished between his time and ours.

It is highly probable that our author met with the name of *Othello* in some tale that has escaped our researches; as I likewise find it in Reynolds's *God's Revenge against Adultery*, standing in one of his Arguments as follows: "She marries *Othello*, an old German soldier." This History (the eighth) is professed to be an *Italian* one. Here also occurs the name of *Iago*.

It is likewise found, as Dr. Farmer observes, in "The History of the famous Euordanus Prince of Denmark, with the strange Adventures of IAGO Prince of Saxonie; bl.1. 4to. London, 1605."

It may indeed be urged that these names were adopted from the tragedy before us: but I trust that every reader who is conversant with the peculiar style and method in which the work of honest John Reynolds is composed, will acquit him of the slightest familiarity with the scenes of Shakespeare.

This play was first entered at Stationers' Hall, Oct. 6, 1621, by Thomas Walkely. STEEVENS.

I have seen a French translation of *Cynthia*, by Gabriel Chapuys, Par. 1584. This is not a faithful one; and I suspect, through this medium the work came into English. FARMER.

This tragedy I have ascribed (but on no very sure ground) to the year 1611. MALONE.

The time of this play may be ascertained from the following circumstances: Selymus the Second formed his design against Cyprus in 1569, and took it in 1571. This was the only attempt the Turks ever made upon that island after it came into the hands of the Venetians, (which was in the year 1473,) wherefore the time must fall in with some part of that interval. We learn from the play that there was a junction of the Turkish fleet at Rhodes, in order for the invasion of Cyprus, that it first came sailing towards Cyprus, then went to Rhodes, there met another squadron, and then resumed its way to Cyprus. These are real historical facts which happened when Mustapha, Selymus's general, attacked Cyprus in May, 1570, which therefore is the true period of this performance. See Knolles's *History of the Turks*, p. 838, 846, 867. REED.

## PERSONS REPRESENTED.

---

*Duke of Venice.*  
*Brabantio, a Senator.*  
*Two other Senators.*  
*Gratiano, Brother to Brabantio.*  
*Lodovico, Kinsman to Brabantio.*  
*Othello, the Moor :*  
*Cassio, his Lieutenant ;*  
*Iago, his Ancient.*  
*Roderigo, a Venetian Gentleman.*  
*Montano, Othello's Predecessor in the Government*  
*of Cyprus.\**  
*Clown, Servant to Othello.*  
*Herald.*  
*Desdemona, Daughter to Brabantio, and Wife to*  
*Othello.*  
*Emilia, Wife to Iago.*  
*Bianca, a Courtesan, Mistress to Cassio.*  
*Officers, Gentlemen, Messengers, Musicians, Sailors,*  
*Attendants, &c.*

*SCENE, for the first Act, in Venice ; during the*  
*rest of the Play, at a Sea-Port in Cyprus.*

\* Though the rank which Montano held in Cyprus cannot be exactly ascertained, yet from many circumstances, we are sure he had not the powers with which Othello was subsequently invested.

Perhaps we do not receive any one of the *Personæ Dramatis* to Shakspeare's plays, as it was originally drawn up by himself. These appendages are wanting to all the quartos, and are very rarely given in the folio. At the end of this play, however, the following enumeration of persons occurs :

" The names of the actors.—Othello, the Moore.—Brabantio, Father to Desdemona.—Cassio, an Honourable Lieutenant.—Iago, a Villaine.—Roderigo, a gull'd Gentleman.—Duke of Venice.—Senators.—Montano, Governour of Cyprus.—Gentlemen of Cyprus.—Lodovico, and Gratiano, two noble Venetians.—Sailors—Clowne.—Desdemona, Wife to Othello.—Emilia, Wife to Iago.—Bianca, a Curtesan." STEEVENS.

# OTHELLO, THE MOOR OF VENICE.

---

## ACT I.

SCENE I. Venice. *A Street.*

*Enter RODERIGO, and IAGO.*

*Rod.* Tush, never tell me, I take it much unkindly,  
That thou, Iago,—who hast had my purse,  
As if the strings were thine,—should'st know of this.

*Iago.* 'Sblood, but you will not hear me :—  
If ever I did dream of such a matter,  
Abhor me.

*Rod.* Thou told'st me, thou didst hold him in thy hate.

*Iago.* Despise me, if I do not. Three great ones  
of the city,  
In personal suit to make me his lieutenant,  
Oft capp'd to him :<sup>1</sup>—and, by the faith of man,  
I know my price, I am worth no worse a place :  
But he, as loving his own pride and purposes,  
Evades them, with a bombast circumstance,<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Oft capp'd to him ;] To cap is to salute by taking off the cap. It is still an academick phrase. M. MASON.

<sup>2</sup> — a bombast circumstance,] Circumstance signifies circumlocution.

Horribly stuff'd with epithets of war;  
 And, in conclusion, nonsuits  
 My mediators; *for, certes,*<sup>3</sup> says he,  
*I have already chose my officer.*  
 And what was he?  
 Forsooth, a great arithmetician,  
 One Michael Cassio, a Florentine,  
 A fellow almost damn'd in a fair wife;<sup>4</sup>  
 That never set a squadron in the field,  
 Nor the division of a battle knows  
 More than a spinster; unless the bookish theorick,<sup>5</sup>  
 Wherein the toged consuls<sup>6</sup> can propose  
 As masterly as he: mere prattle, without practice,  
 Is all his soldiership. But, he, sir, had the election:  
 And I,—of whom his eyes had seen the proof  
 At Rhodes, at Cyprus; and on other grounds  
 Christian and heathen,— must be be-lee'd and calm'd<sup>7</sup>  
 By debtor and creditor, this counter-caster;<sup>8</sup>  
 He, in good time, must his lieutenant be,  
 And I, (God bless the mark!<sup>9</sup>) his Moor-ship's  
 ancient.

<sup>3</sup> — *certes*,] i. e. certainly, in truth. Obsolete.

<sup>4</sup> *A fellow almost damn'd in a fair wife;*] This passage has been much contested. We adopt Mr. Steevens' explanation. That Cassio was married is not sufficiently implied in the words, *a fellow almost damn'd in a fair wife*, since they mean, according to Iago's licentious manner of expressing himself, no more than a man very near being married. This seems to have been the case in respect of Cassio.

<sup>5</sup> — *theorick*,] *Theorick*, for *theory*.

<sup>6</sup> *Wherein the toged consuls*—] The rulers of the state, or civil governours. By *toged* perhaps is meant *peaceable*, in opposition to the *warlike* qualifications of which he had been speaking. He might have formed the word in allusion to the Latin adage,—*Cedant arma togæ*.

<sup>7</sup> — *must be be-lee'd and calm'd*—] Terms of navigation.

<sup>8</sup> — *this counter-caster*;) It was anciently the practice to reckon up sums with *counters*.

<sup>9</sup> — *bless the mark!*] Kelly, in his comments on Scots proverbs, observes, that the Scots, when they compare person to person, use this exclamation.

*Rod.* By heaven, I rather would have been his hangman.

*Iago.* But there's no remedy, 'tis the curse of service ;

Preferment goes by letter,<sup>1</sup> and affection,  
Not by the old gradation, where each second  
Stood heir to the first. Now, sir, be judge yourself,  
Whether I in any just term am affin'd<sup>2</sup>  
To love the Moor.

*Rod.* I would not follow him ~~then~~.

*Iago.* O, sir, content you ;

I follow him to serve my turn upon him :  
We cannot all be masters, nor all masters  
Cannot be truly follow'd. You shall mark  
Many a duteous and knee-crooking knave,  
That, doting on his own obsequious bondage,  
Wears out his time, much like his master's ass,  
For nought but provender ; and, when he's old,  
cashier'd ;

Whip me such honest knaves :<sup>3</sup> Others there are,  
Who, trimm'd in forms and visages of duty,  
Keep yet their hearts attending on themselves ;  
And, throwing but shows of service on their lords,  
Do well thrive by them, and, when they have lin'd  
their coats,

Do themselves homage : these fellows have some  
soul ;

And such a one do I profess myself.

For, sir,

It is as sure as you are Roderigo,

Were I the Moor, I would not be Iago ;

<sup>1</sup> — by letter,] *By recommendation from powerful friends.*

<sup>2</sup> *Whether I in any just term am affin'd —] Do I stand within any such terms of propinquity, or relation to the Moor, as that it is my duty to love him?*

<sup>3</sup> — honest knaves:] *Knave is here for servant, but with a sly mixture of contempt.*

In following him, I follow but myself;  
 Heaven is my judge, not I for love and duty,  
 But seeming so, for my peculiar end:  
 For when my outward action doth demonstrate  
 The native act and figure of my heart  
 In compliment extern,<sup>4</sup> 'tis not long after  
 But I will wear my heart upon my sleeve  
 For daws to peck at: I am not what I am.

*Rod.* What a full fortune does the thick-lips owe,<sup>5</sup>  
 If he can carry't thus!

*Iago.* Call up her father,  
 Rouse him: make after him, poison his delight,  
 Proclaim him in the streets; incense her kinsmen,  
 And, though he in a fertile climate dwell,  
 Plague him with flies: though that his joy be joy,  
 Yet throw such changes of vexation on't,  
 As it may lose some colour.

*Rod.* Here is her father's house; I'll call aloud,

*Iago.* Do; with like timorous accent, and dire  
 yell,

As when, by night and negligence, the fire  
 Is spied in populous cities.

*Rod.* What ho! Brabantio! signior Brabantio, ho!

*Iago.* Awake! what, ho! Brabantio! thieves!  
 thieves! thieves!

Look to your house, your daughter, and your bags!  
 Thieves! thieves!

BRABANTIO, *above, at a Window.*

*Bra.* What is the reason of this terrible summons?  
 What is the matter there?

*Rod.* Signior, is all your family within?

<sup>4</sup> *In compliment extern,]* In that which I do only for an outward show of civility.

<sup>5</sup> *What a full fortune does the thick-lips owe,]* Full fortune is, a complete piece of good fortune. To owe is to possess.

*Iago.* Are your doors lock'd?

*Bra.* Why? wherefore ask you this?

*Iago.* 'Zounds, sir, you are robb'd; for shame,  
put on your gown;

Your heart is burst,<sup>6</sup> you have lost half your soul;

Even now, very now, an old black ram

Is tupping your white ewe. Arise, arise;

Awake the snorting citizens with the bell,

Or else the devil will make a grandsire of you:

Arise, I say.

*Bra.* What, have you lost your wits?

*Rod.* Most reverend signior, do you know my  
voice?

*Bra.* Not I; what are you?

*Rod.* My name is—Roderigo.

*Bra.* The worse welcome:  
I have charg'd thee, not to haunt about my doors:  
In honest plainness thou hast heard me say,  
My daughter is not for thee; and now, in madness,  
Being full of supper, and distempering draughts,<sup>7</sup>  
Upon malicious bravery, dost thou come  
To start my quiet.

*Rod.* Sir, sir, sir, sir,——

*Bra.* But thou must needs be sure,  
My spirit, and my place, have in them power  
To make this bitter to thee.

*Rod.* Patience, good sir.

*Bra.* What tell'st thou me of robbing? this is  
Venice;  
My house is not a grange.<sup>8</sup>

<sup>6</sup> — is burst,] i. e. broken.

<sup>7</sup> — distempering draughts,] To be distempered with liquor,  
was, in Shakspeare's age, the phrase for intoxication.

<sup>8</sup> — this is Venice;

*My house is not a grange.*] That is, "you are in a populous  
city, not in a lone house, where a robbery might easily be com-  
mitted." *Grange* is strictly and properly the farm of a monastery,



*Rod.* Most grave Brabantio,  
In simple, and pure soul I come to you.

*Iago.* 'Zounds, sir, you are one of those, that will not serve God, if the devil bid you. Because we come to do you service, you think we are ruffians: You'll have your daughter covered with a Barbary horse: you'll have your nephews neigh to you:<sup>9</sup> you'll have coursers for cousins, and gennets for germans.<sup>1</sup>

*Bra.* What profane wretch art thou?

*Iago.* I am one, sir, that comes to tell you, your daughter and the Moor are now making the beast with two backs.

*Bra.* Thou art a villain.

*Iago.* You are—a senator.

*Bra.* This thou shalt answer; ~~I~~ I know thee, Roderigo.

*Rod.* Sir, I will answer any thing. But I beseech you,

If't be your pleasure, and most wise consent,  
(As partly, I find, it is,) that your fair daughter,  
At this odd-even and dull watch o'the night,<sup>2</sup>  
Transported—with no worse nor better guard,  
But with a knave of common hire, a gondolier,  
To the gross clasps of a lascivious Moor,—

where the religious repositied their corn. *Grangia*, Lat. from *Granum*. But in Lincolnshire, and in other northern counties, they call every lone house, or farm which stands solitary, a *grange*.

<sup>9</sup> — your nephews neigh to you:] *Nephew*, in this instance, has the power of the Latin word *nepos*, and signifies a grandson, or any lineal descendant, however remote.

<sup>1</sup> — gennets for germans.] A *jennet* is a Spanish horse.

<sup>2</sup> At this odd-even and dull watch o'the night,] By this singular expression,—“this odd-even of the night,” our poet appears to have meant, that it was just approaching to, or just past, that it was doubtful whether at that moment it stood at the point of midnight, or at some other less equal division of the twenty-four hours; which a few minutes either before or after midnight would be.

If this be known to you, and your allowance,<sup>3</sup>  
 We then have done you bold and saucy wrongs ;  
 But, if you know not this, my manners tell me,  
 We have your wrong rebuke. Do not believe,  
 That, from the sense of all civility,<sup>4</sup>  
 I thus would play and trifle with your reverence:  
 Your daughter,—if you have not given her leave,  
 I say again, hath made a gross revolt ;  
 Tying her duty, beauty, wit, and fortunes,  
 In an extravagant<sup>5</sup> and wheeling stranger,  
 Of here and every where : Straight satisfy yourself:  
 If she be in her chamber, or your house,  
 Let loose on me the justice of the state  
 For thus deluding you.

*Bra.* Strike on the tinder, ho !  
 Give me a taper ;—call up all my people :—  
 This accident is not unlike my dream,  
 Belief of it oppresses me already :—  
 Light, I say ! light ! [*Exit, from above.*]

*Iago.* Farewell ; for I must leave you :  
 It seems not meet, nor wholesome to my place,  
 To be produc'd (as, if I stay, I shall,)  
 Against the Moor : For, I do know, the state,—  
 However this may gall him with some check,<sup>6</sup>—  
 Cannot with safety cast him ;<sup>7</sup> for he's embark'd  
 With such loud reason to the Cyprus' wars,  
 (Which even now stand in act,) that, for their souls,  
 Another of his fathom they have not,  
 To lead their business : in which regard,  
 Though I do hate him as I do hell pains,  
 Yet, for necessity of present life,

<sup>3</sup> — and your allowance,] i. e. done with your *approbation*.

<sup>4</sup> That, from the sense of all civility,] That is, in opposition to, or departing from, the sense of all civility.

<sup>5</sup> In an extravagant —] For wandering.

<sup>6</sup> — some check,] Some rebuke.

<sup>7</sup> — cast him ;] That is, dismiss him ; reject him.

I must show out a flag and sign of love,  
Which is indeed but sign. That you shall surely  
find him,  
Lead to the Sagittary the rais'd search;  
And there will I be with him. So, farewell.  
[Exit.]

*Enter, below, BRABANTIO, and Servants with  
Torches.*

*Bra.* It is too true an evil: gone she is;  
And what's to come of my despised time,\*  
Is nought but bitterness.—Now, Roderigo,  
Where didst thou see her?—O, unhappy girl!—  
With the Moor, say'st thou?—Who would be a fa-  
ther?—

How didst thou know 'twas she?—O, thou deceiv'st  
me

Past thought!—What said she to you?—Get more  
tapers;

Raise all my kindred.—Are they married think you?

*Rod.* Truly, I think, they are.

*Bra.* O heaven!—How got she out!—O treason  
of the blood!—

Fathers, from hence trust not your daughters' minds  
By what you see them act.—Are there not charms,  
By which the property of youth and maidhood  
May be abus'd? Have you not read, Roderigo,  
Of some such thing?

*Rod.* Yes, sir; I have indeed.

*Bra.* Call up my brother.—O, that you had had  
her!—

Some one way, some another.—Do you know  
Where we may apprehend her and the Moor?

\* *And what's to come of my despised time,] Despised time, is  
time of no value.*

*Rod.* I think, I can discover him; if you please  
To get good guard, and go along with me.

*Bra.* Pray you, lead on. At every house I'll call;  
I may command at most;—Get weapons, ho!  
And raise some special officers of night.—  
On, good Roderigo;—I'll deserve your pains.

**[Exeunt.]**

**SCENE II.**

*The same. Another Street.*

*Enter OTHELLO, IAGO, and Attendants.*

**Iago.** Though in the trade of war I have slain men,  
Yet do I hold it very stuff o'the conscience,<sup>9</sup>  
To do no contriv'd murder; I lack iniquity  
Sometimes, to do me service: Nine or ten times  
I had thought to have yerkd him here under the  
                ribs:

*Oth.* 'Tis better as it is.

*Iago.* Nay, but he prated,  
And spoke such scurvy and provoking terms  
Against your honour,  
That, with the little godliness I have,  
I did full hard forbear him. But, I pray, sir,  
Are you fast married? for, be sure of this,—  
That the magnifico<sup>1</sup> is much beloved;  
And hath, in his effect, a voice potential  
As double as the duke's; he will divorce you;  
Or put upon you what restraint and grievance

' — stuff o'the conscience,] This expression to common readers appears harsh. *Stuff* of the conscience is, *substance or essence* of the conscience. *Stuff* is a word of great force in the Teutonick languages. The elements are called in Dutch, *Hoefst stoffen*, or *head stuffs*. JOHNSON.

— the magnifico —] “The chief men of Venice are by a peculiar name called *Magnifici*, i. e. *magnificoes*.”

The law (with all his might, to enforce it on,) Will give him cable.

*Oth.* Let him do his spite :  
My services, which I have done the signiory,  
Shall out-tongue his complaints. 'Tis yet to know,  
(Which, when I know that boasting is an honour,  
I shall promulgate,) I fetch my life and being  
From men of royal siege;<sup>2</sup> and my demerits<sup>3</sup>  
May speak, unbonneted,<sup>4</sup> to as proud a fortune  
As this that I have reach'd : For know, Iago,  
But that I love the gentle Desdemona,  
I would not my unhoused<sup>5</sup> free condition  
Put into circumscription and confine  
For the sea's worth. But, look ! what lights come  
yonder ?

*Enter CASSIO, at a distance, and certain Officers with Torches.*

*Iago.* These are the raised father, and his friends :  
You were best go in.

*Oth.* Not I : I must be found ;  
My parts, my title, and my perfect soul,  
Shall manifest me rightly. Is it they ?

*Iago.* By Janus, I think no.

*Oth.* The servants of the duke, and my lieutenant.

<sup>2</sup> — men of royal siege ;] Men who have sat upon royal thrones. *Siege* is used for *seat* by other authors.

<sup>3</sup> — and my demerits —] *Demerits* has the same meaning in our author, and many others of that age, as *merits*.

<sup>4</sup> *May speak, unbonneted,*] Mr. Fuseli (and who is better acquainted with the sense and spirit of our author ?) explains this contested passage as follows :

" I am his equal or superior in rank ; and were it not so, such are my demerits, that, unbonneted, without the addition of patrician or senatorial dignity, they may speak to as proud a fortune, &c.

<sup>5</sup> — unhoused —] Free from domestic cares. A thought natural to an adventurer.

The goodness of the night upon you, friends!  
What is the news?

*Cas.* The duke does greet you, general;  
And he requires your haste-post-haste appearance,  
Even on the instant.

*Oth.* What is the matter, think you?

*Cas.* Something from Cyprus, as I may divine;  
It is a business of some heat: the gallies  
Have sent a dozen sequent messengers  
This very night at one another's heels;  
And many of the consuls, rais'd, and met,  
Are at the duke's already: You have been hotly  
call'd for;

When, being not at your lodging to be found,  
The senate hath sent about three several quests,<sup>6</sup>  
To search you out.

*Oth.* 'Tis well I am found by you.  
I will but spend a word here in the house,  
And go with you. [*Exit.*

*Cas.* Ancient, what makes he here?

*Iago.* 'Faith, he to-night hath boarded a land  
carack;<sup>7</sup>

If it prove lawful prize, he's made for ever.

*Cas.* I do not understand.

*Iago.* He's married.

*Cas.* To who?

*Re-enter OTHELLO.*

*Iago.* Marry, to—Come, captain, will you go?

*Oth.* Have with you.

*Cas.* Here comes another troop to seek for you.

<sup>6</sup> — three several *quests*,] *Quests* are, on this occasion, searches.

<sup>7</sup> — a land carack;] A *carack* is a ship of great bulk, and commonly of great value; perhaps what we now call a *galleon*.

*Enter BRABANTIO, RODERIGO, and Officers of night, with Torches and Weapons.*

*Iago.* It is Brabantio:—general, be advis'd;<sup>\*</sup>  
He comes to bad intent.

*Oth.* Hola! stand there!

*Rod.* Signior, it is the Moor.

*Bra.* Down with him; thief!  
[*They draw on both sides.*]

*Iago.* You, Roderigo! come, sir, I am for you.

*Oth.* Keep up your bright swords, for the dew  
will rust them.—

Good signior, you shall more command with years,  
That with your weapons.

*Bra.* O thou foul thief, where hast thou stow'd  
my daughter?

Damn'd as thou art, thou hast enchanted her:  
For I'll refer me to all things of sense,  
If she in chains of magick were not bound,  
Whether a maid—so tender, fair, and happy;  
So opposite to marriage, that she shunn'd  
The wealthy curled darlings of our nation,<sup>9</sup>  
Would ever have, to incur a general mock,  
Run from her guardage to the sooty bosom  
Of such a thing as thou: to fear, not to delight.<sup>1</sup>  
Judge me the world, if 'tis not gross in sense,  
That thou hast practis'd on her with foul charms;  
Abus'd her delicate youth with drugs, or minerals,  
That waken motion:<sup>2</sup>—I'll have it disputed on;  
'Tis probable, and palpable to thinking.  
I therefore apprehend and do attach thee,

\* — be advis'd:] That is, be cool; be cautious; be discreet.

<sup>9</sup> The wealthy curled darlings of our nation.] Curled is elegantly and ostentatiously dressed.

<sup>1</sup> Of such a thing as thou; to fear, not to delight.] To fear, in the present instance, may mean—to terrify.

<sup>2</sup> That waken motion:] Excite desires.

For an abuser of the world, a practiser  
Of arts inhibited and out of warrant :—  
Lay hold upon him ; if he do resist,  
Subdue him at his peril.

*Oth.* Hold your hands,  
Both you of my inclining, and the rest :  
Were it my cue to fight, I should have known it  
Without a prompter.—Where will you that I go  
To answer this your charge ?

*Bra.* To prison : till fit time  
Of law, and course of direct session,  
Call thee to answer.

*Oth.* What if I do obey ?  
How may the duke be therewith satisfied ;  
Whose messengers are here about my side,  
Upon some present business of the state,  
To bring me to him ?

*Off.* 'Tis true, most worthy signior,  
The duke's in council ; and your noble self,  
I am sure, is sent for.

*Bra.* How ! the duke in council !  
In this time of the night !—Bring him away :  
Mine's not an idle cause : the duke himself,  
Or any of my brothers of the state,  
Cannot but feel this wrong, as 'twere their own :  
For if such actions may have passage free,  
Bond-slaves, and pagans,<sup>3</sup> shall our statesmen be.

[*Excunt.*

<sup>3</sup> *Bond-slaves and pagans,*] i. e. if this Moor is now suffered to escape with impunity, it will be such an encouragement to his black countrymen, that we may expect to see all the first offices of our state filled up by the *pagans* and *bond-slaves* of Africa.



## SCENE III.

*The same. A Council-Chamber.*

*The Duke, and Senators, sitting at a Table; Officers attending.*

**Duke.** There is no composition<sup>4</sup> in these news,  
That gives them credit.

**1 Sen.** Indeed, they are disproportion'd;  
My letters say, a hundred and seven gallies.

**Duke.** And mine, a hundred and forty.

**2 Sen.** And mine, two hundred:  
But though they jump not on a just account,  
(As in these cases, where the aim reports,<sup>5</sup>  
'Tis oft with difference,) yet do they all confirm  
A Turkish fleet, and bearing up to Cyprus.

**Duke.** Nay, it is possible enough to judgment;  
I do not so secure me in the error,  
But the main article I do approve  
In fearful sense.

**Sailor.** [*Within.*] What ho! what ho! what ho!

*Enter an Officer, with a Sailor.*

**Off.** A messenger from the gallies.

**Duke.** Now? the business?

**Sail.** The Turkish preparation makes for Rhodes;  
So was I bid report here to the state,  
By signior Angelo.

**Duke.** How say you by this change?

**1 Sen.** This cannot be,

<sup>4</sup> *There is no composition —] for consistency, concordancy.*

<sup>5</sup> *— where the aim reports,] Where conjecture or suspicion tells the tale.*

***Enter a Messenger.***

1 *Sen.* Ay, so I thought:—How many, as you guess?

<sup>6</sup> *By no assay of reason ;]* Bring it to the *test*, examine it *by* reason as we examine metals by the *assay*, it will be found counterfeit by all trials.

<sup>7</sup> ——— *with more facile question* —] That is, he may carry it with less dispute, with less opposition.

<sup>8</sup> ——— warlike brace,] State of defence. To arm was called to brace on the armour.

<sup>9</sup> *To wake, and wage,*] *To wage* here, as in many other places in Shakspeare, signifies *to fight, to combat.*

And prays you to believe him.

*Duke.* 'Tis certain then for Cyprus.—

Marcus Lucchesé, is he not in town?

1 *Sen.* He's now in Florence.

*Duke.* Write from us ; wish him ' post-post-haste :  
despatch.

1 *Sen.* Here comes Brabantio, and the valiant  
Moor.

*Enter BRABANTIO, OTHELLO, IAGO, RODERIGO,  
and Officers.*

*Duke.* Valiant Othello, we must straight employ  
you

Against the general enemy Ottoman.

I did not see you ; welcome, gentle signior ;

[*To BRABANTIO.*

We lack'd your counsel and your help to night.

*Bra.* So did I yours : Good your grace, pardon me ;  
Neither my place, nor aught I heard of business,  
Hath rais'd me from my bed ; nor doth the general  
care

Take hold on me ; for my particular grief

Is of so flood-gate and o'erbearing nature,

That it engulfs and swallows other sorrows,

And it is still itself.

*Duke.* Why, what's the matter?

*Bra.* My daughter ! O, my daughter?

*Sen.* Dead?

*Bra.* Ay, to me ;

She is abus'd, stol'n from me, and corrupted

By spells and medicines bought of mountebanks :

For nature so preposterously to err,

Being not deficient, blind, or lame of sense,

Sans witchcraft could not—

*— wish him —* } i.e. recommend, desire him.

*Duke.* Whoe'er he be, that, in this foul proceeding,  
Hath thus beguil'd your daughter of herself,  
And you of her, the bloody book of law  
You shall yourself read in the bitter letter,  
After your own sense; yea, though our proper son  
Stood in your action.<sup>2</sup>

*Bra.* Humbly I thank your grace.  
Here is the man, this Moor; whom now, it seems,  
Your special mandate, for the state affairs,  
Hath hither brought.

*Duke & Sen.* We are very sorry for it.

*Duke.* What, in your own part, can you say to this?  
[*To OTHELLO.*

*Bra.* Nothing, but this is so.

*Oth.* Most potent, grave, and reverend signiors,  
My very noble and approv'd good masters,—  
That I have ta'en away this old man's daughter,  
It is most true; true, I have married her;  
The very head and front of my offending<sup>3</sup>  
Hath this extent, no more. Rude am I in my  
speech,

And little bless'd with the set phrase of peace;  
For since these arms of mine had seven years' pith,  
Till now some nine moons wasted, they have us'd  
Their dearest action<sup>4</sup> in the tented field;  
And little of this great world can I speak,  
More than pertains to feats of broil and battle;  
And therefore little shall I grace my cause,  
In speaking for myself: Yet, by your gracious pa-  
tience,  
I will a round unvarnish'd tale deliver

<sup>2</sup> *Stood in your action.*] Were the man exposed to your charge or accusation.

<sup>3</sup> *The very head and front of my offending —*] The main, the whole, unextenuated.

<sup>4</sup> *Their dearest action —*] i. e. their most important action.

Of my whole course of love; what drugs, what charms,

What conjuration, and what mighty magick,  
(For such proceeding I am charg'd withal,)  
I won his daughter with.

*Bra.*

A maiden never bold;  
Of spirit so still and quiet, that her motion  
Blush'd at herself; And she,—in spite of nature,  
Of years, of country, credit, every thing,—  
To fall in love with what she fear'd to look on?  
It is a judgment maim'd, and most imperfect,  
That will confess—perfection so could err  
Against all rules of nature; and must be driven  
To find out practices of cunning hell,  
Why this should be. I therefore vouch again,  
That with some mixtures powerful o'er the blood,  
Or with some dram conjur'd to this effect,  
He wrought upon her.

*Duke.*

To vouch this, is no proof;  
Without more certain and more overt test,<sup>5</sup>  
Than these thin habits, and poor likelihoods  
Of modern seeming,<sup>6</sup> do prefer against him.

1 *Sen.* But, Othello, speak;—

Did you by indirect and forced courses  
Subdue and poison this young maid's affections?  
Or came it by request, and such fair question  
As soul to soul affordeth?

*Oth.*

I do beseech you,  
Send for the lady to the Sagittary,<sup>7</sup>  
And let her speak of me before her father:  
If you do find me foul in her report,  
The trust, the office, I do hold of you,

<sup>5</sup> — overt test,] Open proofs, external evidence.

<sup>6</sup> Of modern seeming,] Weak show of slight appearance.

<sup>7</sup> — the Sagittary,] The *Sagittary* means the sign of the fictitious creature so called, i.e. an animal compounded of man and horse, and armed with a bow and quiver.

Not only take away; but let your sentence  
Even fall upon my life.

*Duke.* Fetch Desdemona hither.

*Oth.* Ancient, conduct them: you best know the  
place.—

[*Exeunt IAGO and Attendants.*]

And, till she come, as truly as to heaven  
I do confess the vices of my blood,  
So justly to your grave ears I'll present  
How I did thrive in this fair lady's love,  
And she in mine.

*Duke.* Say it, Othello.

*Oth.* Her father lov'd me; oft invited me;  
Still question'd me the story of my life,  
From year to year; the battles, sieges, fortunes,  
That I have pass'd.  
I ran it through, even from my boyish days,  
To the very moment that he bade me tell it.  
Wherein I spoke of most disastrous chances,  
Of moving accidents, by flood and field;  
Of hair-breadth scapes i' the imminent deadly breach;  
Of being taken by the insolent foe,  
And sold to slavery; of my redemption thence,  
And portance<sup>8</sup> in my travel's history:  
Wherein of antres<sup>9</sup> vast, and desarts idle,  
Rough quarries, rocks, and hills whose heads touch  
heaven,  
It was my hint to speak, such was the process;  
And of the Cannibals that each other eat,  
The Anthropophagi, and men whose heads  
Do grow beneath their shoulders.<sup>1</sup> These things to  
hear,

<sup>8</sup> *And portance*] *And behaviour.*

<sup>9</sup> *antres—*] *Caves and dens.*

<sup>1</sup> *men whose heads*

*Do grow beneath their shoulders,*] Of these men there is an  
account in the interpolated travels of Mandeville, a book of that



Take up this mangled matter at the best :  
Men do their broken weapons rather use,  
Than their bare hands.

*Bra.* I pray you, hear her speak ;  
If she confess, that she was half the wooer,  
Destruction on my head, if my bad blame  
Light on the man !—Come hither, gentle mistress ;  
Do you perceive in all this noble company,  
Where most you owe obedience ?

*Des.* My noble father,  
I do perceive here a divided duty :  
To you, I am bound for life, and education ;  
My life, and education, both do learn me  
How to respect you ; you are the lord of duty,  
I am hitherto your daughter : But here's my husband ;  
And so much duty as my mother show'd  
To you, preferring you before her father,  
So much I challenge that I may profess  
Due to the Moor, my lord.

*Bra.* God be with you !—I have done ;—  
Please it your grace, on to the state affairs ;  
I had rather to adopt a child, than get it.—  
Come hither, Moor :  
I here do give thee that with all my heart,  
Which, but thou hast already, with all my heart  
I would keep from thee.—For your sake, jewel,  
I am glad at soul I have no other child ;  
For thy escape would teach me tyranny,  
To hang clogs on them.—I have done, my lord.

*Duke.* Let me speak like yourself ;<sup>3</sup> and lay a sen-  
tence,  
Which, as a grise,<sup>4</sup> or step, may help these lovers  
Into your favour.

<sup>3</sup> *Let me speak like yourself ;*] i. e. let me speak as yourself  
would speak, were you not too much heated with passion.

<sup>4</sup> ——— as a grise,] Grize from *degrees*. A *grize* is a step.



When remedies are past, the griefs are ended;  
 By seeing the worst, which late on hopes depended.  
 To mourn a mischief that is past and gone,  
 Is the next way to draw new mischief on.  
 What cannot be preserv'd when fortune takes,  
 Patience her injury a mockery makes.  
 The robb'd, that smiles, steals something from the  
 thief;

He robs himself, that spends a bootless grief.

*Bra.* So let the Turk of Cyprus us beguile;  
 We lose it not, so long as we can smile.  
 He bears the sentence well, that nothing bears  
 But the free comfort which from thence he hears:<sup>5</sup>  
 But he bears both the sentence and the sorrow,  
 That, to pay grief, must of poor patience borrow.  
 These sentences, to sugar, or to gall,  
 Being strong on both sides, are equivocal:  
 But words are words; I never yet did hear,  
 That the bruis'd heart was pierced through the ear.<sup>6</sup>  
 I humbly beseech you, proceed to the affairs of state.

*Duke.* The Turk with a most mighty preparation  
 makes for Cyprus:—Othello, the fortitude of the  
 place is best known to you: And though we have  
 there a substitute of most allowed sufficiency, yet  
 opinion, a sovereign mistress of effects, throws a  
 more safer voice on you: you must therefore be  
 content to slubber the gloss of your new fortunes<sup>7</sup>

<sup>5</sup> *But the free comfort which from thence he hears:]* But the moral precepts of consolation, which are liberally bestowed on occasion of the sentence. JOHNSON.

<sup>6</sup> *But words are words; I never yet did hear*

*That the bruis'd heart was pierced through the ear.]* These moral precepts, says Brabantio, may perhaps be founded in wisdom, but they are of no avail. Words after all are but words; and I never yet heard that consolatory speeches could reach and penetrate the afflicted heart, through the medium of the ear.

<sup>7</sup> *— to slubber the gloss of your new fortunes—]* To slubber, on this occasion, is to obscure.

with this more stubborn and boisterous expedition.

*Oth.* The tyrant custom, most grave senators,  
Hath made the flinty and steel couch of war  
My thrice-driven bed of down:<sup>8</sup> I do agnize<sup>9</sup>  
A natural and prompt alacrity,  
I find in hardness; and do undertake  
These present wars against the Ottomites.  
Most humbly therefore bending to your state,  
I crave fit disposition for my wife;  
Due reference of place, and exhibition;<sup>1</sup>  
With such accommodation, and besort,  
As levels with her breeding.

*Duke.* If you please,  
Be't at her father's.

*Bra.* I'll not have it so.

*Oth.* Nor I.

*Des.* Nor I; I would not there reside,  
To put my father in impatient thoughts,  
By being in his eye. Most gracious duke,  
To my unfolding lend a gracious ear;  
And let me find a charter in your voice,<sup>2</sup>  
To assist my simpleness.

*Duke.* What would you, Desdemona?

*Des.* That I did love the Moor to live with him,  
My downright violence and storm of fortunes<sup>3</sup>

<sup>8</sup> — *thrice driven bed of down:*] A *driven* bed, is a bed for which the feathers are selected, by *driving* with a fan, which separates the light from the heavy.

<sup>9</sup> — *I do agnize* —] i. e. acknowledge, confess, avow.

<sup>1</sup> *I crave fit disposition for my wife;*

*Due reference of place, and exhibition; &c.]* I desire, that proper *disposition* be made for my wife, that she may have *precedency* and *revenue*, accommodation and *company*, suitable to her rank. *Exhibition* is allowance.

<sup>2</sup> — *a charter in your voice,*] Let your favour *privilege* me.

<sup>3</sup> *My downright violence and storm of fortunes* —] *Violence* is not *violence suffered*, but *violence acted*. Breach of common rules and obligations.

May trumpet to the world ; my heart's subdued  
 Even to the very quality of my lord :<sup>4</sup>  
 I saw Othello's visage in his mind ;<sup>5</sup>  
 And to his honours, and his valiant parts,  
 Did I my soul and fortunes consecrate.  
 So that, dear lords, if I be left behind,  
 A moth of peace, and he go to the war,  
 The rites, for which I love him, are bareft me,  
 And I a heavy interim shall support  
 By his dear absence : Let me go with him.

*Oth.* Your voices, lords :—"beseech you, let her  
 will

Have a free way.

Vouch with me, heaven ; I therefore beg it not,  
 To please the palate of my appetite ;  
 Nor to comply with heat, the young affects,  
 In my distinct and proper satisfaction ;  
 But to be free and bounteous to her mind :  
 And heaven defend<sup>6</sup> your good souls, that you think  
 I will your serious and great business scant,  
 For she is with me : No, when light-wing'd toys  
 Of feather'd Cupid seel with wanton dulness  
 My speculative and active instruments,<sup>7</sup>  
 That my disports corrupt and taint my business,  
 Let housewives make a skillet of my helm,  
 And all indign and base adversities

<sup>4</sup> *Even to, &c.*] *Quality* here means *profession*. "I am so much enamoured of Othello, that I am even willing to endure all the inconveniencies incident to a *military* life, and to attend him to the wars."

<sup>5</sup> *I saw Othello's visage in his mind ;*] It must raise no wonder, that I loved a man of an appearance so little engaging ; I saw his face only in his mind ; the greatness of his character reconciled me to his form.

<sup>6</sup> ——— *defend, &c.*] To *defend*, is to forbid.

<sup>7</sup> *My speculative and active instruments,*] *Speculative instruments*, in Shakespeare's language, are the *eyes* ; and *active instruments*, the *hands and feet*.

Make head against my estimation!

*Duke.* Be it as you shall privately determine,  
Either for her stay, or going: the affair cries—haste,  
And speed must answer it; you must hence to-night.

*Des.* To-night, my lord?

*Duke.* This night.

*Oth.* With all my heart.

*Duke.* At nine i'the morning here we'll meet again.  
*Othello,* leave some officers behind,  
And he shall our commission bring to you;  
With such things else of quality and respect,  
As doth import you.

*Oth.* Please your grace, my ancient;  
A man he is of honesty, and trust:  
To his conveyance I assign my wife,  
With what else needful your good grace shall think  
To be sent after me.

*Duke.* Let it be so.—  
Good night to every one.—And, noble signior,  
[*To BRABANTIO.*

If virtue no delighted beauty lack,<sup>8</sup>  
Your son-in-law is far more fair than black.

*1 Sen.* Adieu, brave Moor! use Desdemona well.

*Bra.* Look to her, Moor; have a quick eye to  
see;

She has deceiv'd her father, and may thee.

[*Exeunt Duke, Senators, Officers, &c.*

*Oth.* My life upon her faith.—Honest Iago,  
My Desdemona must I leave to thee;  
I pry thee, let thy wife attend on her;  
And bring them after in the best advantage.<sup>9</sup>—  
Come, Desdemona, I have but an hour

<sup>8</sup> [*If virtue no delighted beauty lack,*] The meaning probably is, if virtue comprehends every thing in itself, then your virtuous son-in-law of course is beautiful: he has that beauty which delights every one. *Delighted, for delighting.*

<sup>9</sup> — *best advantage.*] Fairest opportunity.

Of love, of worldly matters and direction,  
To spend with thee : we must obey the time.

[*Exeunt OTHELLO and DESDEMONA.*]

*Rod.* Iago.

*Iago.* What say'st thou, noble heart?

*Rod.* What will I do, thinkest thou?

*Iago.* Why, go to bed, and sleep.

*Rod.* I will incontinently drown myself.

*Iago.* Well, if thou dost, I shall never love thee after it. Why, thou silly gentleman!

*Rod.* It is silliness to live, when to live is a torment : and then have we a prescription to die, when death is our physician.

*Iago.* O villainous ! I have looked upon the world for four times seven years ! and since I could distinguish between a benefit and an injury, I never found a man that knew how to love himself. Ere I would say, I would drown myself for the love of a Guinea-hen,<sup>1</sup> I would change my humanity with a baboon.

*Rod.* What should I do ? I confess, it is my shame to be so fond ; but it is not in virtue to amend it.

*Iago.* Virtue ? a fig ! 'tis in ourselves, that we are thus, or thus. Our bodies are our gardens ; to the which, our wills are gardeners : so that if we will plant nettles, or sow lettuce ; set hyssop, and weed up thyme ; supply it with one gender of herbs, or distract it with many ; either to have it steril with idleness, or manured with industry ; why, the power and corrigible authority of this lies in our wills. If the balance of our lives had not one scale of reason to poise another of sensuality, the blood and baseness of our natures would conduct us to most preposterous conclusions : But we have reason to cool our raging motions, our carnal stings, our

<sup>1</sup> — a Guinea-hen,] A Guinea-hen was anciently the cant term for a prostitute.

unbitted lusts ; whereof I take this, that you call—love, to be a sect,<sup>2</sup> or scion.

*Rod.* It cannot be.

*Iago.* It is merely a lust of the blood, and a permission of the will. Come, be a man : Drown thyself? drown cats, and blind puppies. I have professed me thy friend, and I confess me knit to thy deserving with cables of perdurable toughness ; I could never better stead thee than now. Put money in thy purse ; follow these wars ; defeat thy favour with an usurped beard ;<sup>3</sup> I say, put money in thy purse. It cannot be, that Desdemona should long continue her love to the Moor,—put money in thy purse ;—nor he his to her : it was a violent commencement, and thou shalt see an answerable sequestration ;<sup>4</sup>—put but money in thy purse.—These Moors are changeable in their wills ;—fill thy purse with money ; the food that to him now is as luscious as locusts, shall be to him shortly as bitter as coliquintida. She must change for youth : when she is sated with his body, she will find the error of her choice.—She must have change, she must : therefore put money in thy purse.—If thou wilt needs damn thyself, do it a more delicate way than drowning. Make all the money thou canst : If sanctimony and a frail vow, betwixt an erring barbarian<sup>5</sup> and a supersubtle Venetian, be not too hard for my wits, and all the tribe of hell, thou shalt enjoy her ; therefore make money. A pox of drowning thy-

<sup>2</sup> — a sect,] A *sect* is what the more modern gardeners call a *cutting*.

<sup>3</sup> — defeat *thy* favour with an *usurped beard* ;] *Favour* here means that combination of features which gives the face its distinguishing character. *Defeat*, from *defaire*, in French, signifies to unmake, decompose, or give a different appearance to, either by taking away something, or adding.

<sup>4</sup> — an *answerable* sequestration ;] for *separation*.

<sup>5</sup> — betwixt an *erring barbarian* —] i. e. wandering.

self! it is clean out of the way: seek thou rather to be hanged in compassing thy joy, than to be drowned and go without her.

*Rod.* Wilt thou be fast to my hopes, if I depend on the issue?

*Iago.* Thou art sure of me;—Go, make money:—I have told thee often, and I re-tell thee again and again, I hate the Moor: My cause is hearted; thine hath no less reason: Let us be conjunctive in our revenge against him: if thou canst cuckold him, thou dost thyself a pleasure, and me a sport. There are many events in the womb of time, which will be delivered. Traversc;<sup>6</sup> go; provide thy money. We will have more of this to-morrow. Adieu.

*Rod.* Where shall we meet i'the morning?

*Iago.* At my lodging.

*Rod.* I'll be with thee betimes.

*Iago.* Go to; farewell. Do you hear, Roderigo?

*Rod.* What say you?

*Iago.* No more of drowning, do you hear.

*Rod.* I am changed. I'll sell all my land.

*Iago.* Go to; farewell: put money enough in your purse. [Exit RODERIGO.]

Thus do I ever make my fool my purse:  
For I mine own gain'd knowledge should profane,  
If I would time expend with such a snipe,  
But for my sport and profit. I hate the Moor;  
And it is thought abroad, that 'twixt my sheets  
He has done my office: I know not if't be true;  
But I, for mere suspicion in that kind,  
Will do, as if for surety.<sup>7</sup> He holds me well;<sup>8</sup>  
The better shall my purpose work on him.

<sup>6</sup> *Traverse*;] This was an ancient military word of command.

<sup>7</sup> — as if for surety.] That is, "I will act as if I were certain of the fact."

<sup>8</sup> — He holds me well;] i. e. esteems me.

Cassio's a proper man : Let me see now ;  
 To get his place, and to plume up my will ;  
 A double knavery,—How? how?—Let me see :—  
 After some time, to abuse Othello's ear,  
 That he is too familiar with his wife :—  
 He hath a person, and a smooth dispose,  
 To be suspected ; fram'd to make women false.  
 The Moor is of a free and open nature,  
 That thinks men honest, that but seem to be so ;  
 And will as tenderly be led by the nose,  
 As asses are.  
 I have't ;—it is engender'd :—Hell and night  
 Must bring this monstrous birth to the world's light.  
 [Exit.]

## ACT II.

SCENE I. *A Sea-port Town in Cyprus. A Platform.*

*Enter MONTANO and Two Gentlemen.*

*Mon.* What from the cape can you discern at sea?  
*1 Gent.* Nothing at all : it is a high-wrought  
 flood ;

I cannot, 'twixt the heaven and the main,  
 Descry a sail.

*Mon.* Methinks, the wind hath spoke aloud at  
 land ;

A fuller blast ne'er shook our battlements :  
 If it hath ruffian'd so upon the sea,  
 What ribs of oak, when mountains melt on them,  
 Can hold the mortise? what shall we hear of this?

*2 Gent.* A segregation of the Turkish fleet :  
 For do but stand upon the foaming shore,  
 The chiding billow seems to pelt the clouds ;



The wind-shak'd surge, with high and monstrous  
 main,  
 Seems to cast water on the burning bear,  
 And quench the guards of the ever-fixed pole :<sup>9</sup>  
 I never did like molestation view  
 On th' enchafed flood.

*Mon.* If that the Turkish fleet  
 Be not inshelter'd and embay'd, they are drown'd ;  
 It is impossible they bear it out.

*Enter a third Gentleman.*

*3 Gent.* News, lords ! our wars are done ;  
 The desperate tempest hath so bang'd the Turks,  
 That their designment halts : A noble ship of Venice  
 Hath seen a grievous wreck and sufferance  
 On most part of their fleet.

*Mon.* How ! is this true ?

*3 Gent.* The ship is here put in,  
 A Veronesé ; Michael Cassio,  
 Lieutenant to the warlike Moor, Othello,  
 Is come on shore : the Moor himself's at sea,  
 And is in full commission here for Cyprus.

*Mon.* I am glad on't ; 'tis a worthy governor.

*3 Gent.* But this same Cassio,—though he speak  
 of comfort,  
 Touching the Turkish loss,—yet he looks sadly,  
 And prays the Moor be safe ; for they were parted  
 With foul and violent tempest.

*Mon.* 'Pray heaven he be ;  
 For I have serv'd him, and the man commands  
 Like a full soldier.<sup>1</sup> Let's to the sea-side, ho !  
 As well to see the vessel that's come in,  
 As throw out our eyes for brave Othello ;

<sup>9</sup> *And quench the guards of the ever-fixed pole :*] Alluding to the star *Arctophylax*.

<sup>1</sup> *Like a full soldier.*] Like a complete soldier.

Even till we make the main, and the aerial blue,  
An indistinct regard.

3 *Gent.* Come, let's do so;  
For every minute is expectancy  
Of more arrivance.

*Enter CASSIO.*

*Cas.* Thanks to the valiant of this warlike isle,  
That so approve the Moor; O, let the heavens  
Give him defence against the elements,  
For I have lost him on a dangerous sea!

*Mon.* Is he well shipp'd?

*Cas.* His bark is stoutly timber'd, and his pilot  
Of very expert and approv'd allowance;<sup>2</sup>  
Therefore my hopes, not surfeited to death,  
Stand in bold cure.<sup>3</sup>

[*Within.*] A sail, a sail, a sail!

*Enter another Gentleman.*

*Cas.* What noise?

4 *Gent.* The town is empty; on the brow o'the sea  
Stand ranks of people, and they cry—a sail.

*Cas.* My hopes do shape him for the governour.

2 *Gent.* They do discharge their shot of cour-  
tesy: [*Guns heard.*]

Our friends, at least.

*Cas.* I pray you, sir, go forth,  
And give us truth who 'tis that is arriv'd.

2 *Gent.* I shall.

[*Exit.*]

<sup>2</sup> *Of very expert and approv'd allowance;* ] *Expert and approv'd allowance* is put for *allow'd and approv'd expertness*. This mode of expression is not unfrequent in Shakspeare.

<sup>3</sup> *Therefore my hopes, not surfeited to death,*

*Stand in bold cure.*] Presumptuous hopes, which have no foundation in probability, may poetically be said to surfeit themselves to death, or forward their own dissolution. To *stand in bold cure*, is to erect themselves in confidence of being fulfilled.

*Mon.* But, good lieutenant, is your general wiv'd?

*Cas.* Most fortunately : he hath achiev'd a maid  
That paragon's description, and wild fame ;  
One that excels the quirks of blazoning pens,  
And in the essential vesture of creation,  
Does bear all excellency. '—How now ? who has put  
in ?

*Re-enter second Gentleman.*

*2 Gent.* 'Tis one Iago, ancient to the general.

*Cas.* He has had most favourable and happy  
speed :  
Tempests themselves, high seas, and howling winds,  
The gutter'd rocks, and congregated sands,—  
Traitors ensteep'd to clog the guiltless keel,  
As having sense of beauty, do omit  
Their mortal natures,<sup>5</sup> letting go safely by  
The divine Desdemona.

*Mon.*

What is she ?

*Cas.* She that I spake of, our great captain's  
captain,  
Left in the conduct of the bold Iago ;  
Whose footing here anticipates our thoughts,  
A se'nnight's speed.—Great Jove, Othello guard,  
And swell his sail with thine own powerful breath ;  
That he may bless this bay with his tall ship,  
Make love's quick pants in Desdemona's arms,  
Give renew'd fire to our extincted spirits,  
And bring all Cyprus comfort !—O, behold,

<sup>4</sup> *And in the essential vesture of creation,  
Does bear all excellency.*] The author seems to use *essential*,  
for *existent*, *real*. She excels the praises of invention, says he,  
and in *real* qualities, with which *creation* has invested her, *bears all*  
*excellency*.

<sup>5</sup> *Their mortal natures,*] i. e. their *deadly*, *destructive* natures.

*Enter DESDEMONA, EMILIA, IAGO, RODERIGO,  
and Attendants.*

The riches of the ship is come on shore !  
Ye men of Cyprus, let her have your knees :—  
Hail to thee, lady ! and the grace of heaven,  
Before, behind thee, and on every hand,  
Enwheel thee round !

*Des.* I thank you, valiant Cassio.  
What tidings can you tell me of my lord ?

*Cas.* He is not yet arriv'd ; nor know I aught  
But that he's well, and will be shortly here.

*Des.* O, but I fear ;—How lost you company ?

*Cas.* The great contention of the sea and skies  
Parted our fellowship : But, hark ! a sail.

[*Cry within, A sail, a sail ! Then Guns heard.*

*2 Gent.* They give their greeting to the citadel ;  
This likewise is a friend.

*Cas.* See for the news.—

[*Exit Gentleman.*

Good ancient, you are welcome ;—Welcome, mis-  
tress :—

[*To EMILIA.*

Let it not gall your patience, good Iago,  
That I extend my manners ; 'tis my breeding  
That gives me this bold show of courtesy.

[*Kissing her.*

*Iago.* Sir, would she give you so much of her lips,  
As of her tongue she oft bestows on me,  
You'd have enough.

*Des.* Alas, she has no speech.

*Iago.* In faith, too much ;  
I find it still, when I have list to sleep :  
Marry, before your ladyship, I grant,  
She puts her tongue a little in her heart,  
And chides with thinking.

*Emil.* You have little cause to say so.

*Iago.* Come on, come on ; you are pictures out of doors,  
 Bells in your parlours, wild cats in your kitchens,  
 Saints in your injuries,<sup>6</sup> devils being offended,  
 Players in your housewifery, and housewives in your beds.

*Des.* O, fye upon thee, slanderer !

*Iago.* Nay, it is true, or else I am a Turk ;  
 You rise to play, and go to bed to work.

*Emil.* You shall not write my praise.

*Iago.* No, let me not.

*Des.* What would'st thou write of me, if thou should'st praise me ?

*Iago.* O gentle lady, do not put me to't ;  
 For I am nothing, if not critical.<sup>7</sup>

*Des.* Come on, assay :—There's one gone to the harbour ?

*Iago.* Ay, madam.

*Des.* I am not merry ; but I do beguile  
 The thing I am, by seeming otherwise.—  
 Come, how would'st thou praise me ?

*Iago.* I am about it ; but, indeed, my invention  
 Comes from my pate, as birdlime does from frize,  
 It plucks out brains and all : But my muse labours,  
 And thus she is deliver'd.

If she be fair and wise,—fairness, and wit,  
 The one's for use, the other useth it.

*Des.* Well prais'd ! How if she be black and witty ?

*Iago.* If she be black, and thereto have a wit,  
 She'll find a white that shall her blackness fit.

*Des.* Worse and worse.

*Emil.* How, if fair and foolish ?

<sup>6</sup> *Saints in your injuries, &c.*] When you have a mind to do injuries, you put on an air of sanctity.

<sup>7</sup> ——— *critical.*] That is, censorious.

*Iago.* She never yet was foolish that was fair ;  
For even her folly help'd her to an heir.

*Des.* These are old fond paradoxes, to make fools  
laugh i'the alehouse. What miserable praise hast  
thou for her that's foul and foolish ?

*Iago.* There's none so foul, and foolish thereunto,  
But does foul pranks which fair and wise ones do.

*Des.* O heavy ignorance !—thou praisest the worst  
best. But what praise could'st thou bestow on a  
deserving woman indeed ? one, that, in the autho-  
rity of her merit, did justly put on the vouch of  
very malice itself ?<sup>8</sup>

*Iago.* She that was ever fair, and never proud ;  
Had tongue at will, and yet was never loud ;  
Never lack'd gold, and yet went never gay ;  
Fled from her wish, and yet said,—*now I may* ;  
She that, being anger'd, her revenge being nigh,  
Bade her wrong stay, and her displeasure fly :  
She that in wisdom never was so frail,  
To change the cod's head for the salmon's tail ;  
She that could think, and ne'er disclose her mind,  
See suitors following, and not look behind ;  
She was a wight,—if ever such wight were,—

*Des.* To do what ?

*Iago.* To suckle fools, and chronicle small beer.

*Des.* O most lame and impotent conclusion !—  
Do not learn of him, Emilia, though he be thy  
husband.—How say you, Cassio ? is he not a most  
profane<sup>9</sup> and liberal counsellor ?<sup>1</sup>

<sup>8</sup> — one, that, in the authority of her merit, did justly put on the vouch of very malice itself ?] The sense is this, one that was so conscious of her own merit, and of the authority her character had with every one, that she durst venture to call upon malice itself to vouch for her.

<sup>9</sup> — profane —] Gross of language, of expression broad and brutal.

<sup>1</sup> — liberal counsellor ?] Liberal for licentious.

*Cas.* He speaks home, madam ; you may relish him more in the soldier, than in the scholar.

*Iago.* [*Aside.*] He takes her by the palm : Ay, well said, whisper : with as little a web as this, will I ensnare as great a fly as Cassio. Ay, smile upon her, do ; I will gyve<sup>2</sup> thee in thine own courtship. You say true ; 'tis so, indeed : if such tricks as these strip you out of your lieutenantry, it had been better you had not kissed your three fingers so oft, which now again you are most apt to play the sir in.<sup>3</sup> Very good ; well kissed ! an excellent courtesy !<sup>4</sup> 'tis so, indeed. Yet again your fingers to your lips ? would, they were clyster-pipes for your sake !——  
[*Trumpet.*] The Moor, I know his trumpet.

*Cas.* 'Tis truly so.

*Des.* Let's meet him, and receive him.

*Cas.* Lo, where he comes !

*Enter OTHELLO, and Attendants.*

*Oth.* O my fair warrior !

*Des.* My dear Othello ?

*Oth.* It gives me wonder great as my content,  
To see you here before me. O my soul's joy !  
If after every tempest come such calms,  
May the winds blow till they have waken'd death !  
And let the labouring bark climb hills of seas,  
Olympus-high ; and duck again as low  
As hell's from heaven ! If it were now to die,  
'Twere now to be most happy ; for, I fear,  
My soul hath her content so absolute,  
That not another comfort like to this  
Succeeds in unknown fate.

<sup>2</sup> ——— *I will gyve* —] i. e. catch, shackle.

<sup>3</sup> ——— *to play the sir in.*] That is, to show your good breeding and gallantry.

<sup>4</sup> ——— *well kissed ! an excellent courtesy !*] Spoken when Cassio kisses his hand, and Desdemona courtsies.

*Des.* The heavens forbid,  
But that our loves and comforts should increase,  
Even as our days do grow !

*Oth.* Amen to that, sweet powers !—  
I cannot speak enough of this content,  
It stops me here ; it is too much of joy :  
And this, and this, the greatest discords be,  
[*Kissing her.*

That e'er our hearts shall make !

*Iago.* O, you are well tun'd now !  
But I'll set down the pegs that make this musick,  
As honest as I am. [Aside.

*Oth.* Come, let's to the castle.—  
News, friends ; our wars are done, the Turks are  
drown'd.

How do our old acquaintance of this isle ?  
Honey, you shall be well desir'd in Cyprus,<sup>5</sup>  
I have found great love amongst them. O my sweet,  
I prattle out of fashion,<sup>6</sup> and I dote  
In mine own comforts.—I pr'ythee, good Iago,  
Go to the bay, and disembark my coffers :  
Bring thou the master to the citadel ;  
He is a good one, and his worthiness  
Does challenge much respect.—Come, Desdemona,  
Once more well met at Cyprus.

[*Exeunt OTHELLO, DESDEMONA, and Attendants.*

*Iago.* Do thou meet me presently at the harbour.  
Come hither. If thou be'st valiant as (they say)  
base men, being in love, have then a nobility in  
their natures more than is native to them,—list me.  
The lieutenant to-night watches on the court of

<sup>5</sup> — well desir'd in Cyprus,] i. e. much solicited by invitation.

<sup>6</sup> I prattle out of fashion,] Out of method, without any settled order of discourse.



guard :<sup>7</sup>—First, I must tell thee this—Desdemona is directly in love with him.

*Rod.* With him! why, 'tis not possible.

*Iago.* Lay thy finger—thus, and let thy soul be instructed. Mark me with what violence she first loved the Moor, but for bragging, and telling her fantastical lies: And will she love him still for prating? let not thy discreet heart think it. Her eye must be fed; and what delight shall she have to look on the devil? When the blood is made dull with the act of sport, there should be,—again to inflame it, and to give satiety a fresh appetite,—loveliness in favour; sympathy in years, manners, and beauties; all which the Moor is defective in: Now, for want of these required conveniences, her delicate tenderness will find itself abused, begin to heave the gorge, disrelish and abhor the Moor; very nature will instruct her in it, and compel her to some second choice. Now, sir, this granted, (as it is a most pregnant and unforced position,) who stands so eminently in the degree of this fortune as Cassio does? a knave very voluble; no further conscionable, than in putting on the mere form of civil and humane seeming, for the better compassing of his salt and most hidden loose affection? why, none; why, none: A slippery and subtle knave; a finder out of occasions; that has an eye can stamp and counterfeit advantages, though true advantage never present itself: A devilish knave! besides, the knave is handsome, young; and hath all those requisites in him, that folly and green minds<sup>8</sup> look after: A pestilent complete knave; and the woman hath found him already.

<sup>7</sup> — the court of guard :] i. e. the place where the guard musters.

<sup>8</sup> — green minds—] Minds unripe, minds not yet fully formed.

*Rod.* I cannot believe that in her; she is full of most blessed condition.<sup>9</sup>

*Iago.* Blessed fig's end! the wine she drinks is made of grapes: if she had been blessed, she would never have loved the Moor: Blessed pudding! Didst thou not see her paddle with the palm of his hand? didst not mark that?

*Rod.* Yes, that I did; but that was but courtesy.

*Iago.* Lechery, by this hand; an index, and obscure prologue to the history of lust and foul thoughts. They met so near with their lips, that their breaths embraced together. Villainous thoughts, Roderigo! when these mutualities so marshal the way, hard at hand comes the master and main exercise, the incorporate conclusion: Pish!—But, sir, be you ruled by me: I have brought you from Venice. Watch you to-night; for the command, I'll lay't upon you: Cassio knows you not;—I'll not be far from you: Do you find some occasion to anger Cassio, either by speaking too loud, or tainting<sup>1</sup> his discipline; or from what other course you please, which the time shall more favourably minister.

*Rod.* Well.

*Iago.* Sir, he is rash, and very sudden in choler;<sup>2</sup> and, haply, with his truncheon may strike at you: Provoke him, that he may: for, even out of that, will I cause these of Cyprus to mutiny; whose qualification shall come into no true taste again,<sup>3</sup> but by the displanting of Cassio. So shall you have a shorter journey to your desires, by the means I shall

<sup>9</sup> — condition.] Qualities, disposition of mind.

<sup>1</sup> — tainting—] Throwing a slur upon his discipline.

<sup>2</sup> — sudden in choler;] *Sudden*, is precipitately violent.

<sup>3</sup> — whose qualification shall come, &c.] Whose resentment shall not be so *qualified* or *tempered*, as to be *well tasted*, as not to retain some bitterness. The phrase is harsh, at least to our ears.

then have to prefer them;<sup>4</sup> and the impediment most profitably removed, without the which there were no expectation of our prosperity.

*Rod.* I will do this, if I can bring it to any opportunity.

*Iago.* I warrant thee. Meet me by and by at the citadel: I must fetch his necessaries ashore. Farewell.

*Rod.* Adieu.

[*Exit.*

*Iago.* That Cassio loves her, I do well believe it; That she loves him, 'tis apt, and of great credit: The Moor—howbeit that I endure him not,— Is of a constant, loving, noble nature; And, I dare think, he'll prove to Desdemona A most dear husband. Now I do love her too; Not out of absolute lust, (though, peradventure, I stand accountant for as great a sin,) But partly led to diet my revenge, For that I do suspect the lusty Moor Hath leap'd into my seat: the thought whereof Doth, like a poisonous mineral, gnaw my inwards; And nothing can or shall content my soul, Till I am even with him, wife for wife; Or, failing so, yet that I put the Moor At least into a jealousy so strong That judgment cannot cure. Which thing to do,— If this poor trash of Venice, whom I trash<sup>5</sup> For his quick hunting, stand the putting on, I'll have our Michael Cassio on the hip; Abuse him to the Moor in the rank garb,<sup>6</sup>—

<sup>4</sup> — to prefer them;] i. e. to advance them.

<sup>5</sup> If this poor trash of Venice, whom I trash—] To trash, is still a hunter's phrase, and signifies to fasten a weight on the neck of a dog, when his speed is superior to that of his companions.

<sup>6</sup> — in the rank garb,] i. e. grossly, without mincing the matter,

For I fear Cassio with my night-cap too ;  
 Make the Moor thank me, love me, and reward me,  
 For making him egregiously an ass,  
 And practising upon his peace and quiet  
 Even to madness. 'Tis here, but yet confus'd ?  
 Knavery's plain face is never seen,<sup>7</sup> till us'd.

[*Exit.*

## SCENE II.

*A Street.*

*Enter a Herald, with a Proclamation ; People following.*

*Her.* It is Othello's pleasure, our noble and valiant general, that, upon certain tidings now arrived, importing the mere<sup>8</sup> perdition of the Turkish fleet, every man put himself into triumph : some to dance, some to make bonfires, each man to what sport and revels his addiction leads him ; for, besides these beneficial news, it is the celebration of his nuptials : So much was his pleasure should be proclaimed. All offices are open ;<sup>9</sup> and there is full liberty of feasting, from this present hour of five, till the bell hath told eleven. Heaven bless the isle of Cyprus, and our noble general, Othello !

[*Exeunt.*

<sup>7</sup> *Knavery's plain face is never seen,*] An honest man acts upon a plan, and forecasts his designs ; but a knave depends upon temporary and local opportunities, and never knows his own purpose, but at the time of execution. JOHNSON.

<sup>8</sup> — mere—] *Mere* in this place signifies *entire*.

<sup>9</sup> *All offices are open ;*] i. e. all rooms, or places, in the castle, at which refreshments are prepared, or served out.

## SCENE III.

*A Hall in the Castle.*

*Enter* OTHELLO, DESDEMONA, CASSIO, and *Attendants.*

*Oth.* Good Michael, look you to the guard to-night:

Let's teach ourselves that honourable stop,  
Not to out-sport discretion.

*Cas.* Iago hath direction what to do;  
But, notwithstanding, with my personal eye  
Will I look to't.

*Oth.* Iago is most honest.  
Michael, good night: To-morrow, with our earliest,  
Let me have speech with you.—Come, my dear love,  
The purchase made, the fruits are to ensue;

[*To DESDEMONA.*  
That profit's yet to come 'twixt me and you.—  
Good night. [*Exeunt* OTH. DES. and *Attend.*

*Enter* IAGO.

*Cas.* Welcome, Iago: We must to the watch.

*Iago.* Not this hour, lieutenant; 'tis not yet ten o'clock: Our general cast us<sup>1</sup> thus early, for the love of his Desdemona; whom let us not therefore blame; he hath not yet made wanton the night with her: and she is sport for Jove.

*Cas.* She's a most exquisite lady.

*Iago.* And, I'll warrant her, full of game.

*Cas.* Indeed, she is a most fresh and delicate creature.

<sup>1</sup> Our general cast us —] *Cast us* means dismissed us, or got rid of our company.

*Iago.* What an eye she has ! methinks it sounds  
a parley of provocation.

*Cas.* An inviting eye ; and yet methinks right  
modest.

*Iago.* And, when she speaks, is it not an alarm  
to love ?

*Cas.* She is, indeed, perfection.

*Iago.* Well, happiness to their sheets ! Come,  
lieutenant, I have a stoop of wine : and here without  
are a brace of Cyprus gallants, that would fain have  
a measure to the health of the black Othello.

*Cas.* Not to-night, good Iago ; I have very poor  
and unhappy brains for drinking : I could well wish  
courtesy would invent some other custom of enter-  
tainment.

*Iago.* O, they are our friends ; but one cup : I'll  
drink for you.

*Cas.* I have drunk but one cup to-night, and  
that was craftily qualified<sup>2</sup> too, and, behold, what  
innovation it makes here : I am unfortunate in the  
infirmity, and dare not task my weakness with any  
more.

*Iago.* What, man ! 'tis a night of revels ; the gal-  
lants desire it.

*Cas.* Where are they ?

*Iago.* Here at the door ; I pray you call them in.

*Cas.* I'll do't ; but it dislikes me. [*Exit CASSIO.*]

*Iago.* If I can fasten but one cup upon him,  
With that which he hath drunk to-night already,  
He'll be as full of quarrel and offence

As my young mistress' dog. Now, my sick fool,  
Roderigo,

Whom love has turn'd almost the wrong side out-  
ward,

To Desdemona hath to-night carous'd

<sup>2</sup> ——— *craftily qualified*—] Silly mixed with water.



German, and your swag-bellied Hollander,—Drink, ho!—are nothing to your English.

*Cas.* Is your Englishman so expert in his drinking?

*Iago.* Why, he drinks you, with facility, your Dane dead drunk; he sweats not to overthrow your Almain; he gives your Hollander a vomit, ere the next pottle can be filled.

*Cas.* To the health of our general.

*Mon.* I am for it, lieutenant; and I'll do you justice.<sup>6</sup>

*Iago.* O sweet England!

*King Stephen*<sup>7</sup> *was a worthy peer,*<sup>8</sup>  
*His breeches cost him but a crown;*  
*He held them sixpence all too dear,*  
*With that he call'd the tailor—lown.*<sup>9</sup>

*He was a wight of high renown,*  
*And thou art but of low degree*  
*'Tis pride that pulls the country down,*  
*Then take thine auld cloak about thee.*

Some wine, ho!

*Cas.* Why, this is a more exquisite song than the other.

*Iago.* Will you hear it again?

*Cas.* No; for I hold him to be unworthy of his place, that does those things.—Well,—Heaven's above all; and there be souls that must be saved, and there be souls must not be saved.

<sup>6</sup> — *I'll do you justice.*] i. e. drink as much as you do.

<sup>7</sup> *King Stephen, &c.*] These stanzas are taken from an old song, which the reader will find recovered and preserved in Percy's *Relicks of Ancient Poetry*.

<sup>8</sup> — *a worthy peer,*] A *worthy peer* is a *worthy lord*, a title frequently bestowed upon *kings* in our old romances.

<sup>9</sup> — *lown.*] Sorry fellow, paltry wretch.



*Iago.* It's true, good lieutenant.

*Cas.* For mine own part,—no offence to the general, nor any man of quality,—I hope to be saved.

*Iago.* And so do I too, lieutenant.

*Cas.* Ay, but, by your leave, not before me; the lieutenant is to be saved before the ancient. Let's have no more of this; let's to our affairs.—Forgive us our sins!—Gentlemen, let's look to our business. Do not think, gentlemen, I am drunk; this is my ancient;—this is my right hand, and this is my left hand:—I am not drunk now; I can stand well enough, and speak well enough.

*All.* Excellent well.

*Cas.* Why, very well, then: you must not think then that I am drunk. [*Exit.*

*Mon.* To the platform, masters; come, let's set the watch.

*Iago.* You see this fellow, that is gone before;—  
He is a soldier, fit to stand by Cæsar  
And give direction: and do but see his vice;  
'Tis to his virtue a just equinox,  
The one as long as the other: 'tis pity of him.  
I fear, the trust Othello puts him in,  
On some odd time of his infirmity,  
Will shake this island.

*Mon.* But is he often thus?

*Iago.* 'Tis evermore the prologue to his sleep:  
He'll watch the horologe a double set,<sup>1</sup>  
If drink rock not his cradle.

*Mon.* It were well,  
The general were put in mind of it.  
Perhaps, he sees it not; or his good nature  
Prizes the virtue that appears in Cassio,  
And looks not on his evils; Is not this true?

<sup>1</sup> *He'll watch the horologe a double set, &c.]* If he have no drink, he'll keep awake while the clock strikes two rounds, or four-and-twenty hours.

*Enter RODERIGO.*

*Iago.* How now, Roderigo? [*Aside.*  
I pray you, after the lieutenant; go.

[*Exit RODERIGO.*

*Mon.* And 'tis great pity, that the noble Moor  
Should hazard such a place, as his own second,  
With one of an ingraft infirmity:<sup>2</sup>  
It were an honest action, to say  
So to the Moor.

*Iago.* Not I, for this fair island:  
I do love Cassio well; and would do much  
To cure him of this evil. But hark! what noise?  
[*Cry within,—Help! help!*

*Re-enter CASSIO, driving in RODERIGO.*

*Cas.* You rogue! you rascal!

*Mon.* What's the matter, lieutenant?

*Cas.* A knave!—teach me my duty!  
I'll beat the knave into a twiggen bottle.<sup>3</sup>

*Rod.* Beat me!

*Cas.* Dost thou prate, rogue?

[*Striking RODERIGO.*

*Mon.* Nay, good lieutenant;  
[*Staying him.*

I pray you, sir, hold your hand.

*Cas.* Let me go, sir,  
Or I'll knock you o'er the mazzard.

*Mon.* Come, come, you're drunk.

*Cas.* Drunk! [*They fight.*

*Iago.* Away, I say! go out, and cry—a mutiny,  
[*Aside to ROD. who goes out,*

Nay, good lieutenant,—alas, gentlemen,—

<sup>2</sup> — *ingraft infirmity:*] An infirmity rooted, settled in his constitution.

<sup>3</sup> — *into a twiggen bottle.*] i. e. a wickered bottle.

Help, ho!—Lieutenant,—sir,—Montano,—sir;—  
 Help, masters!—Here's a goodly watch, indeed!

[*Bell rings.*]

Who's that that rings the bell?—Diablo, ho!  
 The town will rise: God's will, lieutenant! hold;  
 You will be sham'd for ever.

*Enter OTHELLO, and Attendants.*

*Oth.* What is the matter here?

*Mon.* I bleed still, I am hurt to the death;—he  
 dies.<sup>4</sup>

*Oth.* Hold, for your lives.

*Iago.* Hold, hold, lieutenant,—sir, Montano,—  
 gentlemen,—

Have you forgot all sense of place and duty?  
 Hold, hold! the general speaks to you; hold, for  
 shame!

*Oth.* Why, how now, ho! from whence ariseth  
 this?

Are we turn'd Turks; and to ourselves do that,  
 Which heaven hath forbid the Ottomites?  
 For christian shame, put by this barbarous brawl:  
 He that stirs next to carve for his own rage,  
 Holds his soul light; he dies upon his motion.—  
 Silence that dreadful bell, it frights the isle  
 From her propriety.<sup>5</sup>—What is the matter, mas-  
 ters?—

Honest Iago, that look'st dead with grieving,  
 Speak, who began this? on thy love, I charge thee.

*Iago.* I do not know;—friends all but now, even  
 now,

In quarter,<sup>6</sup> and in terms like bride and groom  
 Devesting them for bed: and then, but now,

<sup>4</sup> *He dies.*] i. e. he shall die.

<sup>5</sup> *From her propriety.*] From her regular and proper state.

<sup>6</sup> *In quarter,*] i. e. on our station.

'As if some planet had unwitting men,) Swords out, and tilting one at other's breast, In opposition bloody. I cannot speak Any beginning to this peevish odds ; And 'would in action glorious I had lost These legs, that brought me to a part of it !

*Oth.* How comes it, Michael, you are thus forgot ?<sup>7</sup>

*Cas.* I pray you, pardon me, I cannot speak.

*Oth.* Worthy Montano, you were wont be civil ; The gravity and stillness of your youth The world hath noted, and your name is great In mouths of wisest censure ; What's the matter, That you unlace your reputation thus, And spend your rich opinion, for the name Of a night-brawler ? give me answer to it.

*Mon.* Worthy Othello, I am hurt to danger ; Your officer, Iago, can inform you— While I spare speech, which something now offends me ;—

Of all that I do know : nor know I aught By me that's said or done amiss this night ; Unless self-charity<sup>8</sup> be sometime a vice ; And to defend ourselves it be a sin, When violence assails us.

*Oth.* Now, by heaven, My blood begins my safer guides to rule ; And passion, having my best judgment collied,<sup>9</sup> Assays to lead the way : If I once stir, Or do but lift this arm, the best of you Shall sink in my rebuke. Give me to know How this foul rout began, who set it on ;

<sup>7</sup> ——— you are thus forgot ?] i. e. you have thus forgot yourself.

<sup>8</sup> ——— self-charity —] Care of one's self.

<sup>9</sup> And passion, having my best judgment collied,] Othello means, that passion has discoloured his judgment. To *colly*, anciently signified to besmut, to blacken as with coal.

And he that is approv'd<sup>1</sup> in this offence,  
 Though he had twinn'd with me, both at a birth,  
 Shall lose me.—What! in a town of war,  
 Yet wild, the people's hearts brimful of fear,  
 To manage private and domestick quarrel,  
 In night, and on the court and guard of safety!  
 'Tis monstrous.—Iago, who began it?

*Mon.* If partially affin'd,<sup>2</sup> or leagu'd in office,  
 Thou dost deliver more or less than truth,  
 Thou art no soldier.

*Iago.* Touch me not so near:  
 I had rather have this tongue cut from my mouth,  
 Than it should do offence to Michael Cassio;  
 Yet, I persuade myself, to speak the truth  
 Shall nothing wrong him.—Thus it is, general.  
 Montano and myself being in speech,  
 There comes a fellow, crying out for help;  
 And Cassio following him with determin'd sword,  
 To execute upon him: Sir, this gentleman  
 Steps in to Cassio, and entreats his pause;  
 Myself the crying fellow did pursue,  
 Lest, by his clamour, (as it so fell out,)  
 The town might fall in fright: he, swift of foot,  
 Outran my purpose; and I return'd the rather  
 For that I heard the clink and fall of swords,  
 And Cassio high in oath; which, till to-night,  
 I ne'er might say before: When I came back,  
 (For this was brief,) I found them close together,  
 At blow, and thrust; even as again they were,  
 When you yourself did part them.  
 More of this matter can I not report:—  
 But men are men; the best sometimes forget:—  
 Though Cassio did some little wrong to him,—

<sup>1</sup> — he that is approv'd —] He that is convicted by proof, of having been engaged in this offence.

<sup>2</sup> If partially affin'd,] *Affin'd* is bound by proximity of relationship; but here it means related by nearness of office.

As men in rage strike those that wish them best,—  
Yet, surely, Cassio, I believe, receiv'd,  
From him that fled, some strange indignity,  
Which patience could not pass.

*Oth.* I know, Iago,  
Thy honesty and love doth mince this matter,  
Making it light to Cassio:—Cassio, I love thee;  
But never more be officer of mine.—

*Enter DESDEMONA, attended.*

Look, if my gentle love be not rais'd up;—  
I'll make thee an example.

*Des.* What's the matter, dear?

*Oth.* All's well now, sweeting; Come away to bed.  
Sir, for your hurts,  
Myself will be your surgeon: Lead him off.

*[To MONTANO, who is led off.]*

Iago, look with care about the town;  
And silence those whom this vile brawl distracted.—  
Come, Desdemona; 'tis the soldiers' life,  
To have their balmy slumbers wak'd with strife.

*[Exeunt all but IAGO and CASSIO.]*

*Iago.* What, are you hurt, lieutenant?

*Cas.* Ay, past all surgery.

*Iago.* Marry, heaven forbid!

*Cas.* Reputation, reputation, reputation! O, I  
have lost my reputation! I have lost the immortal  
part, sir, of myself, and what remains is bestial.—  
My reputation, Iago, my reputation.

*Iago.* As I am an honest man, I thought you had  
received some bodily wound; there is more offence  
in that, than in reputation. Reputation is an idle  
and most false imposition; oft got without merit,  
and lost without deserving: You have lost no re-  
putation at all, unless you repute yourself such a  
loser. What, man! there are ways to recover the

general again : You are but now cast in his mood,<sup>3</sup> a punishment more in policy than in malice ; even so as one would beat his offenceless dog, to affright an imperious lion : sue to him again, and he's yours.

*Cas.* I will rather sue to be despised, than to deceive so good a commander, with so slight, so drunken, and so indiscreet an officer. Drunk ? and speak parrot ?<sup>4</sup> and squabble ? swagger ? swear ? and discourse fustian with one's own shadow ?—O thou invisible spirit of wine, if thou hast no name to be known by, let us call thee—devil !

*Iago.* What was he that you followed with your sword ? What had he done to you ?

*Cas.* I know not.

*Iago.* Is it possible ?

*Cas.* I remember a mass of things, but nothing distinctly ; a quarrel, but nothing wherefore.—O, that men should put an enemy in their mouths, to steal away their brains ! that we should, with joy, revel, pleasure, and applause, transform ourselves into beasts !

*Iago.* Why, but you are now well enough : How came you thus recovered ?

*Cas.* It hath pleased the devil, drunkenness, to give place to the devil, wrath : one unperfectness shows me another, to make me frankly despise myself.

*Iago.* Come, you are too severe a moraler : As the time, the place, and the condition of this country stands, I could heartily wish this had not befallen ; but, since it is as it is, mend it for your own good.

*Cas.* I will ask him for my place again ; he shall tell me, I am a drunkard ! Had I as many mouths

<sup>3</sup> — cast in his mood,] Ejected in his anger.

<sup>4</sup> — and speak parrot ?] A phrase signifying to act foolishly and childishly.

as Hydra, such an answer would stop them all. To be now a sensible man, by and by a fool, and presently a beast! O strange!—Every inordinate cup is unblessed, and the ingredient is a devil.

*Iago.* Come, come, good wine is a good familiar creature, if it be well used; exclaim no more against it. And, good lieutenant, I think, you think I love you.

*Cas.* I have well approved it, sir.—I drunk!

*Iago.* You, or any man living, may be drunk at some time, man. I'll tell you what you shall do. Our general's wife is now the general;—I may say so in this respect, for that he hath devoted and given up himself to the contemplation, mark, and denotement of her parts and graces:—confess yourself freely to her; importune her; she'll help to put you in your place again: she is of so free, so kind, so apt, so blessed a disposition, that she holds it a vice in her goodness, not to do more than she is requested: This broken joint, between you and her husband, entreat her to splinter; and, my fortunes against any lay<sup>s</sup> worth naming, this crack of your love shall grow stronger than it was before.

*Cas.* You advise me well.

*Iago.* I protest, in the sincerity of love, and honest kindness.

*Cas.* I think it freely; and, betimes in the morning, I will beseech the virtuous Desdemona to undertake for me: I am desperate of my fortunes, if they check me here.

*Iago.* You are in the right. Good night, lieutenant; I must to the watch.

*Cas.* Good night, honest Iago. [*Exit CASSIO.*]

*Iago.* And what's he then, that says,—I play the villain?

<sup>s</sup> — any lay —] i. e. any bet, any wager.



When this advice is free, I give, and honest,  
 Probab<sup>6</sup> to thinking, and (indeed) the course  
 To win the Moor again? For 'tis most easy  
 The inclining Desdemona<sup>7</sup> to subdue  
 In any honest suit; she's fram'd as fruitful  
 As the free elements.<sup>8</sup> And then for her  
 To win the Moor,—were't to renounce his baptism,  
 All seals and symbols of redeemed sin,—  
 His soul is so enfetter'd to her love,  
 That she may make, unmake, do what she list,  
 Even as her appetite shall play the god  
 With his weak function. How am I then a villain,  
 To counsel Cassio to this parallel course,<sup>9</sup>  
 Directly to his good? Divinity of hell!  
 When devils will their blackest sins put on,  
 They do suggest<sup>1</sup> at first with heavenly shows,  
 As I do now: For while this honest fool  
 Plies Desdemona to repair his fortunes,  
 And she for him pleads strongly to the Moor,  
 I'll pour this pestilence into his ear,—  
 That she repeals<sup>2</sup> him for her body's lust;  
 And, by how much she strives to do him good,  
 She shall undo her credit with the Moor.  
 So will I turn her virtue into pitch;  
 And out of her own goodness make the net,

<sup>6</sup> *Probab* —] There may be such a contraction of the word *probable*, but I have not met with it in any other book. Yet abbreviations as violent occur in our ancient writers, and especially in the works of Churchyard. STEEVENS.

<sup>7</sup> *The inclining Desdemona* —] i. e. *compliant*.

<sup>8</sup> — *as fruitful*

*As the free elements.*] Liberal, bountiful, as the elements, out of which all things are produced.

<sup>9</sup> — *parallel course,*] i. e. course level and even with his design.

<sup>1</sup> *When devils will their blackest sins put on,*

*They do suggest* —] When devils mean to instigate men to commit the most atrocious crimes.

<sup>2</sup> *That she repeals* —] That is, recalls him.

That shall enmesh them all.—How now, Roderigo?

*Enter RODERIGO.*

*Rod.* I do follow here in the chace, not like a hound that hunts, but one that fills up the cry. My money is almost spent; I have been to-night exceedingly well cudgelled; and, I think, the issue will be—I shall have so much experience for my pains: and so, with no money at all, and a little more wit, return to Venice.

*Iago.* How poor are they, that have not patience!—What wound did ever heal, but by degrees? Thou know'st, we work by wit, and not by witchcraft; And wit depends on dilatory time.

Does't not go well? Cassio hath beaten thee, And thou, by that small hurt, hast cashier'd Cassio: Though other things grow fair against the sun, Yet fruits, that blossom first, will first be ripe: Content thyself a while.—By the mass, 'tis morning; Pleasure, and action, make the hours seem short.—Retire thee; go where thou art billeted:

Away, I say, thou shalt know more hereafter: Nay, get thee gone. [*Exit Rod.*] Two things are to be done,—

My wife must move for Cassio to her mistress; I'll set her on;

Myself, the while, to draw the Moor apart, And bring him jump<sup>3</sup> when he may Cassio find Soliciting his wife:—Ay, that's the way; Dull not device by coldness and delay. [*Exit.*

<sup>3</sup> ——— bring him jump—] i. e. just at the time when.

## ACT III.

SCENE I. *Before the Castle.**Enter CASSIO, and some Musicians.*

*Cas.* Masters, play here, I will content your pains,  
 Something that's brief; and bid—good-morrow,  
 general.<sup>4</sup> [*Musick.*

*Enter Clown.*

*Clo.* Why, masters, have your instruments been  
 at Naples, that they speak i'the nose thus?

1 *Mus.* How, sir, how!

*Clo.* Are these, I pray you, called wind instruments?

1 *Mus.* Ay, marry, are they, sir.

*Clo.* O, thereby hangs a tail.

1 *Mus.* Whereby hangs a tale, sir?

*Clo.* Marry, sir, by many a wind instrument that I know. But, masters, here's money for you: and the general so likes your musick, that he desires you, of all loves, to make no more noise with it.

1 *Mus.* Well, sir, we will not.

*Clo.* If you have any musick that may not be heard, to't again: but, as they say, to hear musick, the general does not greatly care.

1 *Mus.* We have none such, sir.

<sup>4</sup> — and bid—good-morrow, general.] It is the usual practice of the *waits*, or nocturnal minstrels, in several towns in the North of England, after playing a tune or two, to cry, "Good-morrow, maister such a one, good-morrow, dame," adding the hour, and state of the weather. It should seem to have prevailed at Stratford-upon-Avon. They formerly used *hautboys*, which are the wind-instruments here meant. RITSON.

*Clo.* Then put up your pipes in your bag, for I'll away: Go; vanish into air; away.

[*Exeunt Musicians.*]

*Cas.* Dost thou hear, my honest friend?

*Clo.* No, I hear not your honest friend; I hear you.

*Cas.* Pr'ythee, keep up thy quillets. There's a poor piece of gold for thee: if the gentlewoman that attends the general's wife, be stirring, tell her, there's one Cassio entreats her a little favour of speech: Wilt thou do this?

*Clo.* She is stirring, sir; if she will stir hither, I shall seem to notify unto her. [*Exit.*]

*Enter IAGO.*

*Cas.* Do, good my friend.—In happy time, Iago.

*Iago.* You have not been a-bed then?

*Cas.* Why, no; the day had broke  
Before we parted. I have made bold, Iago,  
To send in to your wife: My suit to her  
Is, that she will to virtuous Desdemona  
Procure me some access.

*Iago.* I'll send her to you presently;  
And I'll devise a mean to draw the Moor  
Out of the way, that your converse and business  
May be more free. [*Exit.*]

*Cas.* I humbly thank you for't. I never knew  
A Florentine more kind and honest.

*Enter EMILIA.*

*Emil.* Good morrow, good lieutenant: I am sorry  
For your displeasure;<sup>5</sup> but all will soon be well.  
The general, and his wife, are talking of it;

<sup>5</sup> For your displeasure;] i. e. the displeasure you have incurred from Othello.

And she speaks for you stoutly : The Moor replies,  
That he, you hurt, is of great fame in Cyprus,  
And great affinity ; and that, in wholesome wisdom,  
He might not but refuse you : but, he protests, he  
loves you ;

And needs no other suitor, but his likings,  
To take the safest occasion by the front,  
To bring you in again.

*Cas.* Yet, I beseech you,—  
If you think fit, or that it may be done,—  
Give me advantage of some brief discourse  
With Desdemona alone.

*Emil.* Pray you, come in ;  
I will bestow you where you shall have time  
To speak your bosom freely.

*Cas.* I am much bound to you.  
[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.

*A Room in the Castle.*

*Enter OTHELLO, IAGO, and Gentlemen.*

*Oth.* These letters give, Iago, to the pilot ;  
And, by him, do my duties to the state :  
That done, I will be walking on the works,  
Repair there to me.

*Iago.* Well, my good lord, I'll do't.

*Oth.* This fortification, gentlemen,—shall we  
see't ?

*Gent.* We'll wait upon your lordship. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE III.

*Before the Castle.**Enter DESDEMONA, CASSIO, and EMILIA.*

*Des.* Be thou assur'd, good Cassio, I will do  
All my abilities in thy behalf.

*Emil.* Good madam, do; I know it grieves my  
husband,  
As if the case were his.

*Des.* O, that's an honest fellow.—Do not doubt,  
Cassio,  
But I will have my lord and you again  
As friendly as you were.

*Cas.* Bounteous madam,  
Whatever shall become of Michael Cassio,  
He's never any thing but your true servant.

*Des.* O, sir, I thank you: You do love my lord:  
You have known him long; and be you well assur'd,  
He shall in strangeness stand no further off  
Than in a politick distance.

*Cas.* Ay, but, lady,  
That policy may either last so long,  
Or feed upon such nice and waterish diet,  
Or breed itself so out of circumstance,  
That, I being absent, and my place supplied,  
My general will forget my love and service.

*Des.* Do not doubt that; before Emilia here,  
I give thee warrant of thy place: assure thee,  
If I do vow a friendship, I'll perform it  
To the last article: my lord shall never rest;  
I'll watch him tame,<sup>6</sup> and talk him out of patience;

<sup>6</sup> *I'll watch him tame,*] Hawks and other birds are tamed by keeping them from sleep, to which management Shakspeare alludes.

His bed shall seem a school, his board a shrift ;  
 I'll intermingle every thing he does  
 With Cassio's suit : Therefore be merry, Cassio ;  
 For thy solicitor shall rather die,  
 Than give thy cause away.

*Enter OTHELLO and IAGO, at a distance.*

*Emil.* Madam, here comes  
 My lord.

*Cas.* Madam, I'll take my leave.

*Des.* Why, stay,  
 And hear me speak.

*Cas.* Madam, not now ; I am very ill at ease,  
 Unfit for mine own purposes.

*Des.* Well, well,  
 Do your discretion. [*Exit CASSIO.*]

*Iago.* Ha ! I like not that.

*Oth.* What dost thou say ?

*Iago.* Nothing, my lord : or if—I know not what.

*Oth.* Was not that Cassio, parted from my wife ?

*Iago.* Cassio, my lord ? No, sure, I cannot think it,  
 That he would steal away so guilty-like,  
 Seeing you coming.

*Oth.* I do believe 'twas he.

*Des.* How now, my lord ?

I have been talking with a suitor here,  
 A man that languishes in your displeasure.

*Oth.* Who is't, you mean ?

*Des.* Why, your lieutenant Cassio. Good my  
 lord,

If I have any grace, or power to move you,  
 His present reconciliation take ;<sup>7</sup>  
 For, if he be not one that truly loves you,

<sup>7</sup> *His present reconciliation take;]* To take his reconciliation,  
 may be to accept the submission which he makes in order to be  
 reconciled.

That errs in ignorance, and not in cunning,<sup>8</sup>  
 I have no judgment in an honest face :  
 I pr'ythee, call him back.

*Oth.* Went he hence now ?

*Des.* Ay, sooth ; so humbled,  
 That he hath left part of his grief with me ;  
 I suffer with him. Good love, call him back.

*Oth.* Not now, sweet Desdemona ; some other  
 time.

*Des.* But shall't be shortly ?

*Oth.* The sooner, sweet, for you.

*Des.* Shall't be to-night at supper ?

*Oth.* No, not to-night.

*Des.* To-morrow dinner then ?

*Oth.* I shall not dine at home ;  
 I meet the captains at the citadel.

*Des.* Why then, to-morrow night ; or Tuesday  
 morn ;

Or Tuesday noon, or night ; or Wednesday morn ;—  
 I pray thee, name the time ; but let it not  
 Exceed three days : in faith, he's penitent ;  
 And yet his trespass, in our common reason,  
 (Save that, they say, the wars must make examples  
 Out of their best,<sup>9</sup>) is not almost a fault  
 To incur a private check : When shall he come ?  
 Tell me, Othello. I wonder in my soul,  
 What you could ask me, that I should deny,  
 Or stand so mammering on.<sup>1</sup> What! Michael Cassio,  
 That came a wooing with you ; and many a time,  
 When I have spoke of you dispraisingly,  
 Hath ta'en your part ; to have so much to do

<sup>8</sup> — and not in cunning,] *Cunning*, for *knowledge*.

<sup>9</sup> — the wars must make examples

*Out of their best,]* The severity of military discipline must not spare the *best men* of their army, when their punishment may afford a wholesome *example*.

<sup>1</sup> — so mammering on.] To hesitate, to stand in suspense.



To bring him in! Trust me, I could do much,—

*Oth.* Pr'ythee, no more: let him come when he will;

I will deny thee nothing.

*Des.* Why, this is not a boon;  
'Tis as I should entreat you wear your gloves,  
Or feed on nourishing dishes, or keep you warm;  
Or sue to you to do peculiar profit  
To your own person: Nay, when I have a suit,  
Wherein I mean to touch your love indeed,  
It shall be full of poize<sup>2</sup> and difficulty,  
And fearful to be granted.

*Oth.* I will deny thee nothing:  
Whereon, I do beseech thee, grant me this,  
To leave me but a little to myself.

*Des.* Shall I deny you? no: Farewell, my lord.

*Oth.* Farewell, my Desdemona: I will come to thee straight.

*Des.* Emilia, come:—Be it as your fancies teach you;

Whate'er you be, I am obedient.

[*Exit, with EMILIA.*]

*Oth.* Excellent wretch!<sup>3</sup> Perdition catch my soul,  
But I do love thee! and when I love thee not,  
Chaos is come again.

*Iago.* My noble lord,——

*Oth.* What dost thou say, Iago?

*Iago.* Did Michael Cassio, when you woo'd my lady,

Know of your love?

*Oth.* He did, from first to last: Why dost thou ask?

<sup>2</sup> — full of poize —] i. e. of weight.

<sup>3</sup> *Excellent wretch!*] The meaning of the word *wretch*, is not generally understood. It is now, in some parts of England, a term of the softest and fondest tenderness. It expresses the utmost degree of amiableness, joined with an idea which perhaps all tenderness includes, of feebleness, softness, and want of protection.

*Iago.* But for a satisfaction of my thought ;  
No further harm.

*Oth.* Why of thy thought, *Iago* ?

*Iago.* I did not think, he had been acquainted  
with her.

*Oth.* O, yes ; and went between us very oft.

*Iago.* Indeed ?

*Oth.* Indeed ! ay, indeed :—Discern'st thou aught  
in that ?

Is he not honest ?

*Iago.* Honest, my lord ?

*Oth.* Ay, honest.

*Iago.* My lord, for aught I know.

*Oth.* What dost thou think ?

*Iago.* Think, my lord ?

*Oth.* Think, my lord !

By heaven, he echoes me,

As if there were some monster in his thought

Too hideous to be shown.—Thou dost mean some-  
thing :

I heard thee say but now,—Thou lik'dst not that,

When Cassio left my wife ; What did'st not like ?

And, when I told thee—he was of my counsel

In my whole course of wooing, thou cry'dst, *Indeed* ?

And did'st contract and purse thy brow together,

As if thou then had'st shut up in thy brain

Some horrible conceit : If thou dost love me,

Show me thy thought.

*Iago.* My lord, you know I love you.

*Oth.* I think, thou dost ;

And,—for I know thou art full of love and honesty,

And weigh'st thy words before thou giv'st them  
breath,—

Therefore these stops of thine fright me the more :

For such things, in a false disloyal knave,

Are tricks of custom ; but, in a man that's just,

They are close denotements, working from the heart,  
That passion cannot rule.<sup>4</sup>

*Iago.* For Michael Cassio,—  
I dare be sworn, I think that he is honest.

*Oth.* I think so too.

*Iago.* Men should be what they seem ;  
Or, those that be not, 'would they might seem none !

*Oth.* Certain, men should be what they seem.

*Iago.* Why then,  
I think that Cassio is an honest man.

*Oth.* Nay, yet there's more in this :  
I pray thee, speak to me as to thy thinkings,  
As thou dost ruminate ; and give thy worst of thoughts  
The worst of words.

*Iago.* Good my lord, pardon me ;  
Though I am bound to every act of duty,  
I am not bound to that all slaves are free to.<sup>5</sup>  
Utter my thoughts ? Why, say, they are vile and  
false,—

As where's that palace, whereinto foul things  
Sometimes intrude not ? who has a breast so pure,  
But some uncleanly apprehensions  
Keep leets, and law-days, and in session sit  
With meditations lawful ?

*Oth.* Thou dost conspire against thy friend, Iago,  
If thou but think'st him wrong'd, and mak'st his ear  
A stranger to thy thoughts.

*Iago.* I do beseech you,—  
Though I, perchance, am vicious in my guess,  
As, I confess, it is my nature's plague  
To spy into abuses ; and, oft, my jealousy

<sup>4</sup> *They are close denotements, working from the heart,  
That passion cannot rule.*] i. e. indications, or recoveries, not  
openly revealed, but involuntarily working from the heart, which  
cannot rule and suppress its feelings.

<sup>5</sup> — *to that all slaves are free to.*] I am not bound to do  
that, which even slaves are not bound to do.

Shapes faults that are not,—I entreat you then,  
 From one that so imperfectly conjects,<sup>6</sup>  
 You'd take no notice ; nor build yourself a trouble  
 Out of his scattering and unsure observance :—  
 It were not for your quiet, nor your good,  
 Nor for my manhood, honesty, or wisdom,  
 To let you know my thoughts.

*Oth.* What dost thou mean ?

*Iago.* Good name, in man, and woman, dear my  
 lord,

Is the immediate jewel of their souls :  
 Who steals my purse, steals trash ; 'tis something,  
 nothing ;

'Twas mine, 'tis his, and has been slave to thousands ;  
 But he, that filches from me my good name,  
 Robs me of that, which not enriches him,  
 And makes me poor indeed.

*Oth.* By heaven, I'll know thy thought.

*Iago.* You cannot, if my heart were in your hand ;  
 Nor shall not, whilst 'tis in my custody.

*Oth.* Ha !

*Iago.* O, beware, my lord, of jealousy ;  
 It is the green ey'd monster, which doth mock  
 The meat it feeds on :<sup>7</sup> That cuckold lives in bliss,  
 Who, certain of his fate, loves not his wronger ;  
 But, O, what damned minutes tells he o'er,  
 Who dotes, yet doubts ; suspects, yet strongly loves !

*Oth.* O misery !

*Iago.* Poor, and content, is rich, and rich enough ;

<sup>6</sup> ——— conjects,] To *conject*, i. e. to *conjecture*, is a word used by other writers.

<sup>7</sup> ——— which doth mock

*The meat it feeds on :* ] i. e. loaths that which nourishes and sustains it. But others read,

——— which doth make

*The meat it feeds on.*

Implying that its suspicions are unreal and groundless, which is the very contrary to what he would here make his general think.

*Oth.* Why! why is this?  
Think'st thou, I'd make a life of jealousy,  
To follow still the changes of the moon  
With fresh suspicions? No: to be once in doubt,  
Is—once to be resolv'd: Exchange me for a goat,  
When I shall turn the business of my soul  
To such exsufflicate<sup>o</sup> and blown surmises,  
Matching thy inference.' 'Tis not to make me  
jealous,

*Iago.* I am glad of this; for now I shall have reason

<sup>8</sup> *But riches, fineless,*] Unbounded, endless, unnumbered.

<sup>9</sup> To such exsufflicate—] Whether our poet had any authority for the word *exsufflicate*, which I think is used in the sense of *swollen*, and appears to have been formed from *sufflatus*, I am unable to ascertain : but I have not thought it safe to substitute for it another word equally unauthorised. MALONE.

<sup>1</sup> ~~\_\_\_\_\_~~ blown surmises.

*Matching thy inference.*] That is,—such as you have mentioned in describing the torments of jealousy.

<sup>a</sup> *Where virtue is, these are more virtuous :]* An action in itself indifferent, grows virtuous by its end and application.

Look to your wife; observe her well with Cassio;  
 Wear your eye—thus, not jealous, nor secure:  
 I would not have your free and noble nature,  
 Out of self-bounty,<sup>3</sup> be abus'd; look to't:  
 I know our country disposition well;  
 In Venice they do let heaven see the pranks  
 They dare not show their husbands; their best con-  
 science

Is—not to leave undone, but keep unknown.

*Oth.* Dost thou say so?

*Iago.* She did deceive her father, marrying you;  
 And, when she seem'd<sup>4</sup> to shake, and fear your  
 looks,

She lov'd them most.

*Oth.* And so she did.

*Iago.* Why, go to, then;  
 She that, so young, could give out such a seeming,  
 To seel her father's eyes up, close as oak,<sup>5</sup>  
 He thought, 'twas witchcraft:—But I am much to  
 blame;

<sup>3</sup> *Out of self-bounty,*] *Self-bounty* for inherent generosity.

<sup>4</sup> *And when she seem'd*—] This and the following argument of Iago ought to be deeply impressed on every reader. Deceit and falsehood, whatever conveniences they may for a time promise or produce, are, in the sun of life, obstacles to happiness. Those, who profit by the cheat, distrust the deceiver, and the act by which kindness is sought, puts an end to confidence.

The same objection may be made with a lower degree of strength against the imprudent generosity of disproportionate marriages. When the first heat of passion is over, it is easily succeeded by suspicion, that the same violence of inclination, which caused one irregularity, may stimulate to another; and those who have shewn, that their passions are too powerful for their prudence, will, with very slight appearances against them, be censured, as not very likely to restrain them by their virtue. JOHNSON.

<sup>5</sup> *To seel her father's eyes up, close as oak,*] The oak is the most close-grained wood of general use in England. *Close as oak,* means, *close as the grain of oak.* To *seel* is an expression from falconry.

I humbly do beseech you of your pardon,  
For too much loving you.

*Oth.* I am bound to thee for ever.

*Iago.* I see, this hath a little dash'd your spirits.

*Oth.* Not a jot, not a jot.

*Iago.* Trust me, I fear it has.

I hope, you will consider, what is spoke  
Comes from my love;—But, I do see you are  
mov'd:—

I am to pray you, not to strain my speech  
To grosser issues,<sup>6</sup> nor to larger reach,  
Than to suspicion.

*Oth.* I will not.

*Iago.* Should you do so, my lord,  
My speech should fall into such vile success  
As my thoughts aim not at. Cassio's my worthy  
friend:—

My lord, I see you are mov'd.

*Oth.* No, not much mov'd:—  
I do not think but Desdemona's honest.

*Iago.* Long live she so! and long live you to  
think so!

*Oth.* And yet, how nature erring from itself,—

*Iago.* Ay, there's the point:—As,—to be bold  
with you,—

Not to affect many proposed matches,  
Of her own clime, complexion, and degree;  
Whereto, we see, in all things nature tends:  
Foh! one may smell, in such, a will most rank,<sup>7</sup>  
Foul disproportion, thoughts unnatural.—  
But pardon me; I do not, in position,  
Distinctly speak of her: though I may fear,  
Her will, recoiling to her better judgment,

<sup>6</sup> To grosser issues,] *Issues*, for conclusions.

<sup>7</sup> — a will most rank,] *Will*, is for wilfulness. It is so used  
by Ascham. A rank will, is self-will overgrown and exuberant.

May fall to match you with her country forms,  
And (happily) repent.

*Oth.* Farewell, farewell :

If more thou dost perceive, let me know more ;  
Set on thy wife to observe : Leave me, Iago.

*Iago.* My lord, I take my leave. [*Going.*]

*Oth.* Why did I marry ?—This honest creature,  
doubtless,

Sees and knows more, much more, than he unfolds.

*Iago.* My lord, I would, I might entreat your  
honour

To scan this thing no further ; leave it to time :

And though it be fit that Cassio have his place,  
(For, sure, he fills it up with great ability,)

Yet, if you please to hold him off a while,  
You shall by that perceive him and his means :<sup>8</sup>

Note, if your lady strain his entertainment<sup>9</sup>

With any strong or vehement opportunity ;

Much will be seen in that. In the mean time,

Let me be thought too busy in my fears,

(As worthy cause I have, to fear—I am,)

And hold her free, I do beseech your honour.

*Oth.* Fear not my government.<sup>1</sup>

*Iago.* I once more take my leave. [*Exit.*]

*Oth.* This fellow's of exceeding honesty,

And knows all qualities, with a learned spirit,<sup>2</sup>

Of human dealings : If I do prove her haggard,<sup>3</sup>

<sup>8</sup> *You shall by that perceive him and his means :*] You shall discover whether he thinks his best *means*, his most powerful *interest*, is by the solicitation of your lady.

<sup>9</sup> *— strain his entertainment—*] Press hard his re-admission to his pay and office. *Entertainment* was the military term for admission of soldiers.

<sup>1</sup> *Fear not my government.*] Do not distrust my ability to contain my passion.

<sup>2</sup> *— with a learned spirit,*] The construction is, He knows with a learned spirit all qualities of human dealings.

<sup>3</sup> *— If I do prove her haggard,*] A *haggard* hawk, is a wild hawk, a hawk unreclaimed or irreclaimable.



Though that her jesses were my dear heart-strings,<sup>4</sup>  
 I'd whistle her off, and let her down the wind,  
 To prey at fortune.<sup>5</sup> Haply, for I am black ;  
 And have not those soft parts of conversation  
 That chamberers<sup>6</sup> have : Or, for I am declin'd  
 Into the vale of years ;—yet that's not much ;—  
 She's gone ; I am abus'd ; and my relief  
 Must be—to loath her. O curse of marriage,  
 That we can call these delicate creatures ours,  
 And not their appetites ! I had rather be a toad,  
 And live upon the vapour of a dungeon,  
 Than keep a corner in the thing I love,  
 For others' uses. Yet 'tis the plague of great ones ;  
 Prerogativ'd are they less than the base ;  
 'Tis destiny unshunnable, like death ;  
 Even then this forked plague<sup>7</sup> is fated to us,  
 When we do quicken. Desdemona comes :

*Enter DESDEMONA and EMILIA.*

If she be false, O, then heaven mocks itself !—  
 I'll not believe it.

*Des.* How now, my dear Othello ?  
 Your dinner, and the generous islanders  
 By you invited, do attend your presence.

*Oth.* I am to blame.

<sup>4</sup> *Though that her jesses were my dear heart-strings,*] *Jesses* are short straps of leather tied about the foot of a hawk, by which she is held on the fist.

<sup>5</sup> *I'd whistle her off, and let her down the wind,*

*To prey at fortune.*] The falconers always let fly the hawk against the wind ; if she flies with the wind behind her, she seldom returns. If therefore a hawk was for any reason to be dismissed, she was *let down the wind*, and from that time shifted for herself, and *preyed at fortune*.

<sup>6</sup> — *chamberers*—] i. e. men of intrigue.

<sup>7</sup> — *forked plague*—] In allusion to a barbed or forked arrow, which, once infixed, cannot be extracted. But perhaps the *forked plague* is the cuckold's horns.

*Des.* Why is your speech so faint? are you not well?

*Oth.* I have a pain upon my forehead here.

*Des.* Faith, that's with watching; 'twill away again:

Let me but bind it hard, within this hour  
It will be well.

*Oth.* Your napkin is too little;

[*He puts the Handkerchief from him, and it drops.*]

Let it alone. Come, I'll go in with you.

*Des.* I am very sorry that you are not well.

[*Exeunt OTH. and DES.*]

*Emil.* I am glad I have found this napkin;  
This was her first remembrance from the Moor:  
My wayward husband hath a hundred times  
Woo'd me to steal it: but she so loves the token,  
(For he conjur'd her, she would ever keep it,)  
That she reserves it evermore about her,  
To kiss, and talk to. I'll have the work ta'en out,\*  
And give it Iago:  
What he'll do with it, heaven knows, not I;  
I nothing; but to please his fantasy.

*Enter IAGO.*

*Iago.* How now! what do you here alone?

*Emil.* Do not you chide; I have a thing for you.

*Iago.* A thing for me?—it is a common thing.

*Emil.* Ha!

*Iago.* To have a foolish wife.

\* — *I'll have the work ta'en out,*] That is, copied. Her first thoughts are, to have a copy made of it for her husband, and restore the original to Desdemona. But the sudden coming in of Iago, in a surly humour, makes her alter her resolution, to please him.

*Emil.* O, is that all? What will you give me  
now

For that same handkerchief?

*Iago.* What handkerchief?

*Emil.* What handkerchief?

Why, that the Moor first gave to Desdemona;  
That which so often you did bid me steal.

*Iago.* Hast stolen it from her?

*Emil.* No, faith; she let it drop by negligence;  
And, to the advantage, I, being here, took't up.<sup>9</sup>  
Look, here it is.

*Iago.* A good wench; give it me.

*Emil.* What will you do with it, that you have  
been so earnest

To have me filch it?

*Iago.* Why, what's that to you?

[*Snatching it.*]

*Emil.* If it be not for some purpose of import,  
Give it me again: Poor lady! she'll run mad,  
When she shall lack it.

*Iago.* Be not you known of't; I have use for it.  
Go, leave me. [*Exit EMILIA.*]

I will in Cassio's lodging lose this napkin,  
And let him find it: Trifles, light as air,  
Are, to the jealous, confirmations strong  
As proofs of holy writ. This may do something.  
The Moor already changes with my poison:—  
Dangerous conceits are, in their natures, poisons,  
Which, at the first, are scarce found to distaste;  
But, with a little act upon the blood,  
Burn like the mines of sulphur.—I did say so:—

<sup>9</sup> ——— to the advantage, &c.] I being *opportunistically* here, took it up.

<sup>1</sup> Be not you known of't;] i. e. seem as if you knew nothing of the matter.

*Enter OTHELLO.*

Look, where he comes! Not poppy, nor mandra-  
gora,<sup>2</sup>

Nor all the drowsy syrups of the world,  
Shall ever medicine thee to that sweet sleep  
Which thou ow'dst yesterday.<sup>3</sup>

*Oth.* Ha! ha! false to me?  
To me?

*Iago.* Why, how now, general? no more of that.

*Oth.* Avaunt! be gone! thou hast set me on the  
rack:—

I swear, 'tis better to be much abus'd,  
Than but to know't a little.

*Iago.* How now, my lord?

*Oth.* What sense had I of her stolen hours of  
lust?

I saw it not, thought it not, it harm'd not me:  
I slept the next night well, was free and merry;  
I found not Cassio's kisses on her lips:  
He that is robb'd, not wanting what is stolen,  
Let him not know it, and he's not robb'd at all.

*Iago.* I am sorry to hear this.

*Oth.* I had been happy, if the general camp,  
Pioneers and all,<sup>4</sup> had tasted her sweet body,  
So I had nothing known: O now, for ever,  
Farewell the tranquil mind! farewell content!  
Farewell the plumed troop, and the big wars,

<sup>2</sup> — nor mandragora,] The *mandragoras* or *mandrake* has a soporific quality, and the ancients used it when they wanted an opiate of the most powerful kind.

<sup>3</sup> Which thou ow'dst yesterday,] To owe is, in our author, oftener to possess, than to be indebted, and such is its meaning here.

<sup>4</sup> Pioneers and all,] That is, the most abject and vilest of the camp. Pioneers were generally degraded soldiers, appointed to the office of pioneer, as a punishment for misbehaviour.

That make ambition virtue! O, farewell!  
 Farewell the neighing steed, and the shrill trump,  
 The spirit-stirring drum, the ear-piercing fife,  
 The royal banner; and all quality,  
 Pride, pomp, and circumstance of glorious war!  
 And O you mortal engines, whose rude throats  
 The immortal Jove's dread clamours counterfeit,  
 Farewell! Othello's occupation's gone!

*Iago.* Is it possible?—My lord,——

*Oth.* Villain, be sure thou prove my love a whore;  
 Be sure of it; give me the ocular proof;

[*Taking him by the Throat.*

Or, by the worth of mine eternal soul,  
 Thou hadst been better have been born a dog,  
 Than answer my wak'd wrath.

*Iago.* Is it come to this?

*Oth.* Make me to see it; or (at the least) so  
 prove it,

That the probation bear no hinge, nor loop,  
 To hang a doubt on: or, woe upon thy life!

*Iago.* My noble lord,——

*Oth.* If thou dost slander her, and torture me,  
 Never pray more: abandon all remorse;<sup>5</sup>  
 On horror's head horrors accumulate:  
 Do deeds to make heaven weep, all earth amaz'd,  
 For nothing canst thou to damnation add,  
 Greater than that.

*Iago.* O grace! O heaven defend me!  
 Are you a man? have you a soul, or sense?—  
 God be wi' you; take mine office.—O wretched fool,  
 That liv'st to make thine honesty a vice!—  
 O monstrous world! Take note, take note, O world,  
 To be direct and honest, is not safe.—  
 I thank you for this profit; and, from hence,  
 I'll love no friend, since love breeds such offence.

<sup>5</sup> —— *abandon all remorse*;] All tenderness of nature, all pity;  
 in which sense the word was frequently used in Shakespeare's time.

*Oth.* Nay, stay :—Thou should'st be honest.

*Iago.* I should be wise ; for honesty's a fool,  
And loses that it works for.

*Oth.* By the world,  
I think my wife be honest, and think she is not ;  
I think that thou art just, and think thou art not ;  
I'll have some proof : Her name, that was as fresh  
As Dian's visage, is now begrim'd and black  
As mine own face.—If there be cords, or knives,  
Poison, or fire, or suffocating streams,  
I'll not endure it.—Would, I were satisfied !

*Iago.* I see, sir, you are eaten up with passion :  
I do repent me, that I put it to you.  
You would be satisfied ?

*Oth.* Would ? nay, I will.

*Iago.* And may : But, how ? how satisfied, my  
lord ?

Would you, the supervisor, grossly gape on ?  
Behold her tupp'd ?

*Oth.* Death and damnation ! O !

*Iago.* It were a tedious difficulty, I think,  
To bring them to that prospect : Damn them then,  
If ever mortal eyes do see them bolster,  
More than their own ! What then ? how then ?  
What shall I say ? Where's satisfaction ?  
It is impossible, you should see this,  
Were they as prime as goats,<sup>6</sup> as hot as monkeys,  
As salt as wolves in pride, and fools as gross  
As ignorance made drunk. But yet, I say,  
If imputation, and strong circumstances,—  
Which lead directly to the door of truth,—  
Will give you satisfaction, you may have it.

*Oth.* Give me a living reason<sup>7</sup> she's disloyal.

<sup>6</sup> *Were they as prime as goats,*] *Prime is prompt.*

<sup>7</sup> *Give me a living reason—*] *Living, for speaking, manifest, actual proof.*

*Iago.* I do not like the office :

But, sith I am enter'd in this cause so far,—  
Prick'd to it by foolish honesty and love,—  
I will go on. I lay with Cassio, lately ;  
And, being troubled with a raging tooth,  
I could not sleep.

There are a kind of men so loose of soul,  
That in their sleeps will mutter their affairs ;  
One of this kind is Cassio :

In sleep I heard him say,—*Sweet Desdemona,*  
*Let us be wary, let us hide our loves !*

And then, sir, would he gripe, and wring my hand,  
Cry,—*O, sweet creature !* and then kiss me hard,  
As if he pluck'd up kisses by the roots,  
That grew upon my lips : then laid his leg  
Over my thigh, and sigh'd, and kiss'd ; and then  
Cry'd,—*Cursed fate ! that gave thee to the Moor !*

*Oth.* O monstrous ! monstrous !

*Iago.* Nay, this was but his dream.

*Oth.* But this denoted a foregone conclusion ;\*

'Tis a shrewd doubt, though it be but a dream.

*Iago.* And this may help to thicken other proofs,  
That do demonstrate thinly.

*Oth.* I'll tear her all to pieces.

*Iago.* Nay, but be wise : yet we see nothing done ;  
She may be honest yet. Tell me but this,—  
Have you not sometimes seen a handkerchief,  
Spotted with strawberries, in your wife's hand ?

*Oth.* I gave her such a one ; 'twas my first gift.

*Iago.* I know not that : but such a handkerchief,  
(I am sure it was your wife's,) did I to-day  
See Cassio wipe his beard with.

*Oth.* If it be that,—

*Iago.* If it be that, or any that was her's,

\* — a foregone conclusion ;] A conclusion in Shakspeare's time meant an experiment or trial.

It speaks against her with the other proofs.

*Oth.* O, that the slave had forty thousand lives;  
One is too poor, too weak for my revenge!  
Now do I see 'tis true.—Look here, Iago;  
All my fond love thus I do blow to heaven:  
'Tis gone.—

Arise, black vengeance, from thy hollow cell!  
Yield up, O love, thy crown, and hearted throne,<sup>9</sup>  
To tyrannous hate! swell, bosom, with thy fraught,<sup>1</sup>  
For 'tis of aspicks' tongues!

*Iago.* Pray, be content.

*Oth.* O, blood, Iago, blood!

*Iago.* Patience, I say; your mind, perhaps, may  
change.

*Oth.* Never, Iago. Like to the Pontick sea,  
Whose icy current and compulsive course  
Ne'er feels retiring ebb, but keeps due on  
To the Propontick, and the Hellespont;  
Even so my bloody thoughts, with violent pace,  
Shall ne'er look back, ne'er ebb to humble love,  
Till that a capable<sup>2</sup> and wide revenge  
Swallow them up.—Now, by yond' marble heaven,  
In the due reverence of a sacred vow [*Kneels.*  
I here engage my words.

*Iago.* Do not rise yet.—

[*Kneels.*

Witness, you ever-burning lights above!  
You elements that clip us round about!  
Witness, that here Iago doth give up  
The execution<sup>3</sup> of his wit, hands, heart,  
To wrong'd Othello's service! let him command,

<sup>9</sup> — hearted *throne*,] *Hearted throne*, is the heart on which thou wast *enthroned*.

<sup>1</sup> — *swell, bosom, &c.*] i. e. *swell*, because the fraught is of poison.

<sup>2</sup> — a capable —] *Capable* perhaps signifies ample, capacious.

<sup>3</sup> The execution —] i. e. *employment or exercise*.



And to obey shall be in me remorse,  
What bloody work soever.<sup>4</sup>

*Oth.* I greet thy love,  
Not with vain thanks, but with acceptance bounte-  
ous,

And will upon the instant put thee to't :  
Within these three days let me hear thee say,  
That Cassio's not alive.

*Iago.* My friend is dead; 'tis done, at your request :  
But let her live.

*Oth.* Damn her, lewd minx ! O, damn her !  
Come, go with me apart ; I will withdraw,  
To furnish me with some swift means of death  
For the fair devil. Now art thou my lieutenant.

*Iago.* I am your own for ever. [Exeunt.]

#### SCENE IV.

*The same.*

*Enter DESDEMONA, EMILIA, and Clown.*

*Des.* Do you know, sirrah, where lieutenant  
Cassio lies ?

*Clo.* I dare not say, he lies any where.

*Des.* Why, man ?

*Clo.* He is a soldier ; and for me to say a soldier  
lies, is stabbing.

*Des.* Go to ; Where lodges he ?

*Clo.* To tell you where he lodges, is to tell you  
where I lie.

<sup>4</sup> ——— let him command,

*And to obey shall be in me remorse,*

*What bloody work soever.] Iago devotes himself to wronged  
Othello, and says, Let him command whatever bloody business,  
and in me it shall be an act, not of cruelty, but of tenderness, to  
obey him : not of malice to others, but of tenderness for him.*

*Des.* Can any thing be made of this?

*Clo.* I know not where he lodges; and for me to devise a lodging, and say—he lies here, or he lies there, were to lie in my own throat.

*Des.* Can you enquire him out, and be edified by report?

*Clo.* I will catechize the world for him; that is, make questions, and by them answer.<sup>5</sup>

*Des.* Seek him, bid him come hither; tell him, I have moved my lord in his behalf, and hope, all will be well.

*Clo.* To do this, is within the compass of man's wit; and therefore I will attempt the doing it.

[*Exit.*

*Des.* Where should I lose that handkerchief, Emilia?

*Emil.* I know not, madam.

*Des.* Believe me, I had rather have lost my purse Full of cruzadoes.<sup>6</sup> And, but my noble Moor Is true of mind, and made of no such baseness As jealous creatures are, it were enough To put him to ill thinking.

*Emil.* Is he not jealous?

*Des.* Who, he? I think, the sun, where he was born, Drew all such humours from him.

*Emil.* Look, where he comes.

*Des.* I will not leave him now, till Cassio Be call'd to him.—How is't with you, my lord?

<sup>5</sup> — and *by* them answer.] i. e. and by them, *when answered*, form my own answer to you. The quaintness of the expression is in character.

<sup>6</sup> — *cruzadoes.*] A Portuguese coin, in value three shillings sterling. So called from the cross stamped upon it.

*Enter OTHELLO.*

*Oth.* Well, my good lady :—[*Aside.*] O, hardness to dissemble !—

How do you, Desdemona ?

*Des.* Well, my good lord.

*Oth.* Give me your hand : This hand is moist, my lady.

*Des.* It yet has felt no age, nor known no sorrow.

*Oth.* This argues fruitfulness, and liberal heart ;—  
Hot, hot, and moist : This hand of yours requires  
A sequester from liberty, fasting and prayer,  
Much castigation, exercise devout ;<sup>7</sup>  
For here's a young and sweating devil here,  
That commonly rebels. 'Tis a good hand,  
A frank one.

*Des.* You may, indeed, say so ;  
For 'twas that hand that gave away my heart.

*Oth.* A liberal hand : The hearts of old, gave  
hands :

But our new heraldry is—hands, not hearts.

*Des.* I cannot speak of this. Come now your  
promise.

*Oth.* What promise, chuck ?

*Des.* I have sent to bid Cassio come speak with  
you.

*Oth.* I have a salt and sullen rheum<sup>8</sup> offends me ;  
Lend me thy handkerchief.

*Des.* Here, my lord.

*Oth.* That which I gave you.

*Des.* I have it not about me.

*Oth.* Not ?

*Des.* No, indeed, my lord.

<sup>7</sup> — exercise devout ;] *Exercise* was the religious term.

<sup>8</sup> — salt and sullen rheum —] *Sullen*, that is, a rheum obstinately troublesome.

*Oth.* That is a fault :  
 That handkerchief  
 Did an Egyptian to my mother give;  
 She was a charmer, and could almost read  
 The thoughts of people: she told her, while she  
     kept it,  
 'Twould make her amiable, and subdue my father  
 Entirely to her love; but if she lost it,  
 Or made a gift of it, my father's eye  
 Should hold her loathly, and his spirits should hunt  
 After new fancies: She, dying, gave it me;  
 And bid me, when my fate would have me wive,  
 To give it her. I did so: and take heed of't,  
 Make it a darling like your precious eye;  
 To lose or give't away, were such perdition,  
 As nothing else could match.

*Des.* Is it possible?

*Oth.* 'Tis true: there's magick in the web of it:  
 A sibyl, that had number'd in the world  
 The sun to make two hundred compasses,  
 In her prophetick fury sew'd the work:  
 The worms were hallow'd that did breed the silk;  
 And it was died in mummy,<sup>9</sup> which the skilful  
 Conserv'd of maidens' hearts.

*Des.* Indeed! is't true?

*Oth.* Most veritable; therefore look to't well.

*Des.* Then 'would to heaven, that I had never  
     seen it.

*Oth.* Ha! wherefore?

*Des.* Why do you speak so startingly and rash?<sup>1</sup>

<sup>9</sup> *And it was died in mummy, &c.*] The balsamick liquor running from *mummies* was formerly celebrated for its anti-epileptic virtues. We are now wise enough to know, that the qualities ascribed to it are all imaginary; and yet this fanciful medicine still holds a place in the principal shops where drugs are sold; and it is still much coveted by painters, as a transparent brown colour that throws a warmth into their shadows.

<sup>1</sup> ——— *rash?*] Is *vehement, violent*.

*Oth.* Is't lost? is't gone? speak, is it out of the way?

*Des.* Heaven bless us!

*Oth.* Say you?

*Des.* It is not lost; But what an if it were?

*Oth.* Ha!

*Des.* I say, it is not lost.

*Oth.* Fetch't, let me see it.

*Des.* Why, so I can, sir, but I will not now;

This is a trick, to put me from my suit;

I pray, let Cassio be receiv'd again.

*Oth.* Fetch me that handkerchief: my mind misgives.

*Des.* Come, come;

You'll never meet a more sufficient man.

*Oth.* The handkerchief,——

*Des.* I pray, talk me of Cassio.

*Oth.* The handkerchief,——

*Des.* A man that, all his time,

Hath founded his good fortune on your love;

Shar'd dangers with you;——

*Oth.* The handkerchief,——

*Des.* In sooth,

You are to blame.

*Oth.* Away! [*Exit OTHELLO.*

*Emil.* Is not this man jealous?

*Des.* I ne'er saw this before.

Sure, there's some wonder in this handkerchief;

I am most unhappy in the loss of it.

*Emil.* 'Tis not a year or two shows us a man:

They are all but stomachs, and we all but food;

They eat us hungerly, and when they are full,

They belch us. Look you! Cassio, and my husband.

*Enter IAGO and CASSIO.*

*Iago.* There is no other way; 'tis she must do't;

And, lo, the happiness! go, and impórtune her.

*Des.* How now, good Cassio? what's the news with you?

*Cas.* Madam, my former suit: I do beseech you, That, by your virtuous means, I may again Exist, and be a member of his love, Whom I, with all the duty of my heart, Entirely honour; I would not be delay'd: If my offence be of such mortal kind, That neither service past, nor present sorrows, Nor purpos'd merit in futurity, Can ransom me into his love again, But to know so must be my benefit; So shall I clothe me in a forc'd content, And shut myself up in some other course, To fortune's alms.<sup>2</sup>

*Des.* Alas! thrice-gentle Cassio, My advocacy is not now in tune; My lord is not my lord; nor should I know him, Were he in favour,<sup>3</sup> as in humour, alter'd. So help me, every spirit sanctified, As I have spoken for you all my best, And stood within the blank of his displeasure,<sup>4</sup> For my free speech! You must a while be patient: What I can do, I will; and more I will, Than for myself I dare: let that suffice you.

*Iago.* Is my lord angry?

*Emil.* He went hence but now, And, certainly, in strange unquietness.

*Iago.* Can he be angry? I have seen the cannon,

<sup>2</sup> *And shut myself up in some other course, To fortune's alms.*] Being discarded from the military line, he purposes to confine or shut himself up, as he formerly had, within the limits of a new profession.

<sup>3</sup> — in favour,] In look, in countenance.

<sup>4</sup> — within the blank of his displeasure,] Within the shot of his anger.

When it hath blown his ranks into the air;<sup>5</sup>  
 And, like the devil, from his very arm  
 Puff'd his own brother;—And can he be angry?  
 Something of moment, then: I will go meet him;  
 There's matter in't indeed, if he be angry.

*Des.* I pr'ythee, do so.—Something, sure, of  
 state,— [Exit IAGO.]

Either from Venice; or some unhatch'd practice,<sup>6</sup>  
 Made démonstrable here in Cyprus to him,—  
 Hath puddled his clear spirit: and, in such cases,  
 Men's natures wrangle with inferior things,  
 Though great ones are their object. 'Tis even so;  
 For let our finger ache, and it indues<sup>7</sup>  
 Our other healthful members ev'n to that sense  
 Of pain: Nay, we must think, men are not gods;  
 Nor of them look for such observances  
 As fit the bridal.<sup>8</sup>—Beshrew me much, Emilia,  
 I was (unhandsome warrior as I am,<sup>9</sup>)  
 Arraigning his unkindness with my soul;  
 But now I find, I had suborn'd the witness,  
 And he's indited falsely.

*Emil.* Pray heaven, it be state matters, as you  
 think;

And no conception, nor no jealous toy,  
 Concerning you.

*Des.* Alas, the day! I never gave him cause.

<sup>5</sup> ——— *I have seen the cannon,*

*When it hath blown, &c.]* In Iago's speech something is suppressed. He means to say, I have seen his ranks blown into the air, and his own brother puff'd from his side,—and mean while have seen him cool and unruffled. And can he now be angry?

<sup>6</sup> ——— *some unhatch'd practice,]* Some treason that has not taken effect.

<sup>7</sup> *For let our finger ache, and it indues —]* I believe it should be rather, *Subdues our other healthful members to a sense of pain.*

JOHNSON.

<sup>8</sup> ——— *the bridal.]* i. e. the nuptial feast: a Saxon word.

<sup>9</sup> ——— *(unhandsome warrior as I am,)]* Unhandsome warrior, is evidently unfair assailant.

*Emil.* But jealous souls will not be answer'd so;  
They are not ever jealous for the cause,  
But jealous for they are jealous: 'tis a monster,  
Begot upon itself, born on itself.

*Des.* Heaven keep that monster from Othello's  
mind!

*Emil.* Lady, amen.

*Des.* I will go seek him.—*Cassio*, walk hereabout:  
If I do find him fit, I'll move your suit,  
And seek to effect it to my uttermost.

*Cas.* I humbly thank your ladyship.

[*Exeunt DESDEMONA and EMILIA.*]

*Enter BIANCA,*

*Bian.* Save you, friend *Cassio*!

*Cas.* What make you from home?  
How is it with you, my most fair *Bianca*?  
I'faith, sweet love, I was coming to your house.

*Bian.* And I was going to your lodging, *Cassio*.  
What! keep a week away? seven days and nights?  
Eight score eight hours? and lovers' absent hours,  
More tedious than the dial eight score times?  
O weary reckoning!

*Cas.* Pardon me, *Bianca*;  
I have this while with leaden thoughts been press'd;  
But I shall, in a more continue time,<sup>1</sup>  
Strike off this score of absence. Sweet *Bianca*,

[*Giving her DESDEMONA's Handkerchief.*]  
Take me this work out.<sup>2</sup>

*Bian.* O, *Cassio*, whence came this?  
This is some token from a newer friend.  
To the felt absence now I feel a cause:

<sup>1</sup> — in a more continue time,] A more *continue* time is time less interrupted, time which I can call more my own.

<sup>2</sup> Take me this work out.] The meaning is not, "Pick out the work, and leave the ground plain;" but, "Copy this work in another handkerchief."



Is it come to this? Well, well.

*Cas.* Woman, go to!

Throw your vile guesses in the devil's teeth,  
From whence you have them. You are jealous now,  
That this is from some mistress, some remembrance:  
No, in good troth, Bianca.

*Bian.* Why, whose is it?

*Cas.* I know not, sweet: I found it in my chamber.  
I like the work well; ere it be demanded,  
(As like enough, it will,) I'd have it copied:  
Take it, and do't; and leave me for this time.

*Bian.* Leave you! wherefore?

*Cas.* I do attend here on the general;  
And think it no addition, nor my wish,  
To have him see me woman'd.

*Bian.* Why, I pray you?

*Cas.* Not that I love you not.

*Bian.* But that you do not love me.

I pray you, bring me on the way a little;  
And say, if I shall see you soon at night.

*Cas.* 'Tis but a little way, that I can bring you,  
For I attend here: but I'll see you soon.

*Bian.* 'Tis very good; I must be circumstanc'd.<sup>3</sup>  
[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I. *The same.*

*Enter OTHELLO and IAGO.*

*Iago.* Will you think so?

*Oth.* Think so, Iago?

<sup>3</sup> — *I must be circumstanc'd.*] Rather, I must give way to circumstances.

*Iago.* What,  
To kiss in private ?

*Oth.* An unauthoriz'd kiss.

*Iago.* Or to be naked with her friend abed,  
An hour, or more, not meaning any harm ?

*Oth.* Naked abed, Iago, and not mean harm ?  
It is hypocrisy against the devil :<sup>4</sup>

They that mean virtuously, and yet do so,  
The devil their virtue tempts, and they tempt heaven.

*Iago.* So they do nothing, 'tis a venial slip :  
But if I give my wife a handkerchief,——

*Oth.* What then ?

*Iago.* Why, then 'tis hers, my lord ; and, being  
hers,

She may, I think, bestow't on any man.

*Oth.* She is protectress of her honour too ;  
May she give that ?

*Iago.* Her honour is an essence that's not seen ;  
They have it very oft, that have it not :  
But, for the handkerchief,——

*Oth.* By heaven, I would most gladly have forgot  
it :—

Thou said'st,—O, it comes o'er my memory,  
As doth the raven o'er the infected house,  
Boding to all,——he had my handkerchief,

*Iago.* Ay, what of that ?

*Oth.* That's not so good, now.

*Iago.* What, if I had said, I had seen him do you  
wrong ?

Or heard him say,—As knaves be such abroad,

<sup>4</sup> *It is hypocrisy against the devil :*] *Hypocrisy against the devil* means hypocrisy to cheat the devil. As common hypocrites cheat men, by seeming good, and yet living wickedly, these men would cheat the devil, by giving him flattering hopes, and at last avoiding the crime which he thinks them ready to commit. JOHNSON.

<sup>5</sup> —— *boding to all*—] The raven was thought to be a constant attendant on a house, in which there was infection.

Who having, by their own importunate suit  
Or voluntary dotage of some mistress,  
Convinced or supplied them,<sup>6</sup> cannot choose  
But they must blab——

*Oth.* Hath he said any thing ?

*Iago.* He hath, my lord; but be you well assur'd,  
No more than he'll unswear.

*Oth.* What hath he said ?

*Iago.* 'Faith, that he did,—I know not what he  
did.

*Oth.* What? what ?

*Iago.* Lie——

*Oth.* With her ?

*Iago.* With her, on her ; what you will.

*Oth.* Lie with her ! lie on her !—We say, lie on  
her, when they belie her : Lie with her ! that's  
fulsome.—Handkerchief,—confessions,—handker-  
chief.—To confess, and be hanged<sup>7</sup> for his labour.  
—First, to be hanged, and then to confess :—I  
tremble at it. Nature would not invest herself in  
such shadowing passion, without some instruction.<sup>8</sup>  
It is not words, that shake me thus :—Pish !—

<sup>6</sup> *Convinced or supplied them.*] Dr. Farmer is of opinion that *supplied* has here the same meaning as supplicated. But Mr. Steevens says that *Supplied* is the old spelling of *suppled*, i. e. softened.

<sup>7</sup> *—To confess, and be hanged.—*] This is a proverbial saying.

<sup>8</sup> *—without some instruction.*] Othello alludes to Cassio's dream, which had been invented and told him by Iago. When many confused and very interesting ideas pour in upon the mind all at once, and with such rapidity that it has not time to shape or digest them, if it does not relieve itself by tears (which we know it often does, whether for joy or grief) it produces stupefaction and fainting.

Othello, in broken sentences and single words, all of which have a reference to the cause of his jealousy, shows, that all the proofs are present at once to his mind; which so over-powers it, that he falls into a trance, the natural consequence.

STR. J. REYNOLDS.

Noses, ears, and lips :—Is it possible?—Confess!—  
Handkerchief!—O devil!— [*Falls in a Trance.*]

*Iago.* Work on,  
My medicine, work! Thus credulous fools are  
caught;  
And many worthy and chaste dames, even thus,  
All guiltless meet reproach.—What, ho! my lord!

*Enter CASSIO.*

My lord, I say! Othello!—How now, Cassio?

*Cas.* What is the matter?

*Iago.* My lord is fallen into an epilepsy;  
This is his second fit; he had one yesterday.

*Cas.* Rub him about the temples.

*Iago.*

No, forbear:

The lethargy must have his quiet course:  
If not, he foams at mouth; and, by and by,  
Breaks out to savage madness. Look, he stirs:  
Do you withdraw yourself a little while,  
He will recover straight; when he is gone,  
I would on great occasion speak with you.—

[*Exit CASSIO.*]

How is it, general? have you not hurt your head?

*Oth.* Dost thou mock me?

*Iago.* I mock you! no, by heaven:  
'Would, you would bear your fortunes like a man.

*Oth.* A horned man's a monster, and a beast.

*Iago.* There's many a beast then in a populous city,  
And many a civil monster.

*Oth.* Did he confess it?

*Iago.*

Good sir, be a man?

Think, every bearded fellow, that's but yok'd,  
May draw with you: there's millions now alive,  
That nightly lie in those unproper beds,<sup>9</sup>

<sup>9</sup> — in those unproper beds,] *Unproper*, for common.

Which they dare swear peculiar ; your case is better.  
 O, 'tis the spite of hell, the fiend's arch-mock,  
 To lip a wanton in a secure couch,<sup>1</sup>  
 And to suppose her chaste ! No, let me know ;  
 And, knowing what I am, I know what she shall be.

*Oth.* O, thou art wise ; 'tis certain.

*Iago.* Stand you awhile apart ;  
 Confine yourself but in a patient list.<sup>2</sup>  
 Whilst you were here, ere while mad with your  
 grief,

(A passion most unsuiting such a man,)  
 Cassio came hither : I shifted him away,  
 And laid good 'scuse upon your ecstasy ;  
 Bade him anon return, and here speak with me ;  
 The which he promis'd. Do but encave yourself,<sup>3</sup>  
 And mark the fleers, the gibes, and notable scorns,  
 That dwell in every region of his face ;  
 For I will make him tell the tale anew,—  
 Where, how, how oft, how long ago, and when  
 He hath, and is again to cope your wife ;  
 I say, but mark his gesture. Marry, patience ;  
 Or I shall say, you are all in all in spleen,  
 And nothing of a man.

\* *Oth.* Dost thou hear, Iago ?  
 I will be found most cunning in my patience ;  
 But (dost thou hear ?) most bloody.

*Iago.* That's not amiss ;  
 But yet keep time in all. Will you withdraw ?

[*OTHELLO withdraws.*]

Now will I question Cassio of Bianca,  
 A housewife, that, by selling her desires,  
 Buys herself bread and clothes : it is a creature,

<sup>1</sup> — in a secure couch,] In a couch in which he is lulled into a false security and confidence in his wife's virtue.

<sup>2</sup> — list.] List, or lists, is barriers, bounds. Keep your temper, says Iago, within the bounds of patience.

<sup>3</sup> — encave yourself,] Hide yourself in a private place.

That dotes on Cassio,—as 'tis the strumpet's plague,  
To beguile many, and be beguil'd by one ;—  
He, when he hears of her, cannot refrain  
From the excess of laughter :—Here he comes :—

*Re-enter CASSIO.*

As he shall smile, Othello shall go mad ;  
And his unbookish jealousy<sup>4</sup> must construe  
Poor Cassio's smiles, gestures, and light behaviour,  
Quite in the wrong.—How do you now, lieutenant ?

*Cas.* The worser, that you give me the addition,  
Whose want even kills me.

*Iago.* Ply Desdemona well, and you are sure o't.  
Now, if this suit lay in Bianca's power,

[*Speaking lower.*]  
How quickly should you speed ?

*Cas.* Alas, poor caitiff!

*Oth.* Look, how he laughs already ! [*Aside.*]

*Iago.* I never knew a woman love man so.

*Cas.* Alas, poor rogue ! I think i'faith, she loves  
me.

*Oth.* Now he denies it faintly, and laughs it out.  
[*Aside.*]

*Iago.* Do you hear, Cassio ?

*Oth.* Now he importunes him  
To tell it o'er : Go to ; well said, well said. [*Aside.*]

*Iago.* She gives it out, that you shall marry her :  
Do you intend it ?

*Cas.* Ha, ha, ha !

*Oth.* Do you triumph, Roman ? do you triumph ?  
[*Aside.*]

<sup>4</sup> And his unbookish jealousy —] *Unbookish*, for ignorant.

<sup>5</sup> Do you triumph, Roman? do you triumph? ] Othello calls him Roman ironically. *Triumph*, which was a Roman ceremony, brought Roman into his thoughts. What (says he) you are now triumphing as great as a Roman ? JOHNSON.

*Cas.* I marry her!—what? a customer!<sup>6</sup> I pr'ythee, bear some charity to my wit; do not think it so unwholesome. Ha, ha, ha!

*Oth.* So, so, so, so: They laugh that win.

[*Aside.*

*Iago.* 'Faith, the cry goes, that you shall marry her.

*Cas.* Pr'ythee, say true.

*Iago.* I am a very villain else.

*Oth.* Have you scored me?<sup>7</sup> Well. [*Aside.*

*Cas.* This is the monkey's own giving out: she is persuaded I will marry her, out of her own love and flattery, not out of my promise.

*Oth.* Iago beckons me; now he begins the story.

[*Aside.*

*Cas.* She was here even now; she haunts me in every place. I was, the other day, talking on the sea-bank with certain Venetians; and thither comes this bauble; by this hand, she falls thus about my neck;—

*Oth.* Crying, O dear Cassio! as it were: his gesture imports it. [*Aside.*

*Cas.* So hangs, and lolls, and weeps upon me; so hailes, and pulls me: ha, ha, ha!—

*Oth.* Now he tells, how she plucked him to my chamber: O, I see that nose of yours, but not that dog I shall throw it to. [*Aside.*

*Cas.* Well, I must leave her company.

*Iago.* Before me! look, where she comes.

*Enter BIANCA.*

*Cas.* 'Tis such another fitchew!<sup>8</sup> marry, a per-

<sup>6</sup> — a customer!] A common woman, one that invites custom.

<sup>7</sup> Have you scored me?] Have you made my reckoning? have you settled the term of my life? The old quarto reads—*stored* me? Have you disposed of me? have you laid me up?

<sup>8</sup> — fitchew!] A pole-cat.

fumed one.—What do you mean by this haunting of me?

*Bian.* Let the devil and his dam haunt you! What did you mean by that same handkerchief, you gave me even now? I was a fine fool to take it. I must take out the whole work?—A likely piece of work, that you should find it in your chamber, and not know who left it there! This is some minx's token, and I must take out the work? There,—give it your hobby horse: wheresoever you had it, I'll take out no work on't.

*Cas.* How now, my sweet Bianca? how now? how now?

*Oth.* By heaven, that should be my handkerchief! [Aside.]

*Bian.* An you'll come to supper to-night, you may: an you will not, come when you are next prepared for. [Exit.]

*Iago.* After her, after her.

*Cas.* 'Faith I must, she'll rail in the street else.

*Iago.* Will you sup there?

*Cas.* 'Faith, I intend so.

*Iago.* Well, I may chance to see you; for I would very fain speak with you.

*Cas.* Pr'ythee, come; Will you?

*Iago.* Go to; say no more. [Exit Cassio.]

*Oth.* How shall I murder him, Iago?

*Iago.* Did you perceive how he laughed at his vice?

*Oth.* O, Iago!

*Iago.* And did you see the handkerchief?

*Oth.* Was that mine?

*Iago.* Yours, by this hand: and to see how he prizes the foolish woman, your wife! she gave it him, and he hath given it his whore.

*Oth.* I would have him nine years a killing:—  
A fine woman! a fair woman! a sweet woman!



*Iago.* Nay, you must forget that.

*Oth.* Ay, let her rot, and perish, and be damned to-night; for she shall not live: No, my heart is turned to stone; I strike it, and it hurts my hand.<sup>9</sup> O, the world hath not a sweeter creature: she might lie by an emperor's side, and command him tasks.

*Iago.* Nay, that's not your way.

*Oth.* Hang her! I do but say what she is:—So delicate with her needle!—An admirable musician! O, she will sing the savageness out of a bear!—Of so high and plenteous wit and invention!

*Iago.* She's the worse for all this.

*Oth.* O, a thousand, a thousand times:—And then, of so gentle a condition!

*Iago.* Ay, too gentle.

*Oth.* Nay, that's certain: But yet the pity of it, Iago!—O, Iago, the pity of it, Iago!

*Iago.* If you are so fond over her iniquity, give her patent to offend; for, if it touch not you, it comes near nobody.

*Oth.* I will chop her into messes:—Cuckold me!

*Iago.* O, 'tis foul in her.

*Oth.* With mine officer!

*Iago.* That's fouler.

*Oth.* Get me some poison, Iago; this night:—I'll not expostulate with her, lest her body and beauty unprovide my mind again:—this night, Iago.

*Iago.* Do it not with poison, strangle her in her bed, even the bed she hath contaminated.

*Oth.* Good, good: the justice of it pleases; very good.

<sup>9</sup> No, my heart is turned to stone; I strike it, and it hurts my hand.] This thought as often as it occurs to Shakspeare, is sure to be received, and as often counteracts his *pathos*.

<sup>1</sup> — And then of so gentle a condition!] i. e. of so sweet a disposition.

*Iago.* And, for Cassio,—let me be his undertaker :  
You shall hear more by midnight.

[*A Trumpet within.*

*Oth.* Excellent good.—What trumpet is that  
same ?

*Iago.* Something from Venice, sure. 'Tis Lo-  
dovico,

Come from the duke: and, see, your wife is with him.

*Enter* LODOVICO, DESDEMONA, *and Attendants.*

*Lod.* 'Save you, worthy general !

*Oth.* With all my heart, sir.

*Lod.* The duke and senators of Venice greet you.

[*Gives him a Packet.*

*Oth.* I kiss the instrument of their pleasures.

[*Opens the Packet, and reads.*

*Des.* And what's the news, good cousin Lodo-  
vico ?

*Iago.* I am very glad to see you, signior ;  
Welcome to Cyprus.

*Lod.* I thank you : how does lieutenant Cassio ?

*Iago.* Lives, sir.

*Des.* Cousin, there's fallen between him and my  
lord

An unkind breach : but you shall make all well.

*Oth.* Are you sure of that ?

*Des.* My lord ?

*Oth.* *This fail you not to do, as you will—*

[*Reads.*

*Lod.* He did not call : he's busy in the paper.  
Is there division 'twixt thy lord and Cassio ?

*Des.* A most unhappy one ; I would do much  
To atone them,<sup>2</sup> for the love I bear to Cassio.

*Oth.* Fire and brimstone !

*Des.*

My lord ?

— atone them,] Make them one ; reconcile them.

*Oth.* Are you wise?

*Des.* What, is he angry?

*Lod.* 'May be, the letter mov'd him;  
For, as I think, they do command him home,  
Deputing Cassio in his government.

*Des.* By my troth, I am glad on't.

*Oth.* Indeed?

*Des.* My lord?

*Oth.* I am glad to see you mad.

*Des.* How, sweet Othello?

*Oth.* Devil! [Striking her.

*Des.* I have not deserv'd this.

*Lod.* My lord, this would not be believ'd in  
Venice,

Though I should swear I saw it: 'Tis very much;  
Make her amends, she weeps.

*Oth.* O devil, devil!

If that the earth could teem with woman's tears,<sup>3</sup>  
Each drop she falls<sup>4</sup> would prove a crocodile:—  
Out of my sight!

*Des.* I will not stay to offend you. [Going.

*Lod.* Truly, an obedient lady:—  
I do beseech your lordship, call her back.

*Oth.* Mistress——

*Des.* My lord?

*Oth.* What would you with her, sir?

*Lod.* Who, I, my lord?

*Oth.* Ay; you did wish, that I would make her  
turn:

Sir, she can turn, and turn, and yet go on,

<sup>3</sup> *If that the earth could teem, &c.*] Shakspeare here alludes to the fabulous accounts of crocodiles. Each tear, says Othello, which falls from the false Desdemona, would generate a crocodile, the most deceitful of all animals, and whose own tears are proverbially fallacious.

<sup>4</sup> *Each drop she falls—*] To fall is here a verb active.

And turn again ; and she can weep, sir, weep ;  
 And she's obedient, as you say,—obedient,—  
 Very obedient :—Proceed you in your tears.—  
 Concerning this, sir,—O well-painted passion !  
 I am commanded home :—Get you away :  
 I'll send for you anon.—Sir, I obey the mandate,  
 And will return to Venice ;—Hence, avaunt !

[*Exit DESDEMONA.*]

Cassio shall have my place. And,—sir, to-night,  
 I do entreat that we may sup together.  
 You are welcome, sir, to Cyprus. Goats and mon-  
 kies ! [Exit.]

*Lod.* Is this the noble Moor whom our full senate  
 Call—all-in-all sufficient ?—This the noble nature  
 Whom passion could not shake ? whose solid virtue  
 The shot of accident, nor dart of chance,  
 Could neither graze, nor pierce ?

*Iago.* He is much chang'd.

*Lod.* Are his wits safe ? is he not light of brain ?

*Iago.* He is that he is ; I may not breathe my  
 censure.

What he might be,—if, what he might, he is not,—  
 I would to heaven, he were.

*Lod.* What, strike his wife !

*Iago.* 'Faith, that was not so well ; Yet 'would I  
 knew,

That stroke would prove the worst.

*Lod.* Is it his use ?

Or did the letters work upon his blood,  
 And new-create this fault ?

*Iago.* Alas, alas !

It is not honesty in me, to speak  
 What I have seen and known. You shall observe him ;  
 And his own courses will denote him so,  
 That I may save my speech : Do but go after,  
 And mark how he continues.

*Lod.* I am sorry, that I am deceiv'd in him.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.

*A Room in the Castle.**Enter OTHELLO and EMILIA.**Oth.* You have seen nothing then ?*Emil.* Nor ever heard ; nor ever did suspect.*Oth.* Yes, you have seen Cassio and she together.*Emil.* But then I saw no harm ; and then I heard  
Each syllable, that breath made up between them.*Oth.* What, did they never whisper ?*Emil.* Never, my lord.*Oth.* Nor send you out o'the way ?*Emil.* Never.*Oth.* To fetch her fan, her gloves, her mask, nor  
nothing ?*Emil.* Never, my lord.*Oth.* That's strange.*Emil.* I durst, my lord, to wager she is honest,  
Lay down my soul at stake : if you think other,  
Remove your thought ; it doth abuse your bosom.  
If any wretch hath put this in your head,  
Let heaven requite it with the serpent's curse !  
For, if she be not honest, chaste, and true,  
There's no man happy ; the purest of their wives  
Is foul as slander.*Oth.* Bid her come hither :—go.—[*Exit EMILIA.*]She says enough ;—yet she's a simple bawd,  
That cannot say as much. This is a subtle whore,  
A closet-lock-and-key of villainous secrets :  
And yet she'll kneel, and pray ; I have seen her do't.*Re-enter EMILIA, with DESDEMONA.**Des.* My lord, what is your will ?

*Oth.* Pray, chuck, come hither.

*Des.* What is your pleasure?

*Oth.* Let me see your eyes;

Look in my face.

*Des.* What horrible fancy's this?

*Oth.* Some of your function, mistress;

[*To EMILIA.*

Leave procreants alone, and shut the door;

Cough, or cry—hem, if any body come:

Your mystery, your mystery;—nay, despatch.

[*Exit EMILIA.*

*Des.* Upon my knees, what doth your speech import?

I understand a fury in your words,

But not the words.

*Oth.* Why, what art thou?

*Des.* Your wife, my lord; your true  
And loyal wife.

*Oth.* Come, swear it, damn thyself;  
Lest, being like one of heaven, the devils themselves  
Should fear to seize thee: therefore be double-  
damn'd,

Swear—thou art honest.

*Des.* Heaven doth truly know it.

*Oth.* Heaven truly knows, that thou art false as  
hell.

*Des.* To whom, my lord? with whom? How am  
I false?

*Oth.* O Desdemona!—away! away! away!

*Des.* Alas, the heavy day!—Why do you weep?  
Am I the occasion of these tears, my lord?

If, haply, you my father do suspect,

An instrument of this your calling back,

Lay not your blame on me; if you have lost him,

Why, I have lost him too.

*Oth.* Had it pleas'd heaven  
To try me with affliction; had he rain'd

All kinds of sores, and shames, on my bare head ;  
 Steep'd me in poverty to the very lips ;  
 Given to captivity me and my utmost hopes ;  
 I should have found in some part of my soul  
 A drop of patience : but (alas !) to make me  
 A fixed figure, for the time of scorn  
 To point his slow unmoving finger at,—  
 O ! O !

Yet could I bear that too ; well, very well :  
 But there, where I have garner'd up my heart ;<sup>4</sup>  
 Where either I must live, or bear no life ;  
 The fountain from the which my current runs,  
 Or else dries up ; to be discarded thence !  
 Or keep it as a cistern, for foul toads  
 To knot and gender in !—turn thy complexion  
 there !

Patience, thou young and rose-lipp'd cherubin ;  
 Ay, there, look grim as hell !<sup>5</sup>

*Des.* I hope, my noble lord esteems me honest.

*Oth.* O, ay ; as summer flies are in the shambles,  
 That quicken even with blowing. O thou weed,  
 Who art so lovely fair, and smell'st so sweet,  
 That the sense aches at thee.—Would, thou had'st  
 ne'er been born !

*Des.* Alas, what ignorant sin have I committed ?

*Oth.* Was this fair paper, this most goodly book,  
 Made to write whore upon ? What committed !  
 Committed !—O thou publick commoner !  
 I should make very forges of my cheeks,  
 That would to cinders burn up modesty,  
 Did I but speak thy deeds.—What committed !  
 Heaven stops the nose at it, and the moon winks ;

<sup>4</sup> ——— garner'd up my heart ; ] That is, *treasured up* : the *garner* and the *fountain* are improperly conjoined.

<sup>5</sup> ——— turn thy complexion there ! &c.] At such an object do thou, *patience*, thyself change colour ; at this do thou, even thou, *rosy cherub* as thou art, look as *grim as hell*.

The bawdy wind, that kisses all it meets,  
Is hush'd within the hollow mine of earth,  
And will not hear it: What committed!  
Impudent strumpet!

*Des.* By heaven, you do me wrong.

*Oth.* Are not you a strumpet?

*Des.* No, as I am a christian:  
If to preserve this vessel for my lord,  
From any other foul unlawful touch,  
Be—not to be a strumpet, I am none.

*Oth.* What, not a whore?

*Des.* No, as I shall be saved.

*Oth.* Is it possible?

*Des.* O, heaven forgive us!

*Oth.* I cry you mercy, then:  
I took you for that cunning whore of Venice,  
That married with Othello.—You, mistress,

*Re-enter EMILIA.*

That have the office opposite to Saint Peter,  
And keep the gate of hell; You! you! ay, you!  
We have done our course; there's money for your  
pains;

I pray you, turn the key, and keep our counsel:

[*Exit.*

*Emil.* Alas, what does this gentleman conceive?—  
How do you, madam? how do you, my good lady?

*Des.* Faith, half asleep.

*Emil.* Good madam, what's the matter with my  
lord?

*Des.* With who?

*Emil.* Why, with my lord, madam.

*Des.* Who is thy lord?

*Emil.* He that is yours, sweet lady.

*Des.* I have none: Do not talk to me, Emilia;  
I cannot weep; nor answer I have none,



But what should go by water. Pr'ythee, to-night  
Lay on my bed my wedding sheets,—remember ;—  
And call thy husband hither.

*Emil.* Here is a change, indeed!

[*Exit.*]

*Des.* 'Tis meet I should be us'd so, very meet.  
How have I been behav'd, that he might stick  
The small'st opinion on my great'st abuse?

*Re-enter EMILIA, with IAGO.*

*Iago.* What is your pleasure, madam? How is it  
with you?

*Des.* I cannot tell. Those, that do teach young  
babes,

Do it with gentle means, and easy tasks :  
He might have chid me so ; for, in good faith,  
I am a child to chiding.

*Iago.* What's the matter, lady?

*Emil.* Alas, Iago, my lord hath so bewhor'd her,  
Thrown such despite and heavy terms upon her,  
As true hearts cannot bear.

*Des.* Am I that name, Iago?

*Iago.* What name, fair lady?

*Des.* Such as, she says, my lord did say I was.

*Emil.* He call'd her, whore; a beggar, in his drink,  
Could not have laid such terms upon his callet.<sup>6</sup>

*Iago.* Why did he so?

*Des.* I do not know; I am sure, I am none such.

*Iago.* Do not weep, do not weep; Alas, the day!

*Emil.* Has she forsook so many noble matches,  
Her father, and her country, and her friends,  
To be call'd—whore? would it not make one weep?

*Des.* It is my wretched fortune.

<sup>6</sup> — upon his callet.] *Callet* is a lewd woman; so called (says Dr. Grey) from the French *calote*, which was a sort of head-dress worn by country girls.

*Iago.* Beshrew him for it!  
How comes this trick upon him?

*Des.* Nay, heaven doth know.

*Emil.* I will be hang'd, if some eternal villain,  
Some busy and insinuating rogue,  
Some cogging cozening slave, to get some office,  
Have not devis'd this slander; I'll be hang'd, else.

*Iago.* Fye, there is no such man; it is impossible.

*Des.* If any such there be, heaven pardon him!

*Emil.* A halter pardon him! and hell gnaw his  
bones!

Why should he call her, whore? who keeps her  
company?

What place? what time? what form? what likeli-  
hood?

The Moor's abus'd by some most villainous knave,  
Some base notorious knave, some scurvy fellow:—  
O, heaven, that such companions<sup>7</sup> thou'dst unfold;  
And put in every honest hand a whip,  
To lash the rascal naked through the world,  
Even from the east to the west!

*Iago.* Speak within door.<sup>8</sup>

*Emil.* O, fye upon him! some such squire he was,  
That turn'd your wit the seamy side without,<sup>9</sup>  
And made you to suspect me with the Moor.

*Iago.* You are a fool; go to.

*Des.* O good Iago,

What shall I do to win my lord again?  
Good friend, go to him; for, by this light of heaven,  
I know not how I lost him. Here I kneel:—  
If e'er my will did trespass 'gainst his love,

<sup>7</sup> — such companions—] *Companion*, in the time of Shakspeare, was used as a word of contempt, in the same sense as *fellow* is at this day.

<sup>8</sup> *Speak within door.*] Do not clamour so as to be heard beyond the house.

<sup>9</sup> — the seamy side without,] That is, *inside out*.

Either in discourse of thought, or actual deed;  
 Or that mine eyes, mine ears, or any sense,  
 Delighted them in any other form;  
 Or that I do not yet, and ever did,  
 And ever will,—though he do shake me off  
 To beggarly divorcement,—love him dearly,  
 Comfort forswear me! Unkindness may do much;  
 And his unkindness may defeat my life,  
 But never taint my love. I cannot say whore;  
 It does abhor me, now I speak the word;  
 To do the act that might the addition earn,  
 Not the world's mass of vanity could make me.

*Iago.* I pray you, be content; 'tis but his humour;  
 The business of the state does him offence,  
 And he does chide with you.

*Des.* If 'twere no other,—

*Iago.* It is but so, I warrant you. [*Trumpets.*  
 Hark, how these instruments summon to supper!  
 And the great messengers of Venice stay;  
 Go in, and weep not: all things shall be well.  
 [*Exeunt DEMONIA and EMILIA.*

*Enter RODERIGO.*

How now, Roderigo?

*Rod.* I do not find, that thou deal'st justly with me.

*Iago.* What in the contrary.

*Rod.* Every day thou doff'st me with some device,  
 Iago; and rather (as it seems to me now,) keep'st  
 from me all conveniency, than suppliest me with the  
 least advantage of hope. I will, indeed, no longer  
 endure it: Nor am I yet persuaded, to put up in  
 peace what already I have foolishly suffered.

*Iago.* Will you hear me, Roderigo?

*Rod.* 'Faith, I have heard too much; for your  
 words, and performances, are no kin together.

*Iago.* You charge me most unjustly.

*Rod.* With nought but truth. I have wasted myself out of my means. The jewels you have had from me, to deliver to Desdemona, would half have corrupted a votarist: You have told me—she has received them, and returned me expectations and comforts of sudden respect and acquittance; but I find none.

*Iago.* Well; go to; very well.

*Rod.* Very well! go to! I cannot go to, man; nor 'tis not very well: By this hand, I say, it is very scurvy; and begin to find myself fobbed in it.

*Iago.* Very well.

*Rod.* I tell you, 'tis not very well. I will make myself known to Desdemona: If she will return me my jewels, I will give over my suit, and repent my unlawful solicitation; if not, assure yourself, I will seek satisfaction of you.

*Iago.* You have said now.

*Rod.* Ay, and I have said nothing, but what I protest intendment of doing.

*Iago.* Why, now I see there's mettle in thee; and even, from this instant, do build on thee a better opinion than ever before. Give me thy hand, Roderigo: Thou hast taken against me a most just exception; but, yet, I protest, I have dealt most directly in thy affair.

*Rod.* It hath not appeared.

*Iago.* I grant, indeed, it hath not appeared; and your suspicion is not without wit and judgment. But, Roderigo, if thou hast that within thee indeed, which I have greater reason to believe now than ever,—I mean, purpose, courage, and valour,—this night show it: if thou the next night following en-

' — and acquittance;] *Acquittance* is requital.

joyest not Desdemona, take me from this world with treachery, and devise engines for my life.<sup>2</sup>

*Rod.* Well, what is it? is it within reason, and compass?

*Iago.* Sir, there is especial commission come from Venice, to depute Cassio in Othello's place.

*Rod.* Is that true? why, then Othello and Desdemona return again to Venice.

*Iago.* O, no; he goes into Mauritania, and takes away with him the fair Desdemona, unless his abode be lingered here by some accident; wherein none can be so determinate, as the removing of Cassio.

*Rod.* How do you mean—removing of him?

*Iago.* Why, by making him incapable of Othello's place; knocking out his brains.

*Rod.* And that you would have me do?

*Iago.* Ay; if you dare do yourself a profit, and a right. He sups to-night with a harlot, and thither will I go to him;—he knows not yet of his honourable fortune: if you will watch his going thence, (which I will fashion to fall out between twelve and one,) you may take him at your pleasure; I will be near to second your attempt, and he shall fall between us. Come, stand not amazed at it, but go along with me; I will show you such a necessity in his death, that you shall think yourself bound to put it on him. It is now high supper-time, and the night grows to waste: about it.

*Rod.* I will hear further reason for this.

*Iago.* And you shall, be satisfied. [*Exeunt.*]

<sup>2</sup> — *devise engines for my life, &c.*] To *devise engines*, seems to mean, to contrive racks, tortures, &c.

## . SCENE III.

*Another Room in the Castle*

*Enter OTHELLO, LODOVICO, DESDEMONA, EMILIA,  
and Attendants.*

*Lod.* I do beseech you, sir, trouble yourself no further.

*Oth.* O, pardon me; 'twill do me good to walk.

*Lod.* Madam, good night; I humbly thank your ladyship.

*Des.* Your honour is most welcome.

*Oth.* Will you walk, sir?—

O,—Desdemona,—

*Des.* My lord?

*Oth.* Get you to bed on the instant; I will be returned forthwith: dismiss your attendant there; look, it be done.

*Des.* I will, my lord.

[*Exeunt OTHELLO, LODOVICO, and Attendants.*]

*Emil.* How goes it now? he looks gentler than he did.

*Des.* He says, he will return incontinent;  
He hath commanded me to go to bed,  
And bade me to dismiss you.

*Emil.* Dismiss me!

*Des.* It was his bidding; therefore, good Emilia,  
Give me my nightly wearing, and adieu:  
We must not now displease him.

*Emil.* I would, you had never seen him!

*Des.* So would not I; my love doth so approve him,

That even his stubbornness, his checks, and frowns,—  
Pr'ythee, unpin me,—have grace and favour in them.

*Emil.* I have laid those sheets you bade me on the bed.

*Des.* All's one:—Good father! how foolish are our minds!—

If I do die before thee, pr'ythee, shroud me  
In one of those same sheets.

*Emil.* Come, come, you talk.

*Des.* My mother had a maid call'd—Barbara;  
She was in love; and he, she lov'd, prov'd mad,<sup>3</sup>  
And did forsake her: she had a song of—willow,  
An old thing 'twas, but it express'd her fortune,  
And she died singing it: That song, to-night,  
Will not go from my mind; I have much to do,  
But to go hang my head<sup>4</sup> all at one side,  
And sing it like poor Barbara. Pr'ythee, despatch.

*Emil.* Shall I go fetch your night-gown?

*Des.* No, unpin me here.—  
This Lodovico is a proper man.

*Emil.* A very handsome man.

*Des.* And he speaks well.

*Emil.* I know a lady in Venice, who would have  
walked barefoot to Palestine, for a touch of his ne-  
ther lip.

# I.

*Des.* *The poor soul<sup>5</sup> sat sighing by a sycamore  
tree,* [Singing.

*Sing all a green willow;  
Her hand on her bosom, her head on her knee,  
Sing willow, willow, willow:*

<sup>3</sup> — and he, she lov'd, prov'd mad,] *Mad*, in the present in-  
stance, ought to mean—inconstant.

<sup>4</sup> — I have much to do,  
*But to go hang my head —*] *I have much ado to do any thing  
but hang my head.*

<sup>5</sup> *The poor soul, &c.*] This song, in two parts, is printed in Dr.  
Percy's collection of old ballads; the lines preserved here differ  
somewhat from the copy discovered by the ingenious collector.

*The fresh streams ran by her, and murmur'd her  
moans ;*

*Sing willow, &c.*

*Her salt tears fell from her, and soften'd the stones ;*

Lay by these :

*Sing willow, willow, willow ;*

Pr'ythee, hie thee ; he'll come anon.—

*Sing all a green willow must be my garland.*

## II.

*Let nobody blame him, his scorn I approve,—*

Nay, that's not next.—Hark ! who is it that knocks ?

*Emil.* It is the wind.

*Des.* *I call'd my love, false love ;<sup>6</sup> but what said he  
then ?*

*Sing willow, &c.*

*If I court no women, you'll couch with no men.*

So, get thee gone ; good night. Mine eyes do itch ;  
Doth that bode weeping ?

*Emil.*

'Tis neither here nor there.

*Des.* I have heard it said so.—O, these men,  
these men !—

Dost thou in conscience think,—tell me, Emilia,—  
That there be women do abuse their husbands  
In such gross kind ?

*Emil.*

There be some such, no question.

*Des.* Would'st thou do such a deed for all the world ?

<sup>6</sup> *I call'd my love, false love ;*] This couplet is not in the ballad, which is the complaint, not of a woman forsaken, but of a man rejected. These lines were properly added when it was accommodated to a woman.



*Emil.* Why, would not you?

*Des.* No, by this heavenly light!

*Emil.* Nor I neither by this heavenly light;  
I might do't as well i'the dark.

*Des.* Would'st thou do such a deed for all the world?

*Emil.* The world is a huge thing : 'Tis a great price  
For a small vice.

*Des.* Good troth, I think thou would'st not.

*Emil.* By my troth, I think I should; and undo't,  
when I had done. Marry, I would not do such a  
thing for a joint-ring;<sup>7</sup> nor for measures of lawn;  
nor for gowns, petticoats, nor caps, nor any petty  
exhibition : but, for the whole world,—Why, who  
would not make her husband a cuckold, to make  
him a monarch? I should venture purgatory for't.

*Des.* Beshrew me, if I would do such a wrong  
for the whole world.

*Emil.* Why, the wrong is but a wrong i'the  
world; and, having the world for your labour, 'tis  
a wrong in your own world, and you might quickly  
make it right.

*Des.* I do not think there is any such woman.

*Emil.* Yes, a dozen; and as many  
To the vantage,<sup>8</sup> as would store the world they  
play'd for.

But, I do think, it is their husbands' faults,  
If wives do fall: Say, that they slack their duties,  
And pour out treasures into foreign laps;  
Or else break out in peevish jealousies,  
Throwing restraint upon us; or, say, they strike us,  
Or scant our former having<sup>9</sup> in despite;  
Why, we have galls; and, though we have some grace,  
Yet we have some revenge. Let husbands know,

<sup>7</sup> ——— for a joint-ring;] Anciently a common token among  
lovers.

<sup>8</sup> To the vantage,] i. e. to boot, over and above.

<sup>9</sup> ——— our former having —] Our former allowance of expence.



And he grows angry.<sup>1</sup> Now whether he kill Cassio,  
 Or Cassio him, or each do kill the other,  
 Every way makes my gain: Live Roderigo,  
 He calls me to a restitution large  
 Of gold, and jewels, that I bobb'd from him,<sup>2</sup>  
 As gifts to Desdemona;  
 It must not be: if Cassio do remain,  
 He hath a daily beauty in his life,  
 That makes me ugly; and, besides, the Moor  
 May unfold me to him; there stand I in much peril:  
 No, he must die:—But so, I hear him coming.

*Enter CASSIO.*

*Rod.* I know his gait, 'tis he;—Villain, thou diest.  
 [*Rushes from his post, and makes a pass at CASSIO.*]

*Cas.* That thrust had been mine enemy indeed,  
 But that my coat is better than thou think'st;  
 I will make proof of thine.

[*Draws, and wounds RODERIGO.*]

*Rod.* O, I am slain!

[*IAGO rushes from his post, cuts CASSIO behind  
 in the Leg,<sup>3</sup> and exit.*]

*Cas.* I am maim'd for ever:—Help, ho! murder!  
 murder! [*Falls.*]

<sup>1</sup> *I have rubb'd this young quat almost to the sense,  
 And he grows angry.* This is a passage much controverted  
 among the editors. A *quat* in the midland counties is a *pimple*,  
 which by rubbing is made to smart, or is *rubbed to sense*. Roderigo  
 is called a quat by the same mode of speech, as a low fellow is  
 now termed in low language a *scab*. - *To rub to the sense, is to rub  
 to the quick.* JOHNSON.

<sup>2</sup> — *that I bobb'd from him,*] That I *fool'd* him out of. A  
*bob* formerly signified a mock, or jeer.

<sup>3</sup> — *in the leg,*] Iago maims Cassio in the *leg*, in consequence  
 of what he had just heard him say, from which he supposed that  
 his body was defended by some secret armour.

*Enter OTHELLO, at a distance.*

*Oth.* The voice of Cassio :—Iago keeps his word.

*Rod.* O, villain that I am !

*Oth.* Hark ! 'tis even so.

*Cas.* O, help ! ho ! light ! a surgeon !

*Oth.* 'Tis he ;—O brave Iago, honest, and just,  
That hast such noble sense of thy friend's wrong !  
Thou teachest me,—Minion, your dear lies dead,  
And your fate hies apace :—Strumpet, I come :  
Forth of my heart<sup>4</sup> those charms, thine eyes, are  
blotted ;  
Thy bed, lust-stain'd, shall with lust's blood be  
spotted. *[Exit OTHELLO.]*

*Enter LODOVICO and GRATIANO, at a distance.*

*Cas.* What, ho ! no watch ? no passage ?<sup>5</sup> murder ! murder !

*Gra.* 'Tis some mischance ; the cry is very direful.

*Cas.* O, help !

*Lod.* Hark !

*Rod.* O wretched villain !

*Lod.* Two or three groans ;—it is a heavy night :<sup>6</sup>  
These may be counterfeits ; let's think't unsafe  
To come in to the cry, without more help.

*Rod.* No body come ? then shall I bleed to death.

*Enter IAGO, with a Light.*

*Lod.* Hark !

*Gra.* Here's one comes in his shirt, with light  
and weapons.

<sup>4</sup> Forth of my heart, &c.] Forth signifies both out and from.

<sup>5</sup> — no passage?] No passengers? nobody going by?

<sup>6</sup> — a heavy night:] A thick cloudy night, in which an ambush may be commodiously laid.

*Iago.* Who's there? whose noise is this, that cries on murder?<sup>7</sup>

*Lod.* We do not know.

*Iago.* Did you not hear a cry?

*Cas.* Here, here; for heaven's sake, help me.

*Iago.* What's the matter?

*Gra.* This is Othello's ancient, as I take it.

*Lod.* The same, indeed; a very valiant fellow.

*Iago.* What are you here that cry so grievously?

*Cas.* Iago? O, I am spoil'd, undone by villains! Give me some help.

*Iago.* O me, lieutenant! what villains have done this?

*Cas.* I think, that one of them is hereabout, And cannot make away.

*Iago.* O treacherous villains!—

What are you there? come in, and give some help.

[To LODOVICO, and GRATIANO.

*Rod.* O, help me here!

*Cas.* That's one of them.

*Iago.* O murderous slave! O villain!

[IAGO stabs RODERIGO.

*Rod.* O damn'd Iago! O inhuman dog!—

O! O! O!

*Iago.* Kill men i'the dark!—Where be these bloody thieves?—

How silent is this town! Ho! murder! murder!

What may you be? are you of good, or evil?

*Lod.* As you shall prove us, praise us.

*Iago.* Signior Lodovico?

*Lod.* He, sir.

*Iago.* I cry you mercy; Here's Cassio hurt By villains.

*Gra.* Cassio?

<sup>7</sup> ——— whose noise is this, that cries on murder? ] Such was the phrasology of Shakspeare's age.

*Iago.* How is it, brother?

*Cas.* My leg is cut in two.

*Iago.* Marry, heaven forbid!—  
Light, gentlemen; I'll bind it with my shirt.

*Enter BIANCA.*

*Bian.* What is the matter, ho? who is't that cry'd?

*Iago.* Who is't that cry'd?

*Bian.* O my dear Cassio! my sweet Cassio!

O Cassio! Cassio! Cassio!

*Iago.* O notable strumpet!—Cassio, may you suspect

Who they should be, that have thus mangled you?

*Cas.* No.

*Gra.* I am sorry, to find you thus: I have been to seek you.

*Iago.* Lend me a garter: So.—O, for a chair,  
To bear him easily hence!

*Bian.* Alas, he faints:—O Cassio! Cassio! Cassio!

*Iago.* Gentlemen all, I do suspect this trash  
To be a party in this injury.—

Patience a while, good Cassio.—Come, come;

Lend me a light.—Know we this face, or no?

Alas! my friend, and my dear countryman,  
Roderigo? no:—Yes, sure; O heaven! Roderigo.

*Gra.* What, of Venice?

*Iago.* Even he, sir; did you know him?

*Gra.* Know him? ay.

*Iago.* Signior Gratiano? I cry you gentle pardon;  
These bloody accidents must excuse my manners,  
That so neglected you.

*Gra.* I am glad to see you.

*Iago.* How do you, Cassio?—O, a chair, a chair!

*Gra.* Roderigo!

*Iago.* He, he, 'tis he:—O, that's well said;—  
the chair:— [A Chair brought in.

Some good man bear him carefully from hence ;  
 I'll fetch the general's surgeon.—For you, mistress,  
 [To BIANCA.

Save you your labour.—He that lies slain here, Cassio,  
 Was my dear friend : What malice was between you ?

*Cas.* None in the world ; nor do I know the man.

*Iago.* [To BIAN.] What, look you pale?—O,  
 bear him out o'the air.—

[CASSIO and ROD. are borne off.]

Stay you, good gentlemen :—Look you pale, mis-  
 tress ?

Do you perceive the gastness of her eye?—

Nay, if you stare, we shall hear more anon :—

Behold her well ; I pray you, look upon her ;

Do you see, gentlemen ? nay, guiltiness will speak,  
 Though tongues were out of use.

*Enter EMILIA.*

*Emil.* 'Las, what's the matter ; what's the matter,  
 husband ?

*Iago.* Cassio hath here been set on in the dark,  
 By Roderigo, and fellows that are scap'd ;  
 He's almost slain, and Roderigo dead.

*Emil.* Alas, good gentleman ! alas, good Cassio !

*Iago.* This is the fruit of whoring.—Pr'ythee,  
 Emilia,

Go know of Cassio where he supp'd to-night :—  
 What, do you shake at that ?

*Bian.* He supp'd at my house ; but I therefore  
 shake not.

*Iago.* O, did he so ? I charge you, go with me.

*Emil.* Fye, fye upon thee, strumpet !

*Bian.* I am no strumpet ; but of life as honest,  
 As you that thus abuse me.

*Emil.* As I ? foh ! fye upon thee !

*Iago.* Kind gentlemen, let's go see poor Cassio  
 dress'd :—

Come, mistress, you must tell us another tale.—  
 Emilia, run you to the citadel,  
 And tell my lord and lady what has happ'd.—  
 Will you go on, I pray? 'This is the night, [*Aside.*  
 'That either makes me, or fordoes me quite.'<sup>8</sup>  
 [*Exeunt.*

## SCENE II.

*A Bedchamber: DESDEMONA in bed asleep. A  
 Light burning.*

*Enter OTHELLO.*

*Oth.* It is the cause, it is the cause, my soul,—  
 Let me not name it<sup>9</sup> to you, you chaste stars!—  
 It is the cause.—Yet I'll not shed her blood;  
 Nor scar that whiter skin of hers than snow,  
 And smooth as monumental alabaster.  
 [*Takes off his Sword.*  
 Yet she must die, else she'll betray more men.  
 Put out the light, and then put out the light:

<sup>8</sup> — or fordoes me quite.] To *fordo*, is to undo, to ruin, to destroy.

<sup>9</sup> *It is the cause, it is the cause, my soul,*—

*Let me not name it*—] The abruptness of this soliloquy makes it obscure. The meaning, I think, is this:—I am here (says Othello in his mind) overwhelmed with horror. What is the reason of this perturbation? Is it want of resolution to do justice? Is it the dread of shedding blood? No; it is not the action that shocks me, but *it is the cause, it is the cause, my soul; let me not name it to you, ye chaste stars! it is the cause.* JOHNSON.

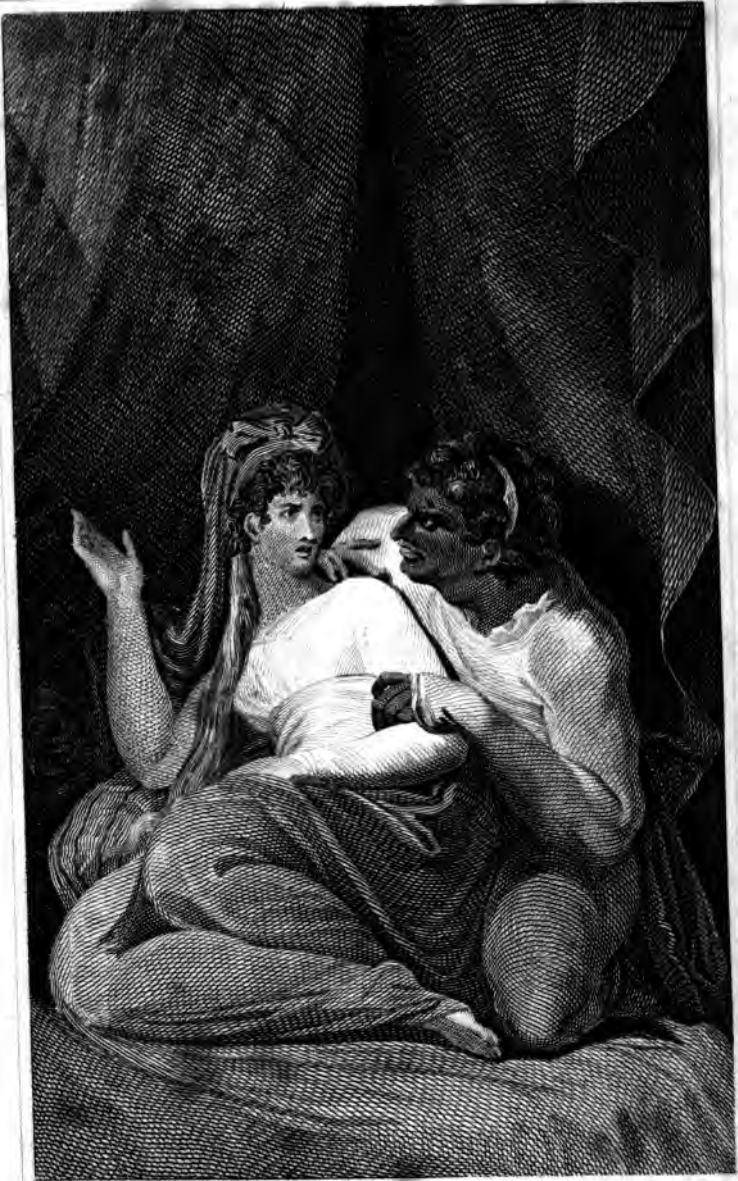
<sup>1</sup> *Put out the light, and then put out the light:*] This is one of the passages in which, by a modern regulation, our poet's words have obtained a meaning, which in my opinion was not in his thoughts. Mr. Upton was the first person who introduced the conceit in this line, which has been adopted since his book appeared, by pointing it thus:

*Put out the light, and then—Put out the light! &c.*







*Facili del.**Phide 2*

Des. — *Why I should fear, I know not,  
since guiltiness I know not, but yet I feel. I fear.*

*Published by T. & C. Rivington, St. Paul's Church-Yard July 1786.*

No,—Heaven forefend.—I would not kill thy soul.<sup>2</sup>

*Des.* Talk you of killing?

*Oth.* Ay, I do.

*Des.* Then, heaven

Have mercy on me!

*Oth.* Amen, with all my heart!

*Des.* If you say so, I hope you will not kill me.

*Oth.* Humph!

*Des.* And yet I fear you; for you are fatal then,  
When your eyes roll so: Why I should fear, I know  
not,

Since guiltiness I know not; but yet, I feel, I fear.

*Oth.* Think on thy sins.

*Des.* They are loves I bear to you.

*Oth.* Ay, and for that thou diest.

*Des.* That death's unnatural, that kills for  
loving.—

Alas, why gnaw you so your nether lip?  
Some bloody passion shakes your very frame:  
These are portents; but yet, I hope, I hope,  
They do not point on me.

*Oth.* Peace, and be still!

*Des.* I will so: What's the matter?

*Oth.* That handkerchief, which I so lov'd, and  
gave thee,

Thou gav'st to Cassio.

*Des.* No, by my life and soul;

Send for the man, and ask him.

*Oth.* Sweet soul, take heed,

Take heed of perjury; thou'rt on thy death-bed.

*Des.* Ay, but not yet to die.

*Oth.* Yes, presently:

Therefore confess thee freely of thy sin;

<sup>2</sup> — *I would not kill thy soul.*] *Othello* appears to have been a favourite of his author; for he has bestowed on him that piety which he had refused to *Hamlet*.

For to deny each article with oath,  
Cannot remove, nor choke, the strong conception,  
That I do groan withal. Thou art to die.

*Des.* Then, Lord have mercy on me!

*Oth.* I say, amen.

*Des.* And have you mercy too!—I never did  
Offend you in my life; never lov'd Cassio,  
But with such general warrant of heaven  
As I might love: I never gave him token.

*Oth.* By heaven, I saw my handkerchief in his  
hand.

O perjur'd woman! thou dost stone my heart,  
And mak'st me call, what I intend to do,—  
A murder, which I thought a sacrifice:<sup>3</sup>  
I saw the handkerchief,

*Des.* He found it then;  
I never gave it him:—Send for him hither,  
And let him confess a truth.

*Oth.* He hath confess'd.

*Des.* What, my lord?

*Oth.* That he hath—us'd thee.

*Des.* How! unlawfully?

*Oth.* Ay,

*Des.* He'll not say so.

*Oth.* No, his mouth is stopp'd;  
Honest Iago hath ta'en order for't.<sup>4</sup>

*Des.* My fear interprets then,—What, is he dead?

*Oth.* Had all his hairs been lives, my great revenge  
Had stomach for them all.

*Des.* Alas! he is betray'd, and I undone.

<sup>3</sup> *A murder, which I thought a sacrifice:]* This line is difficult, *Thou hast hardened my heart, and makest me kill thee with the rage of a murderer, when I thought to have sacrificed thee to justice with the calmness of a priest striking a victim.*

I am glad that I have ended my revisal of this dreadful scene, It is not to be endured. JOHNSON.

<sup>4</sup> ——— *hath ta'en order for't.]* i. e. *has taken measures,*

*Oth.* Out, strumpet! Weep'st thou for him to my face?

*Des.* O, banish me, my lord; but kill me not.

*Oth.* Down, strumpet!

*Des.* Kill me to-morrow, let me live to-night.

*Oth.* Nay, if you strive,——

*Des.* But half an hour.

*Oth.* Being done,

There is no pause.

*Des.* But while I say one prayer.

*Oth.* It is too late.<sup>5</sup> [*He smothers her.*]

*Emil.* [*Within.*] My lord, my lord! what ho! my lord! my lord!

*Oth.* What noise is this?—Not dead! not yet quite dead?

I, that am cruel, am yet merciful;

I would not have thee linger in thy pain.—

So, so.

*Emil.* [*Within.*] What ho, my lord! my lord!

*Oth.* Who's there?

*Emil.* [*Within.*] O, good my lord, I would speak a word with you.

*Oth.* Yes;—'tis Emilia:—by and by.—She's dead.

'Tis like she comes to speak of Cassio's death;

The noise was high.—Ha! no more mowing?

<sup>5</sup> *It is too late.*] After this speech of Othello, the elder quarto adds an invocation from Desdemona, consisting only of the sacred name thrice repeated. As this must be supposed to have been uttered while she is yet struggling with death, an editor may be excused from inserting such a circumstance of supererogatory horror, especially as it is found in but one of the ancient copies. This alteration was probably made in consequence of the statute of the 3d of James I. c. 21, which lays a penalty for the profane use of the name of God, &c. in stage-plays, interludes, May-games, &c. Such a statute was necessary; for not only the ancient moralities, but the plays (those of Chapman in particular) abound with the most wanton and shocking repetitions of a name which never ought to be mentioned in such an irreverend manner on the stage.

Still as the grave. Shall she come in? Were't good?  
 I think, she stirs again :—No.—What's the best?  
 If she come in, she'll sure speak to my wife:  
 My wife! my wife! what wife?—I have no wife:  
 O, insupportable! O heavy hour!  
 Methinks it should be now a huge eclipse  
 Of sun and moon; and that the affrighted globe  
 Should yawn at alteration.

Emil. [*Within.*] I do beseech you I may speak  
 with you,  
 O, good my lord!

Oth. I had forgot thee: O, come in, Emilia :—  
 Soft,—by and by :—Let me the curtains draw.—  
 Where art thou? What's the matter with thee  
 now? [*Unlocks the door.*]

*Enter EMILIA.*

Emil. O, good my lord, yonder's foul murder  
 done.

Oth. What? now?

Emil. But now, my lord!

Oth. It is the very error of the moon;  
 She comes more near the earth than she was wont;  
 And makes men mad.

Emil. Cassio, my lord, has kill'd a young Ve-  
 netian,  
 Call'd—Roderigo.

Oth. Roderigo kill'd!  
 And Cassio kill'd?

Emil. No, Cassio is not kill'd.

Oth. Not Cassio kill'd? Then murder's out of  
 tune,  
 And sweet revenge grows harsh.

Des. O, falsely, falsely murder'd!

Emil. Alas! what cry is that?

Oth. That! what?

*Emil.* Out, and alas! that was my lady's voice:—  
Help! help, ho! help!—O lady, speak again!  
Sweet Desdemona! O, sweet mistress, speak!

*Des.* A guiltless death I die.

*Emil.* O, who hath done  
This deed?

*Des.* Nobody; I myself; farewell:  
Commend me to my kind lord; O, farewell.

[*Dies.*

*Oth.* Why, how should she be murder'd?

*Emil.* Alas, who knows?

*Oth.* You heard her say herself, it was not I.

*Emil.* She said so; I must needs report the truth.

*Oth.* She's, like a liar, gone to burning hell;  
'Twas I that kill'd her.

*Emil.* O, the more angel she,  
And you the blacker devil!

*Oth.* She turn'd to folly, and she was a whore.<sup>6</sup>

*Emil.* Thou dost belie her, and thou art a devil.

*Oth.* She was false as water.<sup>7</sup>

*Emil.* Thou art rash as fire, to say  
That she was false; O, she was heavenly true!

*Oth.* Cassio did tup her; ask thy husband else.  
O, I were damn'd beneath all depth in hell,  
But that I did proceed upon just grounds  
To this extremity; Thy husband knew it all.

*Emil.* My husband?

*Oth.* Thy husband.

*Emil.* That she was false to wedlock?

*Oth.* Ay, with Cassio.  
Nay, had she been true,  
If heaven would make me such another world

<sup>6</sup> *She turn'd to folly, and she was a whore.*] *Folly*, signifies here, *depravity of mind*.

<sup>7</sup> *—false as water.*] As water that will support no weight, nor keep any impression.



Of one entire and perfect chrysolite,  
I'd not have sold her for it.

*Emil.* My husband?

*Oth.* Ay, 'twas he that told me first;  
An honest man he is, and hates the slime  
That sticks on filthy deeds.

*Emil.* My husband?

*Oth.* What needs this iterance, woman? I say,  
thy husband.

*Emil.* O mistress, villainy hath made mocks with  
love!<sup>8</sup>—

My husband say, that she was false?

*Oth.* He, woman;  
I say, thy husband; Dost understand the word?  
My friend, thy husband, honest, honest Iago.

*Emil.* If he say so, may his pernicious soul  
Rot half a grain a day! he lies to the heart;  
She was too fond of her most filthy bargain.

*Oth.* Ha!

*Emil.* Do thy worst:  
This deed of thine is no more worthy heaven,  
Than thou wast worthy her.

*Oth.* Peace, you were best.

*Emil.* Thou hast not half the power to do me  
harm,

As I have to be hurt.<sup>9</sup> O gull! O dolt!  
As ignorant as dirt! thou hast done a deed,—  
I care not for thy sword; I'll make thee known,  
Though I lost twenty lives:—Help! help, ho! help!  
The Moor has kill'd my mistress; Murder! murder!

<sup>8</sup> — villainy hath made mocks with love!] Villainy has taken advantage to play upon the weakness of a violent passion.

<sup>9</sup> Thou hast not half the power to do me harm, As I have to be hurt.] She means to say,—I have in this cause power to endure more than thou hast power to inflict.

*Enter MONTANO, GRATIANO, and IAGO.*

*Mon.* What is the matter!—How now, general?

*Emil.* O, are you come, Iago? you have done well,

That men must lay their murders on your neck.

*Gra.* What is the matter?

*Emil.* Disprove this villain, if thou be'st a man:  
He says, thou told'st him that his wife was false:  
I know, thou didst not, thou'rt not such a villain;  
Speak, for my heart is full.

*Iago.* I told him what I thought; and told no more

Than what he found himself was apt and true.

*Emil.* But did you ever tell him, she was false?

*Iago.* I did.

*Emil.* You told a lie; an odious, damned lie;  
Upon my soul, a lie; a wicked lie:—  
She false with Cassio!—Did you say with Cassio?

*Iago.* With Cassio, mistress; Go to, charm your tongue.

*Emil.* I will not charm my tongue; I am bound to speak;

My mistress here lies murder'd in her bed.

*All.* O heavens fend!

*Emil.* And your reports have set the murder on.

*Oth.* Nay, stare not, masters; it is true, indeed.

*Gra.* 'Tis a strange truth.

*Mon.* O monstrous act!

*Emil.* Villainy, villainy, villainy!—  
I think upon't,—I think,—I smell't;—O villainy!  
I thought so then;—I'll kill myself for grief.—

<sup>1</sup> *I thought so then:*] i. e. at the instant when she gave Desdemona's handkerchief to Iago: for even *then* Emilia appears to have suspected it was sought after for no honest purpose, and therefore asks her husband—

“What will you do with it?” &c.

O villainy, villainy!

*Iago.* What, are you mad? I charge you, get you home.

*Emil.* Good gentlemen, let me have leave to speak;

'Tis proper I obey him, but not now:

Perchance, Iago, I will ne'er go home.

*Oth.* O! O! O! [*Hanging over his Wife.*

*Emil.* Nay, lay thee down, and roar;

For thou hast kill'd the sweetest innocent,

That e'er did lift up eye.

*Oth.* O, she was foul!—

[*Rising.*

I scarce did know you, uncle: There lies your niece,

Whose breath, indeed, these hands have newly stopp'd:

I know, this act shows horrible and grim.

*Gra.* Poor Desdemona! I am glad thy father's dead;

Thy match was mortal to him, and pure grief  
Shore his old thread in twain: did he live now,  
This sight would make him do a desperate turn,  
Yea, curse his better angel from his side,  
And fall to reprobation.

*Oth.* 'Tis pitiful: but yet Iago knows,  
That she with Cassio hath the act of shame  
A thousand times committed; Cassio confess'd it:  
And she did gratify his amorous works  
With that recognizance and pledge of love  
Which I first gave her; I saw it in his hand;  
It was a handkerchief, an antique token  
My father gave my mother.

*Emil.* O heaven! O heavenly powers!

*Iago.* Come, hold your peace.

*Emil.* 'Twill out, 'twill out;—I hold my peace,  
sir? no;

No, I will speak as liberal<sup>2</sup> as the air ;  
Let heaven, and men, and devils, let them all,  
All, all, cry shame against me, yet I'll speak.

*Iago.* Be wise, and get you home.

*Emil.*

I will not.

[*IAGO offers to stab his Wife.*

*Gra.*

Fye!

Your sword upon a woman ?

*Emil.* O thou dull Moor ! that handkerchief thou  
speak'st of,

I found by fortune, and did give my husband ;

For often, with a solemn earnestness,

(More than, indeed, belong'd to such a trifle,)

He begg'd of me to steal it.

*Iago.*

Villainous whore !

*Emil.* She give it Cassio ! no, alas ; I found it,  
And I did give't my husband.

*Iago.*

Filth, thou liest.

*Emil.* By heaven, I do not ; I do not, gentlemen :  
O murd'rous coxcomb ! what should such a fool  
Do with so good a wife ?

[*IAGO stabs EMILIA, then runs out.*

*Oth.*

Are there no stones in heaven,  
But what serve for the thunder ?<sup>3</sup>—Precious villain !

*Gra.* The woman falls ; sure, he has kill'd his wife.

*Emil.* Ay, ay : O, lay me by my mistress' side !

*Gra.* He's gone, but his wife's kill'd.

*Mon.* 'Tis a notorious villain. Take you this  
weapon,

Which I have here recover'd from the Moor :

Come, guard the door without ; let him not pass,

<sup>2</sup> No, I will speak as liberal —] *Liberal* is free, under no control.

<sup>3</sup> Are there no stones in heaven,

But what serve for the thunder ?] Shakspeare might mean, does heaven reserve its thunder only to make a noise ? has it no implements of mischief to punish as well as terrify ?

But kill him rather; I'll after that same villain,  
For 'tis a damned slave.

[*Exeunt* MONTANO and GRATIANO.

*Oth.* I am not valiant neither,  
But every puny whipster gets my sword:—  
But why should honour outlive honesty?  
Let it go all.

*Emil.* What did thy song bode, lady?  
Hark, can'st thou hear me? I will play the swan,  
And die in musick;—*Willow, willow, willow.*—  
Moor, she was chaste; she lov'd thee, cruel Moor;  
So come my soul to bliss, as I speak true;  
So speaking as I think, I die,—I die. [*Dies.*

*Oth.* I have another weapon in this chamber,  
It is a sword of Spain, the ice-brook's temper;—  
O, here it is:—Uncle, I must come forth.

*Gra.* [*Within.*] If thou attempt it, it will cost  
thee dear;

Thou hast no weapon, and perforce must suffer.

*Oth.* Look in upon me then, and speak with me,  
Or, naked as I am, I will assault thee.

*Re-enter* GRATIANO.

*Gra.* What is the matter?

*Oth.* Behold! I have a weapon;  
A better never did itself sustain  
Upon a soldier's thigh: I have seen the day,  
That, with this little arm, and this good sword,  
I have made my way through more impediments  
Than twenty times your stop:—But, O vain boast!  
Who can control his fate? 'tis not so now.—

<sup>4</sup> — the ice-brook's temper;] This ice-brook was the brook or rivulet called *Salo* (now *Xalon*,) near *Bilbilis* in Celtiberia. In this the Spaniards plunged all their swords and other weapons while hot from the forge; and to the icy qualities of the waters, they were indebted for their stubborn temper.

Be not afraid, though you do see me weapon'd ;  
 Here is my journey's end, here is my butt,  
 And very sea-mark of my utmost sail.  
 Do you go back dismay'd ? 'tis a lost fear ;  
 Man but a rush against Othello's breast,  
 And he retires ;—Where should Othello go ?—  
 Now, how dost thou look now ? O ill-starr'd wench !  
 Pale as thy smock ! when we shall meet at compt,  
 This look of thine will hurl my soul from heaven,  
 And fiends will snatch at it. Cold, cold, my girl ?  
 Even like thy chastity.—  
 O cursed, cursed slave !—Whip me, ye devils,  
 From the possession of this heavenly sight !  
 Blow me about in winds ! roast me in sulphur !  
 Wash me in steep-down gulfs of liquid fire !—  
 O Desdemona ! Desdemona ! dead ?  
 Dead ? O ! O ! O !

*Enter LODOVICO, MONTANO, CASSIO, carried in a Chair, and Officers, with IAGO, prisoner.*

*Lod.* Where is this rash and most unfortunate man ?

*Oth.* That's he, that was Othello ; here I am.

*Lod.* Where is that viper ? bring the villain forth.

*Oth.* I look down towards his feet ;<sup>s</sup>—but that's a fable :

If that thou be'st a devil, I cannot kill thee.

[OTHELLO wounds IAGO.]

*Lod.* Wrench his sword from him.

*Iago.* I bleed, sir ; but not kill'd.

*Oth.* I am not sorry neither ; I'd have thee live ;  
 For, in my sense, 'tis happiness to die.

*Lod.* O thou Othello, that was once so good,

<sup>s</sup> — towards his feet ;] To see if, according to the common opinion, his feet be cleven.

Fall'n in the practice<sup>6</sup> of a cursed slave,  
What shall be said to thee?

*Oth.* Why, any thing :  
An honourable murderer, if you will ;  
For nought I did in hate, but all in honour.

*Lod.* This wretch hath part confess'd his villainy :  
Did you and he consent in Cassio's death ?

*Oth.* Ay.

*Cas.* Dear general, I never gave you cause.

*Oth.* I do believe it, and I ask your pardon.  
Will you, I pray you, demand that demi-devil,  
Why he hath thus ensnar'd my soul and body ?

*Iago.* Demand me nothing : What you know,  
you know :  
From this time forth I never will speak word.

*Lod.* What ? not to pray ?

*Gra.* Torments will ope your lips.

*Oth.* Well, thou dost best.

*Lod.* Sir, you shall understand what hath befall'n,  
Which, as I think, you know not : Here is a letter,  
Found in the pocket of the slain Roderigo ;  
And here, another : the one of them imports  
The death of Cassio to be undertook  
By Roderigo.

*Oth.* O villain !

*Cas.* Most heathenish, and most gross !

*Lod.* Now here's another discontented paper,  
Found in his pocket too ; and this, it seems,  
Roderigo meant to have sent this damned villain ;  
But that, belike, Iago in the interim  
Came in and satisfied him.

*Oth.* O the pernicious caitiff !—  
How came you, Cassio, by that handkerchief  
That was my wife's ?

*Cas.* I found it in my chamber :

<sup>6</sup> — in the practice —] In the snare, by the stratagem.

And he himself confess'd, but even now,  
That there he dropp'd it, for a special purpose,  
Which wrought to his desire.

*Oth.* O fool! fool! fool!

*Cas.* There is, besides, in Roderigo's letter,—  
How he upbraids Iago, that he made him  
Brave me upon the watch; whereon it came  
That I was cast: And even but now he spake,  
After long seeming dead,—Iago hurt him,  
Iago set him on.

*Lod.* You must forsake this room, and go with  
us;

Your power and your command is taken off,  
And Cassio rules in Cyprus. For this slave,—  
If there be any cunning cruelty,  
That can torment him much, and hold him long,  
It shall be his: You shall close prisoner rest,  
Till that the nature of your fault be known  
To the Venetian state:—Come, bring him away.

*Oth.* Soft you; a word or two, before you go.  
I have done the state some service, and they know  
it;

No more of that:—I pray you, in your letters,  
When you shall these unlucky deeds relate,  
Speak of me as I am; nothing extenuate,  
Nor set down aught in malice: then must you speak  
Of one, that lov'd not wisely, but too well;  
Of one, not easily jealous, but being wrought,  
Perplex'd in the extreme; of one, whose hand,  
Like the base Júdean, threw a pearl away,  
Richer than all his tribe;<sup>7</sup> of one, whose subdu'd  
eyes,

<sup>7</sup> — of one, whose hand,

*Like the base Júdean, threw a pearl away,*

*Richer than all his tribe;*] The commentators are at variance on this passage, some considering it as an allusion to the story of Herod and Mariamne, and others to that of a Jew who threw away



Albeit unused to the melting mood,  
 Drop tears as fast as the Arabian trees  
 Their medicinal gum : Set you down this :  
 And say, besides,—that in Aleppo once,  
 Where a malignant and a turban'd Turk  
 Beat a Venetian, and traduc'd the state,  
 I took by the throat the circumcised dog,  
 And smote him—thus. *[Stabs himself.]*

*Lod.* O bloody period !

*Gra.* All, that's spoke, is marr'd.

*Oth.* I kiss'd thee, ere I kill'd thee;—No way but  
 this, *[Falling upon DESDEMONA.]*  
 Killing myself, to die upon a kiss. *[Dies.]*

*Cas.* This did I fear, but thought he had no  
 weapon ;

For he was great of heart.

*Lod.* O Spartan dog,<sup>\*</sup>  
 More fell than anguish, hunger, or the sea !  
 Look on the tragick loading of this bed ;  
*[To IAGO.]*

a pearl of great worth, because he could not get his price for it. We shall subjoin a remark of Mr. Steevens, which vindicates the propriety of an edition like the present.

Either we are partial to discoveries which we make for ourselves, or the spirit of controversy is contagious ; for it usually happens that each possessor of an ancient copy of our author is led to assert the superiority of all such readings as have not been exhibited in the notes, or received into the text of the last edition. On this account, our present republication\* (and more especially in the celebrated plays) affords a greater number of these diversities than were ever before obtruded on the publick. A time however may arrive, when a complete body of variations being printed, our readers may luxuriate in an ample feast of *thats* and *whiches* ; and thenceforward it may be prophesied, that *all will unite in a wish that the selection had been made by an editor, rather than submitted to their own labour and sagacity.*

<sup>\*</sup> *O Spartan dog.*] The dogs of Spartan race were reckoned among those of the most fierce and savage kind.

\* The edition of 1803 in 21 volumes.

This is thy work : the object poisons sight ;—  
 Let it be hid.—Gratiano, keep the house,  
 And seize upon the fortunes of the Moor,  
 For they succeed to you.—To you, lord governor,  
 Remains the censure<sup>9</sup> of this hellish villain ;  
 The time, the place, the torture,—O enforce it !  
 Myself will straight aboard ; and, to the state,  
 This heavy act with heavy heart relate. [*Exeunt.*]

<sup>9</sup> — the censure—] i. e. the sentence.

\* The beauties of this play impress themselves so strongly upon the attention of the reader, that they can draw no aid from critical illustration. The fiery openness of Othello, magnanimous, artless, and credulous, boundless in his confidence, ardent in his affection, inflexible in his resolution, and obdurate in his revenge ; the cool malignity of Iago, silent in his resentment, subtle in his designs, and studious at once of his interest and his vengeance ; the soft simplicity of Desdemona, confident of merit, and conscious of innocence, her artless perseverance in her suit, and her slowness to suspect that she can be suspected, are such proofs of Shakspeare's skill in human nature, as, I suppose, it is vain to seek in any modern writer. The gradual progress which Iago makes in the Moor's conviction, and the circumstances which he employs to enflame him, are so artfully natural, that, though it will perhaps not be said of him as he says of himself, that he is *a man not easily jealous*, yet we cannot but pity him, when at last we find him *perplexed in the extreme*.

There is always danger, lest wickedness, conjoined with abilities, should steal upon esteem, though it misses of approbation ; but the character of Iago is so conducted, that he is from the first scene to the last hated and despised.

Even the inferior characters of this play would be very conspicuous in any other piece, not only for their justness, but their strength. Cassio is brave, benevolent, and honest, ruined only by his want of stubbornness to resist an insidious invitation. Rodrigo's suspicious credulity, and impatient submission to the cheats which he sees practised upon him, and which by persuasion he suffers to be repeated, exhibit a strong picture of a weak mind betrayed by unlawful desires to a false friend ; and the virtue of Emilia is such as we often find, worn loosely, but not cast off, easy to commit small crimes, but quickened and alarmed at atrocious villainies.

The scenes from the beginning to the end are busy, varied by happy interchanges, and regularly promoting the progression of

the story ; and the narrative in the end, though it tells but what is known already, yet is necessary to produce the death of Othello.

Had the scene opened in Cyprus, and the preceding incidents been occasionally related, there had been little wanting to a drama of the most exact and scrupulous regularity. JOHNSON.

FINIS.

# GLOSSARIAL INDEX.

---

## A

Abate, vi. 261  
 abated, vii. 191  
 abc-book, iv. 201  
 abjects, vi. 129  
 able, viii. 444  
 abortive, v. 449  
 abridgment, ii. 373; ix. 184  
 abroad, v. 436  
 absent, iv. 320  
 absolute, ii. 186; viii. 294  
 abused, viii. 21  
 abuses, viii. 453  
 aby, ii. 356  
 abysm, i. 10  
 accept, v. 246  
 account, viii. 242  
 accuse, v. 422  
 achieve, v. 487  
 acquittance, ix. 395  
 across, iii. 237  
 act, ix. 143  
 action, vii. 415  
 action-taking, viii. 381  
 Adam, ii. 217  
 addition, vi. 447, 456  
 additions, iii. 250; vi. 402; viii.  
     344, 381  
 address, i. 273  
 addressed, v. 91; vii. 287  
 addrest, ii. 376, 413; v. 185  
 admittance, i. 243, 258  
     VOL. ix.

adornings, vii. 377  
 advance, vii. 24  
 advantage, v. 386  
 advantages, v. 214  
 adversaries, iii. 362  
 adversity, vi. 497  
 advertisement, ii. 281  
 advertising, ii. 198  
 advice, i. 145; ii. 201; iii. 85,  
     270, 347; v. 161; viii. 12  
 advise, viii. 376  
 advised, iii. 25; iv. 68, 312, 5,  
     486; ix. 302  
 afeard, i. 66  
 affeered, iv. 161  
 affect, ii. 409  
 affection, iii. 445, 541; v. 93;  
     ix. 185  
 affectioned, ii. 35  
 affied, iii. 412  
 affin'd, vi. 412; ix. 293, 340  
 affront, iii. 535; viii. 101, 111;  
     ix. 192  
 affronted, vi. 459  
 affy, v. 450  
 again, i. 27  
 agate, v. 15  
 aglet-baby, iii. 355  
 agnize, ix. 313  
 a-good, i. 186  
 a-hold, i. 7

- aiery, iv. 278; vi. 150  
 aim, i. 154, 195, 254; iv. 212; vii. 255; ix. 237, 304  
 aimed, i. 154  
 alder-lieft, v. 374  
 ale, i. 147  
 all-hallow, iv. 415  
 all-obeying, vii. 427  
 all to all, iv. 142  
 allow, ii. 9; iii. 494; v. 83; viii. 395  
 allowance, vi. 443; vii. 182; ix. 199, 297  
 allowed, i. 243; ii. 478; vi. 284; vii. 92  
 allowing, iii. 447  
 almsdrink, vii. 393  
 alone, i. 144  
 amaimon, i. 245  
 amaze, i. 308; iii. 113  
 amazed, iv. 259; viii. 101  
 amazing, iv. 308  
 Amazonian, vii. 152  
 amen, i. 52  
 ames-all, iii. 248  
 amiable, i. 243  
 amiss, ix. 237  
 amort, iii. 404  
 an, ii. 319; ix. 107  
 anchor, ix. 207  
 ancient, v. 45  
 angel, iii. 400; vii. 303  
 anight, iii. 133  
 answer, vii. 264; viii. 110  
 Anthropophaginan, i. 289  
 antick, iv. 351; v. 342  
 Antioch, viii. 333  
 antiquity, v. 21  
 antres, ix. 309  
 ape, ix. 35  
 apparent, iii. 71, 447  
 appeal, vii. 408  
 appeared, vii. 198  
 appointment, ii. 146; vi. 485; vii. 446  
 apprehension, v. 300  
 apprehensive, v. 89; vii. 289  
 approbation, ii. 110; iii. 465; v. 144; viii. 21  
 approve, iiii. 55; ix. 273  
 approves, vii. 346  
 approv'd, i. 193; ix. 340.  
 approvers, viii. 46  
 April, vii. 66  
 aquavitæ, ii. 48  
 arbitrate, iv. 178  
 arbitrator, v. 302  
 arch, viii. 377  
 argentine, viii. 327  
 argier, i. 21  
 argosies, iii. 7  
 argument, ii. 249, 352; iii. 146; iv. 436; v. 178; vii. 37  
 arm, viii. 100  
 armed staves, v. 77  
 aroint, iv. 87  
 a-row, iv. 66  
 art, v. 141; vii. 319  
 articulate, vii. 135  
 articulated, iv. 501  
 artificial, ii. 351; vii. 7  
 as, iii. 550  
 Asher-house, vi. 340  
 aspect, iv. 20  
 aspersion, i. 75  
 assay, ix. 171, 305  
 assinego, vi. 427  
 assistance, vii. 210  
 assurance, iii. 402; ix. 260  
 assured, iv. 38, 224  
 astonished, v. 242  
 astringer, iii. 305  
 Até, ii. 231  
 at friend, iii. 537  
 at hand, iv. 430  
 atomies, iii. 155; ix. 26  
 atone, iv. 302; vii. 98, 212; viii. 18; ix. 385  
 attacked, vii. 372  
 attended, vi. 90; vii. 137  
 attent, ix. 142  
 attorney, vi. 248  
 attorneyship, v. 365  
 attornied, iii. 438

attribute, ix. 152  
 attributive, vi. 439  
 av aunt, vi. 311  
 averring, viii. 126  
 audacious, ii. 454  
 Audrey, iii. 162  
 augurs, iv. 143

aukward, viii. 321.  
 aunt, iii. 497  
 authentick, iii. 245  
 awful, i. 171; v. 78  
 awless, vi. 177  
 aye, i. 46  
 aye-remaining, viii. 284

## B

Baccare, iii. 365  
 baiting, vi. 381  
 bale, vii. 110  
 baleful, v. 361  
 balked, iv. 407  
 balm, iv. 373  
 Banbury-cheese, i. 210  
 band, iv. 48, 295; vii. 401  
 ban-dogs, v. 394  
 banked, iv. 277  
 banning, v. 351  
 banns, vii. 62; viii. 387  
 banquet, iii. 423; vi. 381; vii. 392  
 bar, v. 245  
 barbarism, vi. 513  
 barbazon, i. 245  
 barbed, vi. 125  
 bar-ful, ii. 15  
 barm, ii. 321  
 barnacles, i. 87  
 barns, ii. 261  
 base, i. 123; vii. 55; viii. 108  
 base court, iv. 360  
 bases, viii. 266  
 baseness, vii. 453  
 basilico-like, iv. 203  
 basilisks, iv. 438; v. 441  
 bass, i. 73  
 basta, iii. 350  
 bastard, ii. 153; iv. 201, 443; v. 271  
 bat, viii. 447  
 bate, i. 22; iii. 397; v. 201  
 bated, iv. 489; ix. 268  
 bating, ix. 67  
 batlet, iii. 133  
 batten, ix. 221  
 battle, vi. 145

bavin, iv. 473  
 bawcock, iii. 444  
 bay, ii. 124  
 bays, viii. 314  
 bay-windows, ii. 77  
 beak, i. 18  
 beam, vi. 515  
 bear, ii. 276; v. 16; vii. 260  
 bear him, v. 297  
 beard, iv. 485; v. 193; ix. 184  
 bearded, iii. 143  
 bearing, ii. 228; iii. 32  
 bearing-cloth, iii. 492  
 beat, v. 398  
 beating, i. 101  
 beavers, v. 77; ix. 144  
 beck, vii. 27  
 becomed, ix. 94  
 becomings, vii. 358  
 bedlam beggars, viii. 387  
 beetle, v. 22; ix. 154  
 beg, ii. 478  
 behave, vii. 53  
 behaviour, iv. 193  
 behest, i. 58  
 being, viii. 25  
 be-lee'd, ix. 292  
 bell-wether, iii. 149  
 belongings, ii. 102  
 be-mete, iii. 407  
 bemoiled, iii. 392  
 bend, ix. 139  
 bending, v. 256  
 bends, vii. 377  
 benefit, v. 362  
 bent, ii. 272; ix. 169  
 benumbed, vi. 437  
 bergomask, ii. 384

- beshrew, ii. 332  
 best, v. 180; vii. 23, 135  
 bested, v. 410  
 bestowed, ii. 152  
 bestraught, iii. 388  
 bestrid, v. 489  
 beteem, ii. 311; ix. 140  
 better, vii. 58  
 bewray, vi. 13; viii. 379  
 bezonian, v. 118.  
 bias, vi. 485  
 bid, iii. 192; iv. 203; vi. 232; viii. 157  
 bidding, viii. 266  
 bigamy, vi. 207  
 biggin, v. 97  
 bilberry, i. 301  
 bilbo, i. 211, 272; ix. 267  
 bill, v. 306  
 bills, ii. 255; iii. 113; viii. 441  
 bird-bolt, ii. 212  
 bisson, vii. 140; ix. 187  
 blabbing, v. 446  
 Black-Monday, iii. 36  
 blank, viii. 345; ix. 229, 373  
 blast, ix. 254  
 blear, iii. 421  
 blench, ii. 182; iii. 453; vi. 398; ix. 190  
 blent, ii. 24; iii. 58  
 blind-worms, ii. 330  
 blistered, vi. 291  
 blood, iv. 299; v. 333; vi. 439; vii. 64  
 blood-boltered, iv. 154  
 bloodless, vi. 416  
 bloods, viii. 5  
 blow, i. 59  
 blows, vii. 441  
 blown, vii. 479; viii. 328, 435  
 blue-bottle-rogue, v. 120  
 blue-caps, iv. 453  
 blunt, vi. 94  
 board, ix. 175  
 bobbed, ix. 402  
 bodged, vi. 21  
 bodkin, ix. 194  
 body, v. 111; vii. 151  
 bold, ii. 411; viii. 454  
 bolins, viii. 284  
 bolt, i. 266  
 bolted, iii. 515; v. 165  
 bolting-hutch, iv. 456  
 bombard, iv. 456  
 bombast, iv. 452  
 bona-robas, v. 62  
 bond, vii. 362; ix. 150  
 bonnetted, vii. 149  
 bony, iii. 129  
 book, iv. 469, 471  
 boon, viii. 329  
 boot, ii. 136; iii. 525; iv. 300; vi. 223, 257; vii. 432; viii. 469  
 boots, i. 114  
 bore, vi. 27; ix. 248  
 bores, vi. 277  
 bore in hand, viii. 121; ix. 171  
 born, iii. 250  
 borne, iv. 130  
 borrower, v. 38  
 bosky, i. 78  
 bosom, i. 161; ii. 179  
 bots, viii. 265  
 bottled, vi. 149  
 bought and sold, v. 386  
 bourn, ii. 445; vi. 447; vii. 344; viii. 416, 440  
 bow, iii. 165  
 bow-hand, ii. 482  
 bow-strings, ii. 319  
 boy, vii. 473  
 boy-queller, vi. 516  
 brabler, vi. 500  
 brace, viii. 265; ix. 305  
 brach, iii. 332; vi. 430; viii. 364  
 braid, iii. 288  
 brain, ix. 21  
 brain's flow, vii. 99  
 brake, ii. 118, 339; vi. 58  
 branch, iii. 242  
 brands, viii. 49  
 brass, v. 222  
 braved, iii. 407; vi. 256  
 bravery, ii. 111; iii. 140

- brawl, ii. 420  
 brazier, vi. 379  
 breach, ii. 27  
 break, i. 127; viii. 227  
 break up, v. 276  
 breast, ii. 30; vii. 72  
 breath, vi. 442, 489; vii. 75  
 breathe, vii. 53  
 breathed, vii. 5  
 breathing, iii. 92  
 breech'd, iv. 123  
 breeching, iii. 378  
 breed, iii. 22  
 breed-bate, i. 221  
 bridal, ix. 374  
 brief, ii. 373; iv. 208, 497  
 briefly, vii. 437  
 bring, v. 165  
 brize, vi. 413  
 broach, viii. 202  
 broached, v. 240  
 broad-fronted, vii. 363  
 brock, ii. 45  
 brogues, viii. 92  
 broken, iii. 247; vi. 363, 481  
 broker, i. 120; ix. 150  
 brokes, iii. 274  
 brooch, ii. 483  
 brooched, vii. 457  
 broom, i. 77  
 brothers, v. 156  
 brotherhoods, vi. 415  
 brought, vii. 260  
 brow, v. 489  
 Brownist, ii. 56  
 brows bent, vii. 355  
 bruit, vi. 94; vii. 93  
 bruited, iv. 182; v. 296  
 brush, v. 489  
 buckle, v. 12  
 bucklers, ii. 292  
 budget, i. 297  
 bugs, iii. 359; vi. 103; viii. 109  
 bulk, vi. 155; ix. 167  
 bully-rook, i. 217  
 bombard, i. 49; vi. 381  
 bunting, iii. 259  
 burgonet, v. 484; vii. 363  
 burst, iii. 331, 392; ix. 295  
 bury, iv. 377  
 bush, iii. 204  
 busky, iv. 499  
 but, i. 14; iii. 247, 379; iv. 229; vii. 420, 446, 461; ix. 39  
 buttons, i. 255  
 butt-shaft, ii. 409  
 buxom, v. 192  
 by, iv. 321  
 by'r lakin, i. 67; ii. 337

## C

- Caddis-garter, iv. 443  
 caddisses, iii. 509  
 cade, v. 453  
 cadent, viii. 370  
 cage, v. 454  
 cain-coloured, i. 222  
 caitiff, iv. 304  
 calculate, vii. 363  
 caliver, v. 70  
 callet, vi. 39; ix. 892  
 calling, iii. 117  
 call on, vii. 360  
 calm, v. 44  
 calmed, ix. 292  
 camelot, viii. 383  
 came up, v. 452  
 canary, ii. 420; iii. 238  
 candle, iv. 240  
 candle-wasters, ii. 280  
 canker, iv. 423  
 canon, vii. 169  
 canonize, vi. 438  
 canstick, iv. 465  
 cantle, iv. 464; vii. 417  
 cantons, ii. 25  
 canvas, v. 277  
 canvas-climber, viii. 297  
 cap, ii. 215; vii. 79, 140; ix. 291  
 capable, iii. 169, 219; iv. 226;



- vi. 184, 371, 471; ix. 224, 459; v. 294, 366; vi. 272; 367  
 ix. 148, 423  
 caparison, vii. 132  
 capitulate, iv. 475  
 capon, ii. 429  
 capricious, iii. 162  
 captious, iii. 231  
 carack, ix. 301  
 carbonado, iv. 510  
 carbonadoed, iii. 305  
 card, iii. 377; ix. 261  
 carded, iv. 473  
 cares, viii. 250; ix. 80  
 carieres, i. 211  
 carkanet, iv. 27  
 carl, viii. 106  
 carlot, iii. 172  
 carouses, ix. 280  
 carper, vii. 73  
 carpet-consideration, ii. 67  
 carpets, iii. 391  
 carriage, ix. 131  
 carried, vi. 275  
 carries, vii. 415  
 carry, vi. 518  
 carry coals, v. 180; ix. 7  
 cars, ii. 43  
 cart, ix. 205  
 case, ii. 87, 136; iii.  
 casques, v. 137  
 cassocks, iii. 294  
 cass, i. 45; ii. 147; iv. 176; v.  
 106; vii. 389; ix. 297, 332  
 Castilian, i. 247  
 Castilians vulgo, ii. 10  
 castle, vi. 508  
 Cataian, i. 232  
 catlings, vi. 471; ix. 104  
 cavalero, i. 233; v. 115  
 caviare, ix. 185  
 cause, ix. 47  
 cautel, ix. 146  
 cautelous, vii. 194, 271  
 Cawdor, iv. 90  
 cease, iii. 316; v. 487  
 ceased, vii. 28  
 censor, iii. 406; v. 120  
 censure, i. 120; ii. 116; iii. 459; v. 294, 366; vi. 272; ix. 148, 423  
 censured, iv. 216  
 center, vi. 415  
 centuries, vii. 130  
 ceremonies, vii. 249, 273, 279  
 ceremonious, vi. 180  
 certes, i. 69; ii. 439; iv. 56; ix. 292  
 cess, iv. 428  
 chaces, v. 152  
 chair, vi. 255  
 chalic'd, viii. 39  
 challenge, vi. 318  
 chamber, vi. 178  
 chambers, v. 45; vi. 295  
 chamberers, ix. 360  
 champion, ii. 47  
 chance, vii. 418, 471; viii. 25  
 change, vii. 346  
 changeling, iii. 492  
 channel, vi. 39  
 chansons, ix. 184  
 character, iii. 489; viii. 377; ix. 147  
 characters, i. 302  
 chares, vii. 459  
 charge, i. 241; vii. 239, 306  
 charge-house, ii. 457  
 chariest, ix. 147  
 chariness, i. 230  
 charitable, vii. 21  
 Charles-wain, iv. 428  
 charm'd, viii. 110  
 charneco, v. 411  
 charter, vii. 132  
 chaudron, iv. 149  
 cheater, i. 219; v. 46  
 checking, ix. 250  
 checks, iii. 344; viii. 60; ix. 297  
 cheer, ii. 347, 383  
 cherry-pit, ii. 63  
 cheveril, ii. 49; vi. 312; ix. 50  
 che vor'ye, viii. 447  
 chew, vii. 456  
 chewet, iv. 500  
 chide, v. 174

- chiding, ii. 366 ; vi. 338, 413 ; viii. 283  
 chides, vii. 316  
 chief, ix. 148  
 child, iii. 490 ; viii. 413  
 child-changed, viii. 449  
 childing, ii. 325  
 choler, iv. 451  
 chopine, ix. 185  
 chough, i. 45 ; ii. 345 ; ix. 271  
 christendoms, iii. 218  
 christom, v. 168  
 chronicle, vii. 431  
 chrystals, v. 170  
 chuck, ii. 458  
 chuffs, iv. 435  
 cicatrice, iii. 169  
 cinders, v. 87  
 circle, vii. 422  
 circumstance, i. 167 ; vi. 464 ; ix. 291  
 circumstanced, ix. 376  
 cital, iv. 506  
 cite, i. 140  
 cites, iii. 232  
 city-ward, i. 249  
 civil, iii. 151 ; v. 150 ; viii. 78 ; ix. 67  
 clack-dish, ii. 158  
 clamour, iii. 510  
 clap, iii. 443  
 clapped, v. 63  
 Claribel, i. 36  
 claw, ii. 221  
 claws, ii. 435  
 clean, iv. 9 ; vii. 262  
 clear, i. 72 ; vii. 66  
 clearess, viii. 440  
 cleanness, iv. 134  
 cleave, i. 83  
 cleft, i. 195  
 clerkly, i. 132, 290  
 clif, vi. 501  
 climb, vi. 416  
 cling, iv. 179  
 clinkquant, vi. 272  
 clip, vii. 204, 442, 479  
 slippeth, iv. 274  
 clipping, iii. 543  
 clipt, i. 78  
 close, vi. 215  
 closely, iv. 254  
 clout, ii. 432 ; v. 63 ; viii. 441  
 clouted, viii. 92  
 clown, iii. 224  
 clubs, iii. 191 ; ix. 10  
 clutched, vii. 189  
 coach-fellow, i. 235  
 coals, ix. 7  
 coasting, vi. 487  
 cobloaf, vi. 427  
 cock, iv. 119 ; vii. 36 ; viii. 438 ; ix. 239  
 cock and pye, i. 216  
 cockle, vii. 168 ; ix. 238  
 cockled, ii. 452  
 cock-shut, vi. 248  
 codling, ii. 21  
 coffin, viii. 225  
 cog, ii. 468  
 cogging, vi. 517  
 cognizance, vii. 282 ; viii. 50  
 coigne, iv. 102 viii. 280  
 coil, ii. 294 ; ix. 193  
 colbrand, iv. 202  
 cold, iii. 216  
 coldly set, ix. 233  
 collect, v. 417  
 collection, viii. 135 ; ix. 237  
 collied, ii. 312 ; ix. 339  
 collies, ii. 63  
 collop, iii. 445  
 colmes' inch, iv. 87  
 colmes' kill, iv. 126  
 colour, viii. 54  
 colours, v. 298, 323 ; viii. 17  
 colourable colours, ii. 438  
 colt, iv. 434  
 co-mart, ix. 131  
 combinate, ii. 152  
 combine, iii. 202  
 combined, ii. 179  
 come off, i. 285  
 comforting, iii. 471  
 commands, viii. 81  
 commences, v. 90

- commended, iii. 484  
 commenting, vi. 221  
 commission, ix. 91  
 commodity, iv. 225; v. 23; ix. 91  
 common, iv. 20; v. 82  
 commonty, iii. 342  
 commotion, v. 75  
 compact, ii. 372; iii. 138; iv. 34  
 companies, v. 141  
 companion, iii. 319; iv. 55; vii. 201; ix. 393  
 companion-ship, vii. 18  
 company, iii. 290; vii. 273  
 comparative, iv. 473; viii. 44  
 comparison, vi. 459  
 compassed, vi. 405  
 compassed cape, iii. 408  
 compassionate, iv. 311  
 competitor, i. 149; ii. 76, 413; vi. 240; vii. 359, 395  
 complements, ii. 399; v. 165  
 complexion, ix. 152  
 comply, ix. 182, 275  
 compose, vii. 369  
 composition, ii. 192; ix. 304  
 compost, ix. 225  
 composure, vii. 82;  
 comptible, ii. 21  
 compulsion, iv. 275  
 con, iii. 293  
 concealed, iv. 278  
 conceit, iv. 48, 241; vi. 194; viii. 283; ix. 58, 223  
 concent, v. 149  
 conclusion, vii. 457, 479; viii. 23; ix. 366  
 conclusions, iii. 27; ix. 226  
 concupy, vi. 507  
 condemned, vii. 191  
 condition, iii. 17, 119; v. 88, 208, 243; vii. 8, 70, 276; viii. 283  
 condolement, ix. 138  
 conduct, i. 101; iv. 371; v. 416; ix. 63, 114  
 coney-catched, iii. 420  
 coney-catcher, i. 209  
 confession, vi. 421  
 confirm, vii. 21  
 confound, vii. 127, 345, 402; viii. 329  
 confounded, v. 177  
 confounding, vii. 62  
 conjects, ix. 355  
 conjecture, ii. 269  
 conjure, vi. 505  
 consanguinity, vi. 478  
 consent, ii. 477; iv. 111, 303; v. 25; vi. 433, 435  
 consider, viii. 39  
 considerate, vii. 373  
 consign, viii. 95  
 consigned, vi. 481  
 consist, v. 79; viii. 258  
 consort, i. 172; ix. 114  
 constancy, ii. 373  
 constant, viii. 341  
 constantly, ii. 164  
 construction, iv. 95  
 contemptible, ii. 243  
 content, vi. 411  
 continent, vii. 452; ix. 236  
 continents, ii. 323; viii. 404  
 continue, ix. 375  
 contraction, ix. 220  
 contraries, vii. 62  
 contrarious, ii. 166  
 contrive, iii. 361  
 controul, i. 30  
 convented, vi. 363  
 convents, ii. 95  
 conversation, vi. 197; vii. 392; viii. 259  
 converse, ii. 487; viii. 360  
 converses, vii. 139  
 conversion, iv. 201  
 converted, ii. 190  
 convertite, iv. 271  
 convey vii. 420; viii. 355  
 conveyed, v. 145  
 conveyers, iv. 377  
 conveyance, v. 273; vi. 70  
 convinces, iv. 164; vi. 435; viii. 20, 254,

convicted, iv. 242  
 convive, vi. 493  
 copatain, iii. 419  
 cope, iii. 127; vi. 284; viii.  
   313  
 copp'd, viii. 247  
 copy, iv. 62  
 coragio, i. 102  
 Corinthian, iv. 441  
 corky, viii. 421  
 corollary, i. 77  
 coronet, v. 361  
 corporal, ii. 426  
 corrigible, vii. 453  
 costard, ii. 422; vi. 158; viii.  
   447  
 coster-monger, v. 20  
 coted, ii. 442; ix. 180  
 cotsale, i. 208  
 covered, iii. 167  
 covetousness, iv. 255  
 could, vii. 351  
 council, i. 206  
 count, ix. 271  
 count-confect, ii. 276  
 countenance, ii. 189  
 counter, iii. 140; ix. 242  
 counter-caster, ix. 292  
 counterfeit, iii. 56; vii. 88  
 counterpoints, iii. 375  
 counties, ii. 276  
 counts, vii. 389  
 county, ii. 26; ix. 84  
 courage, vii. 46  
 course, viii. 422  
 courser, vii. 354  
 courses, i. 7  
 court-cupboard, ix. 29  
 court holy-water, viii. 403  
 courtship, ix. 72  
 cousin, iv. 427; vi. 168  
 cowers, viii. 302  
 cowl-staff, i. 261  
 coxcomb, i. 305  
 coy, ii. 361  
 coy'd, vii. 218  
 coystril, ii. 10; vii. 314  
 cozier, ii. 33  
 VOL. IX.

crab, ii. 322, 494  
 crack, iv. 154; v. 62; vii. 120  
 cranks, vii. 110  
 crants, ix. 264  
 crare, viii. 92  
 craven, iii. 371; v. 325; viii.  
   66; ix. 235  
 create, v. 161  
 credent, ii. 182; iii. 445  
 credit, ii. 80; iv. 34  
 crescive, v. 141  
 cressets, iv. 461  
 crest, ii. 449  
 crestless, v. 299  
 cries on, ix. 283  
 crisp, i. 80; iv. 420; vii. 72  
 Crispian, v. 220  
 critical, ix. 324  
 critick, ii. 446; vi. 505  
 crone, iii. 472  
 Crosby-place, vi. 189  
 cross, iii. 131  
 crossed, vii. 24  
 crosses, ii. 405; v. 22  
 crow, iv. 278  
 crow-keeper, viii. 441  
 crown, iii. 301; vi. 459  
 crown'd, vii. 37, 75; viii. 322  
 crownnet, vii. 448  
 cruel, viii. 388  
 crush, ix. 19  
 crushed, vi. 402  
 cruzadoes, ix. 369  
 cry, vii. 191, 215; ix. 209  
 cry'd game, i. 248  
 cub-drawn, viii. 400  
 cuckoo, vii. 388  
 cues, ii. 340; v. 195; vi. 193;  
   ix. 189  
 cuisses, iv. 489  
 cullion, iii. 399  
 cunning, iii. 346; vii. 73, 97;  
   viii. 287; ix. 351  
 curb, ix. 225  
 curfeu, ix. 97  
 curious, iii. 411; vii. 401  
 curiosity, vii. 77; viii. 320;  
   352

curled, i. 17; ix. 302  
 currents, iv. 438  
 cursed, vi. 512  
 curst, ii. 56, 355; viii. 377  
 curstness, vii. 370  
 curtail-dog, i. 230  
 curtains, v. 217

curtal, iii. 247  
 curtle-ax, vi. 124  
 custard-coffin, iii. 406  
 customer, iii. 320; ix. 38  
 cut, i. 266; ii. 36; iv. 428  
 Cyprus, ii. 53

## D

Daffed, ii. 242  
 Daintry, iv. 492  
 dallies, ii. 38  
 Dame Partlett, iv. 479  
 damn, vii. 308  
 dance, ii. 32  
 dank, iv. 428  
 Danskers, ix. 164  
 dare, ii. 182; vi. 342  
 dark, iii. 256  
 darkling, ii. 334; vii. 457  
 darkness, v. 13  
 darraign, vi. 36  
 date, iii. 217; vi. 410; viii. 292  
 daub, viii. 427  
 Daubeny, i. 282  
 day-bed, ii. 43; vi. 202  
 day-woman, ii. 408  
 day and night, vi. 286  
 deafened, viii. 319  
 deal, vi. 217  
 dealt, vii. 420  
 dear, vi. 160, 508, 509; vii. 94, 105; viii. 434  
 dear employment, ix. 111  
 dearest, ii. 410; iv. 475; ix. 142, 307  
 dearn, viii. 280  
 death-tokens, vi. 444  
 deboshed, i. 62  
 decay, viii. 469  
 deceivable, ii. 81  
 deck, vi. 100  
 decked, i. 15  
 decline, vi. 225, 440; vi. 492; vii. 143, 427  
 deedless, vi. 489

deem, vi. 481  
 deep-fet, v. 413  
 default, iii. 254  
 defeat, ix. 189, 317  
 defeatures, iv. 18, 71  
 defence, iii. 164; ix. 251  
 defend, ix. 314  
 defensible, v. 41  
 defiance, ii. 149  
 deformed, iv. 70  
 deftly, iv. 151  
 defy, iv. 243, 485  
 degrees, vii. 267  
 delay, vii. 129  
 delighted, ix. 315  
 demerits, vii. 116, 300  
 demise, vi. 230  
 demurely, vii. 446  
 denay, ii. 41  
 denied, iii. 240  
 denier, vi. 140  
 denotements, ix. 354  
 deny, iv. 327  
 depart, ii. 415  
 departed, iv. 225  
 departing, vi. 50  
 depend, viii. 369  
 deprive, viii. 352  
 deracinate, v. 245; vi. 415  
 derogate, viii. 370  
 descant, i. 123  
 desert, i. 140; vii. 8  
 deserved, vii. 178  
 design, iv. 302; ix. 131  
 desired, ix. 327  
 despatched, ix. 153  
 desperate, ix. 78  
 despised, ix. 298

- detected, ii. 157  
 determined, v. 99, 340 ; viii. 230, 430  
 Diana, vi. 504  
 dibble, iii. 505  
 Dickon, vi. 257  
 die and drab, iii. 407  
 diet, i. 130 ; iii. 318 ; vi. 130  
 difference, vii. 352 ; ix. 245  
 diffused, i. 287 ; v. 246 ; vi. 134 ; viii. 360  
 dight, v. 181  
 digress, iii. 384 ; iv. 389  
 digression, ii. 407  
 dig-you-den, ii. 428  
 dilemma, iii. 278  
 diminutives, vii. 449  
 dint, vii. 303  
 direction, vi. 245  
 disable, iii. 174 ; v. 352  
 disappointed, ix. 158  
 disclosed, ix. 266  
 discontenting, iii. 531  
 discontents, vii. 360  
 discourse, ii. 80 ; ix. 235  
 disdained, iv. 433  
 diseases, iii. 199 ; v. 303  
 disgrace, vii. 108  
 dislimns, vii. 450  
 dismes, vi. 430  
 dismembered, ix. 76  
 disparked, iv. 345  
 disponge, vii. 445  
 disposed, vii. 455  
 disposition, ix. 153  
 dispute, iii. 516 ; ix. 73  
 disputable, iii. 136  
 dissembling, vi. 125  
 distaste, vi. 434  
 distemper, v. 162  
 distempered, iv. 265  
 distemperring, ix. 295  
 distinction, viii. 134  
 distractions, vii. 415  
 distraught, ix. 97  
 diverted, iii. 130  
 divided, vi. 185  
 dividable, vi. 415  
 division, iv. 468 ; ix. 80  
 doctrine, iii. 233  
 doff't, vii. 437  
 dogs of war, vii. 296  
 dole, i. 267 ; iii. 347, 445 ; iv. 435  
 dolphine, iii. 246  
 dolts, vii. 449  
 donation, vii. 45  
 don'd, vii. 367 ; ix. 239  
 done, v. 334 ; vi. 79  
 dotant, vii. 223  
 double, iii. 95  
 double-tongue, ii. 330  
 doubt, vii. 172  
 dough, iii. 422  
 dout, v. 216 ; ix. 152  
 dowle, i. 71  
 down-gyved, ix. 166  
 drachmas, vii. 305  
 dragon, viii. 38  
 draught, vii. 89  
 draw, iv. 488  
 drawn, viii. 117  
 draws dryfoot, iv. 46  
 dread, vi. 182  
 drew, iv. 277  
 dribbling, ii. 111  
 drink, vii. 9  
 drive, viii. 171  
 driven, ix. 313  
 drollery, i. 68  
 drowned, viii. 321  
 drugs, vii. 75  
 drug-damned, viii. 64  
 drumble, i. 261  
 dry, i. 13  
 ducdame, iii. 137  
 dudgeon, iv. 112  
 due, v. 332  
 duello, ii. 70  
 dull, v. 96, 171  
 dollard, viii. 129  
 dumb, viii. 48  
 dumb, i. 169  
 dump, ix. 103  
 dupped, ix. 239

## E

- Eager**, vi. 51 ; ix. 151  
**eanlings**, iii. 20  
**ear**, iv. 353 ; vii. 361  
**ears**, iii. 225  
**earned**, viii. 293  
**earth**, ix. 16  
**earthlier**, ii. 309  
**easy**, v. 111, 421 ; vii. 223  
**eche**, viii. 280  
**ecstasy**, i. 74 ; iv. 134 ; ix. 197  
**Edward shovel-boards**, i. 210  
**effect**, v. 32  
**effects**, ii. 144 ; ix. 224  
**eftest**, ii. 278  
**eggs**, iii. 446  
**Eglamour**, i. 119  
**Egypt**, ii. 372  
**eld**, i. 286 ; ii. 144  
**element**, vi. 273  
**elements**, vii. 402  
**elves**, i. 89  
**elvish-marked**, vi. 149  
**embarquements**, vii. 137  
**eminence**, iv. 134  
**embossed**, iii. 297, 332 ; iv. 483 ; viii. 397  
**embowelled**, iii. 233  
**embraced**, iii. 44  
**emperry**, v. 151 ; viii. 31  
**emulation**, v. 336 ; vi. 438 ; vii. 112, 284  
**emulous**, vi. 447  
**enactures**, ix. 206  
**encave**, ix. 380  
**end**, i. 182  
**endeavour**, vii. 446  
**enemy**, iv. 129  
**enlard**, vi. 445  
**ends**, ii. 218  
**enfeoffed**, iv. 474  
**enforce**, vii. 163  
**engine**, i. 40 ; ix. 396  
**engross**, vi. 203  
**engrossing**, ix. 114  
**engrossments**, v. 99  
**enkindle**, iv. 93  
**enmew**, ii. 147  
**enseamed**, ix. 222  
**enshield**, ii. 139  
**ensued**, vii. 453  
**entertain**, i. 219 ; vii. 337  
**entertainment**, vii. 199 ; ix. 359  
**entrance**, viii. 271  
**entreatments**, ix. 150  
**envied**, vii. 190  
**envious**, v. 412  
**enviously**, ix. 237  
**envy**, iii. 70 ; v. 331 ; vi. 69, 457 ; vii. 186, 188, 272  
**Ephesian**, i. 289 ; v. 39  
**epileptic visage**, viii. 383  
**equalness**, vii. 462  
**equipage**, i. 235  
**erewhile**, ii. 430  
**erring**, ix. 134, 317  
**Errinnys**, iv. 405  
**escape**, viii. 203  
**esconce**, i. 236  
**escoted**, ix. 181  
**esil**, ix. 266  
**esperance**, iv. 439  
**espials**, v. 280 ; ix. 192  
**essential**, ix. 322  
**estate**, ix. 264  
**estimable**, ii. 27  
**estimate**, iii. 241 ; vii. 6  
**estimation**, iv. 426  
**estridges**, iv. 489  
**eterne**, iv. 135  
**even**, iii. 478 ; vii. 23, 271 ; viii. 452 ; ix. 256  
**examined**, iii. 273  
**excel**, vi. 488  
**exception**, v. 171  
**excrement**, ii. 457 ; iii. 55 ; ix. 223  
**execute**, vi. 519  
**execution**, ix. 367  
**executors**, v. 150  
**exempt**, iv. 25 ; v. 300

exercise, vi. 190; ix. 370  
 exhale, v. 157  
 exhibition, i. 127; viii. 352  
     ix. 313  
 exigent, v. 301  
 exorciser, viii. 95  
 exorcisms, v. 293  
 exorcist, iii. 321; vii. 278  
 expect, vi. 414  
 expectation, v. 100  
 expedience, iv. 406; vii. 353  
 expedient, iii. 253; iv. 206; v.  
     426  
 expeditiously, iii. 146  
 expiate, vi. 191  
 exploit, vi. 215  
 expostulate, ix. 172  
 exposture, vii. 194

Fa sol la mi, viii. 356  
 face, v. 355; vii. 270  
 faced, iii. 407  
 facinorous, iii. 246  
 fact, iii. 481  
 factious, vii. 264  
 faculties, iv. 105  
 faded, i. 81  
 fadge, ii. 29, 459  
 fadings, iii. 508  
 fail, vii. 229  
 fain, v. 397  
 fair, iii. 150; iv. 18; ix. 34  
 fair-betrothed, viii. 332  
 fairies' midwife, ix. 26  
 fairy, vii. 443  
 faithful, vi. 154  
 faithfully, vii. 43  
 faitors, v. 48  
 falcon, vi. 455  
 fall, iv. 23; vi. 251; vii. 38  
 false, viii. 41  
 falsehood, iii. 479  
 falsely, ii. 395; vii. 168  
 falsify, iv. 416  
 falsing, iv. 22  
 familiar, v. 468  
 fan, i. 235

express, ii. 27  
 expulsed, v. 320  
 exsufflicate, ix. 356  
 extended, vii. 350  
 extent, ii. 75; iii. 146  
 extern, ix. 294  
 extirpt, v. 320  
 extracting, ii. 92  
 extravagant, ix. 297  
 extremes, iii. 501  
 extremity, viii. 323  
 eyas-musker, i. 257  
 eyases, ix. 181  
 eye, i. 36; ix. 105, 179, 234  
 eye-less worm, vii. 72  
 eyes, vii. 9  
 eyliads, i. 219  
 eyne, ii. 315

## F

fancies, v. 71  
 fancy, ii. 312, 326, 399; v. 353  
 fang, vii. 66  
 fanged, ix. 227  
 fantastical, iv. 90  
 fantasy, vii. 273, 306  
 fap, i. 211  
 far, viii. 6  
 farced, v. 213  
 fashions, iii. 382; ix. 150  
 fast, viii. 341  
 fast and loose, vii. 448  
 fat, ii. 85  
 fate, v. 172; vii. 53  
 fathers, ii. 213; iii. 223  
 favour, ii. 37, 167, 313; iv. 94,  
     371, 512; v. 246; vii. 269;  
     viii. 122, 295; ix. 317  
 favoured, vii. 265  
 fear, iii. 67, 423; v. 11, 95,  
     103; vi. 73; ix. 302  
 feared, iii. 24; v. 148  
 fearful, i. 31; iii. 23  
 feat, viii. 122, 304  
 feated, viii. 7  
 feather, vi. 291  
 feature, vii. 386  
 federary, iii. 461



- fee, ix. 154  
 feeders, vii. 428  
 feeding, iii. 507  
 fee-grief, iv. 167  
 feeling, iv. 458  
 feere, viii. 197  
 fee-simple, i. 284  
 feet, viii. 401  
 fell, iv. 178 ; viii. 458  
 fellow, i. 60 ; ii. 62  
 fellowly, i. 91  
 fellows, iii. 362  
 fence, i. 215 ; ii. 282 ; v. 399  
 feodary, viii. 57  
 fern-seed, iv. 432  
 ferret, vii. 256  
 festering, ix. 96  
 festinately, ii. 419  
 festival, ii. 292  
 few, iii. 354  
 fico, i. 218  
 field, v. 454  
 fielded, vii. 122  
 fierce, vi. 273 ; vii. 64 ; viii. 133  
 fifteens, v. 465  
 fig, v. 118, 193  
 fights, i. 240  
 figures, iv. 424  
 file, ii. 158 ; iv. 131 ; vi. 274 ; viii. 166  
 filed, iv. 129 ; vi. 337  
 fills, vi. 455  
 filths, vii. 61.  
 finch, vi. 497  
 finder, ii. 64  
 finds, viii. 396  
 fine, i. 284 ; iii. 320 ; v. 145 ; ix. 244  
 fine-less, ix. 356  
 fire-drake, vi. 379  
 fire-new, ii. 399  
 firke, v. 225  
 first, vii. 194  
 fitchew, vi. 498 ; ix. 382  
 fitly, vii. 109  
 fits, iv. 156 ; vi. 454  
 five-finger, vi. 506  
 fives, iii. 382  
 flamens, vii. 145  
 flap-dragon, ii. 455 ; iii. 491  
 flap-jacks, viii. 263  
 flask, ii. 483  
 flatness, iii. 483  
 flaws, iv. 140 ; v. 428 ; vii. 228, 423 ; viii. 284 ; ix. 263  
 flayed, iii. 525  
 flecked, ix. 43  
 fleet, vii. 430  
 fleeting, vii. 474  
 fleshment, viii. 385  
 flewed, ii. 366  
 flickering, viii. 384  
 flight, ii. 210  
 flote, i. 19  
 flouret, ii. 363  
 flourish, ii. 166  
 flout, iv. 86  
 flow, vii. 99  
 flowering, v. 424  
 Fluellen, v. 179  
 flush, vii. 98, 361  
 fly, i. 159  
 fly-blowing, i. 104  
 foeman, v. 70  
 foin i. 246 ; viii. 447  
 foining ii. 283  
 foizon, i. 40, 79 ; vii. 393  
 folds in, vii. 241  
 folly, ix. 413  
 fond, ii. 132, 188, 355 ; iii. 129  
 fonder, vi. 397  
 fondly, v. 85  
 fool, viii. 469  
 fool-begged, iv. 16  
 foot, viii. 115  
 foot-cloth, v. 465 ; vi. 195  
 for, i. 124, 158 ; iii. 273 ; iv. 132, 226 ; v. 467 ; vi. 171, 505 ; vii. 225, 413 ; viii. 82, 263  
 forbid, iv. 88  
 force, iii. 45 ; v. 155 ; vi. 331, 446 ; vii. 182  
 forced, iii. 472  
 fordid, viii. 467

- fordone**, ii. 385  
**foredoes**, ix. 167, 264, 407  
**forehead**, ix. 35  
**forepast**, iii. 314  
**fore-slow**, v. 42  
**forestall**, viii. 73  
**forfended**, viii. 453  
**forgetive**, v. 89  
**forked**, iii. 126, 447 ; ix. 360  
**formal**, ii. 45 ; iv. 63 ; vii. 383  
**former**, vii. 327  
**forsee**, vii. 71  
**forspent**, v. 9  
**forspoke**, vii. 412  
**forth**, viii. 260 ; ix. 403  
**forth-coming**, v. 404  
**fortune**, vii. 233  
**fortypence**, vi. 314  
**forwearied**, iv. 213  
**foul**, iii. 163  
**found**, iii. 239 ; vii. 28  
**fox**, v. 224  
**foxship**, vii. 196  
**fractions**, vii. 38  
**frame**, vii. 377 ; viii. 242  
**frampold**, i. 238  
**Francisco**, i. 247  
**frank**, v. 39  
**franked**, vi. 152  
**franklins**, iii. 546 ; iv. 430 ; viii. 59  
**free**, ii. 38, 198 ; iv. 147 ; v. 424 ; vii. 39, 163  
**frets**, iii. 368  
**friend**, ii. 226, 475 ; iv. 159 ; vii. 422  
**friendships**, iii. 495  
**fringed**, i. 29  
**frippery**, i. 86  
**frize**, i. 305  
**from**, ii. 147 ; vii. 388 ; ix. 297  
**fronted**, vii. 371  
**frontier**, iv. 417  
**frontlet**, viii. 366  
**froth**, i. 217  
**fruit**, ix. 170  
**frush**, vi. 518  
**frustrate**, i. 67 ; vii. 460  
**full**, iii. 350 ; viii. 242 ; ix. 320  
**Fullam**, i. 220  
**fullest**, vii. 427  
**full-filling**, vi. 394  
**full fortune**, ix. 294  
**full-gorged**, iii. 397  
**fumiter**, viii. 434  
**furnished**, iii. 204  
**furnishings**, viii. 401  
**fustilarian**, v. 29

## G

- Gaberdine**, i. 50  
**Gad**, viii. 198, 353  
**gadding**, ix. 93  
**Gadshill**, iv. 429  
**gain-giving**, ix. 276  
**gainsay**, vi. 108, 319  
**gait**, ii. 385, 387 ; ix. 136  
**galliard**, v. 151  
**galliasses**, iii. 376  
**gallow**, viii. 404  
**galloway nags**, v. 50  
**gallowglasses**, iv. 84  
**galls**, vi. 421  
**gally-mawfry**, i. 231 ; iii. 513  
**game**, ii. 315  
**gamester**, iii. 109, 377 ; viii. 311  
**gaping**, vi. 378  
**garb**, viii. 384  
**garboils**, vii. 356  
**garish**, ix. 67  
**garner'd**, ix. 390  
**gasted**, viii. 377  
**gaudy**, vii. 431  
**gaunt**, v. 72  
**gawds**, ii. 308, 368 ; iv. 241  
**gaze**, vii. 118  
**gear**, v. 419  
**geck**, ii. 94 ; viii. 114  
**gem**, vii. 428

- gender, ix. 249  
 general, ii. 137; vii. 38, 61  
 generation, viii. 344  
 generosity, vii. 113  
 generous, ii. 184  
 gennets, ix. 296  
 gentility, ii. 397  
 gentle, i. 32; vii. 193; viii. 84  
 gentle-hind, i. 69  
 gentler, v. 227  
 gentle-weal, iv. 141  
 gentry, ix. 169  
 German, ix. 274  
 germins, iv. 151  
 gest, iii. 441  
 get within, iv. 61  
 gib, iv. 412; ix. 226  
 gifts, iii. 346; vii. 23.  
 giglot, ii. 197; v. 343; viii. 54  
 gilders, iv. 40  
 gilt, iv. 320; v. 154, 223; vi. 466  
 gimmel, v. 217, 271  
 ging, i. 280  
 gipsy, vii. 448  
 gird, iii. 425; v. 15, 310; vii. 115  
 gis, ix. 239  
 gladly, vii. 132  
 glamis, iv. 90  
 glass-faced, vii. 8  
 gleek, ii. 342; ix. 103  
 gleeking, v. 243  
 glimmering, ii. 323  
 globe, ix. 159  
 glose, v. 144  
 gloss, vi. 373  
 glozed, vi. 436  
 glut, i. 7  
 gnarled, ii. 131  
 go, v. 20  
 goal, vii. 443  
 godfather, vi. 377  
 God 'ild you, iii. 164; ix. 239  
 golden round, iv. 99  
 Gongariau, i. 218  
 good, vii. 105  
 good-a, i. 186  
 good den, iv. 200; ix. 51  
 good deed, iii. 441  
 good even, vii. 30  
 good-fer, i. 225; viii. 458  
 good-leave, iii. 107; iv. 201, 418; vi. 58  
 good life, i. 72; ii. 31  
 good nights, v. 71  
 good time, i. 127; ii. 150  
 gorbellied, iv. 435  
 gospelled, iv. 131  
 goss, i. 83  
 gossomers, viii. 439; ix. 58  
 government, ii. 376; vi. 25  
 gourd, i. 220  
 grace, ii. 334; iii. 442; vii. 427; ix. 44  
 grac'd, vi. 227  
 gracious, i. 165; ii. 269; iii. 55; iv. 245; vi. 435; vii. 143  
 grained, iv. 71; ix. 222  
 gramercy, viii. 199  
 grand sea, vii. 422  
 grange, ii. 153; ix. 295  
 grants, vii. 399  
 gratility, ii. 31  
 gratulate, ii. 208  
 grave, vii. 71, 448  
 graves, v. 74  
 graymalkin, iv. 83  
 greasily, ii. 432  
 great morning, vi. 479; viii. 83  
 greatness, vii. 465  
 Greek, ii. 74; vi. 405  
 green, ix. 96  
 greenly, ix. 240  
 greets, viii. 305, 455  
 griefs, i. 197; iv. 419; v. 75, 366; vii. 311, 373  
 grievances, i. 179  
 grieve, viii. 253  
 grise, ii. 53; ix. 311  
 grize, vii. 65  
 grossly, v. 164  
 groundlings, ix. 198  
 growing, iv. 40

guard, ii. 113 ; iv. 254 ; v. 218  
 guardant, vii. 224  
 guarded, ii. 218 ; iii. 30 ; v. 73  
 guards, ii. 147  
 guerdon, ii. 295  
 guerdoned, vi. 72  
 guiled, iii. 56.  
 guilty to, iii. 521

Guinea-hen, ix. 316  
 gules, ix. 186  
 gulf, iv. 149  
 gun-stones, v. 153  
 gurnet, iv. 490  
 gust, iii. 449 ; vii. 54  
 gyves, iv. 491 ; ix. 326

## H

Habit, v. 195  
 hack, i. 228  
 haggard, ii. 51 ; iii. 397 ; ix. 359  
 hair, i. 247 ; iv. 487 ; vi. 402  
 halcyon, viii. 383  
 half caps, vii. 38  
 half-face, iv. 196  
 half-faced, iv. 424  
 half-kirtle, v. 120  
 hall, ix. 30  
 hallowmas, i. 130 ; iv. 380  
 hand, iii. 357  
 hang by, viii. 65  
 hangers, ix. 273  
 happily, iii. 412 ; vi. 325  
 happy, viii. 70  
 happy time, ix. 83  
 haps, ix. 233  
 hardiment, iv. 420  
 hare, iv. 412  
 harlocks, viii. 434  
 harlots, ix. 67  
 harness, vii. 443  
 harped, iv. 152  
 harper, iv. 148  
 harrows, ix. 129  
 harry'd, vii. 405  
 hatched, vi. 414  
 having, i. 255 ; iii. 130 ; iv. 90 ; vi. 312 ; ix. 400  
 haviour, iii. 65  
 havock, ix. 283  
 haught, iv. 374 ; vi. 32  
 haughty, v. 304, 321, 325  
 haunt, ix. 229  
 haunted, v. 172  
 hay, ix. 47

head, iii. 230 ; iv. 354, 427, 496 ; v. 161 ; vii. 152  
 heap, viii. 244  
 heart, vi. 281 ; vii. 19, 448 ; viii. 293  
 hearted, ix. 367  
 heat, ii. 6 ; v. 54, 86 ; viii. 351  
 heaven, vii. 27  
 heaven's claim, iv. 36  
 heaviness, vii. 458  
 hebenon, ix. 157  
 hedge, vii. 313  
 heed, ii. 393  
 hefts, iii. 460  
 helmed, ii. 158  
 hell, iv. 47  
 help, ix. 233  
 helpless, iv. 16  
 hence, v. 123  
 henchman, ii. 325  
 hent, ii. 184 ; iii. 501 ; ix. 217  
 Hercules, ix. 182  
 hereby, ii. 408  
 hermits, iv. 103  
 Herod, vii. 347  
 hest, i. 58  
 hic jacet, iii. 277  
 high-fantastical, ii. 5  
 high-repented, iii. 311  
 high, ii. 377  
 hilding, iii. 275, 363 ; v. 9, 216 ; viii. 43  
 him, iv. 477 ; vii. 274  
 himself, vii. 225  
 hint, i. 14, 33  
 hiren, v. 48  
 his, v. 94  
 hit, viii. 351

- hoar, vii. 71  
 hob nob, ii. 67  
 ho, ho, ho, vii. 434  
 hoist, ix. 227  
 hold, i. 295 ; vii. 264 ; ix. 318  
 holding, vii. 397  
 holla, iii. 56  
 holy, ii. 198  
 holy-ales, viii. 241  
 holyday, i. 255  
 home, iii. 309  
 honest, ix. 185  
 honesty, vii. 40  
 honey-seed, v. 29  
 honey-stalks, viii. 212  
 honey-suckle, v. 29  
 honour, vi. 187 ; vii. 10, 83  
 hooded, v. 201  
 hoodman-blind, ix. 221  
 hope, vi. 252 ; vii. 367  
 horologe, ix. 336  
 house, viii. 394 ; ix. 47  
 boxes, iii. 450  
 Hull, ii. 22  
 hulling, vi. 323  
 humour vii. 260  
 humorous, v. 92 ; ix. 36  
 Humphrey Hour, vi. 228  
 hungry, v. 270 ; vii. 228  
 hunt-counter, v. 18  
 hunts-up, ix. 80  
 hurl, viii. 326  
 hurly, v. 58  
 hurtled, vii. 279  
 hurtling, iii. 186  
 husbandry, iv. 110 ; vi. 401 ;  
     viii. 286 ; ix. 148  
 huswife, v. 243  
 hyen, iii. 178  
 Hyperion, ix. 140

## I and J

- I, ix. 68  
 Jack, i. 85, 225 ; ii. 215 ; iv.  
     395 ; vi. 143, 218 ; viii. 34  
 Jack-a-lent, i. 257  
 Jack guardant, vii. 224  
 jacks, iii. 391  
 jaded, v. 448 ; vi. 341  
 jar, iii. 441  
 jauncing, iv. 396  
 ice-brook, ix. 418  
 idle, iv. 25  
 jesses, ix. 360  
 jest, iv. 309  
 jet, viii. 79  
 jets, ii. 42  
 jett'd, viii. 256  
 i'fecks, iii. 444  
 ignomy, ii. 140 ; viii. 203  
 ignorant, viii. 162  
 jiggling, vii. 317  
 ill, v. 305  
 ill-erected, iv. 378  
 ill-inhabited, iii. 162  
 ill-nurtured, v. 309  
 jills, iii. 391  
 image, iii. 242  
 images, vi. 170  
 imaginary, v. 137  
 imbare, v. 146  
 immanity, v. 346  
 immediacy, viii. 459  
 imp, iv. 320 ; v. 122  
 impair, vi. 439  
 impartial, ii. 190  
 impawned, ix. 273  
 impeach, ii. 323  
 impeachment, i. 125 ; v. 196  
 imperious, i. 142 ; vi. 491 ; viii.  
     84, 212  
 imperseverant, viii. 82  
 impetico, ii. 31  
 impious, viii. 304  
 importance, ii. 94 ; iii. 541 ; iv.  
     204 ; viii. 18  
 important, ii. 225 ; iii. 280 ; iv.  
     65 ; viii. 435  
 importing, ix. 251  
 impose, i. 178  
 impositions, iii. 301  
 impossible, ii. 231  
 impostors, iv. 140  
 impress, iv. 153, 345 ; ix. 131

- impressed, viii. 459  
 impugn, iii. 76  
 in, viii. 79  
 incapable, vi. 169; ix. 255  
 incarnardine, iv. 117  
 incense, i. 221  
 incensed, ii. 288; vi. 184, 363  
 incision, ii. 443; iii. 149  
 inclining, ix. 344  
 inclips, vii. 395  
 include, i. 198  
   nclusive, iii. 232  
 incony, ii. 424  
 incorrect, ix. 138  
 increase, ii. 325; viii. 225  
 indeed, ii. 145  
 indent, iv. 420  
 index, vi. 173; ix. 220  
 indifferent, iii. 393; iv. 341  
 induction, iv. 461; vi. 126, 221  
 indurance, vi. 366  
 inequality, ii. 186  
 infinite, ii. 240; vii. 60, 72  
 informal, ii. 193  
 ingaged, iii. 313  
 ingenious, iii. 343  
 ingeniously, vii. 39  
 ingraft, ix. 337  
 inhabitable, iv. 297  
 in hand, v. 16  
 inherit, i. 81, 169; iv. 298;  
   viii. 168; ix. 17  
 inhibit, iv. 142  
 inhibited, iii. 217  
 inhooped, vii. 380  
 iniquity, ii. 122  
 inkhorn, v. 309  
 inkle, iii. 509; viii. 316  
 inky blots, iv. 321  
 inland, iii. 141, 159  
 innocents, viii. 415  
 insconce, iv. 21  
 insculped, iii. 41  
 inseparate, vi. 506  
 insinuate, iii. 528  
 insinuation, ix. 270  
 instance, i. 243; ii. 80; iii.  
   283; vi. 187; ix. 206  
 instrument, i. 71  
 insurrection, vii. 113  
 intend, ii. 356; iii. 398; vi.  
   202  
 intending, vi. 196; vii. 38  
 intendment, v. 148  
 intenible, iii. 231  
 intent, ii. 236  
 intention, i. 219  
 intently, ix. 310  
 interested, viii. 342  
 intermission, iii. 59; iv. 168;  
   viii. 389  
 intermissive, v. 266  
 interrogatories, iii. 294  
 intrenchant, iv. 183  
 intrinse, viii. 383  
 invention, ii. 136  
 inward, ii. 158, 457; vi. 192  
 inwardness, ii. 274  
 John-a-dreams, ix. 189  
 John Drum, iii. 276  
 joint-ring, ix. 400  
 joint-stool, iii. 370  
 jovial, viii. 96  
 journal, ii. 177; viii. 83  
 Iris, v. 444  
 iron man, v. 81  
 irons, vi. 439  
 irregular, viii. 97  
 issued, i. 11  
 issues, ii. 102; ix. 358  
 iteration, iv. 412  
 Judas, iii. 166  
 judicious, vii. 241  
 jump, iii. 45; vii. 172, 416;  
   viii. 118; ix. 130, 345  
 just, ii. 186  
 Justice, ii. 162  
 justicer, viii. 127  
 jutty, v. 177  
 juvenal, ii. 340

## K

- Kam, vii. 178  
 keech, v. 31 ; vi. 273  
 keel, ii. 493  
 keep, i. 180 ; ii. 111, 143, 451  
 keep-house, vii. 47  
 keep on, viii. 10  
 keeps, vi. 246  
 keisar, i. 217  
 Kendal, iv. 448  
 kernes, iv. 84 ; v. 429  
 key, i. 12  
 key-cold, vi. 131  
 kickay-wickay, iii. 256  
 kid-fox, ii. 238  
 kiln-hole, iii. 510  
 kin, ix. 137  
 kind, iii. 20, 183 ; vii. 263, 267 ; ix. 137  
 kindless, ix. 190  
 kindly, ii. 268 ; iii. 334  
 kinds, i. 73  
 kinged, iv. 218  
 king's ring, vi. 374  
 kinsman, iv. 63  
 kirtle, v. 53  
 kiss, vi. 455  
 kitchen-vestal, iv. 56  
 knave, i, 162 ; vii. 74, 463 ; ix. 293  
 knife, iv. 100  
 knight, ii. 296 ; v. 116  
 knot-grass, ii. 356  
 knots, iv. 363  
 knotted, ii. 401  
 know, iii. 309 ; vii. 42  
 known, vii. 390

## L

- Label, ix. 90  
 labras, i. 211  
 laced mutton, i. 117  
 lacking, vii. 361  
 lag, vii. 59  
 lance, vii. 461  
 lances, ii. 484  
 land-damn, iii. 464  
 land-rakers, iv. 431  
 lands, iv. 46  
 lantern, ix. 112  
 lapped, iv. 86  
 lapwing, ii. 114  
 larded, ix. 239  
 large, ii. 267  
 lashed, iv. 15  
 lass-lorn, i. 78  
 last, ii. 489  
 latch, iv. 167  
 latched, ii. 345  
 late, vi. 182, 349  
 lated, iv. 136 ; vii. 418  
 late-despised, v. 302  
 latten, i. 211  
 latter-end, i. 221  
 lavatch, iii. 307  
 lavoltas, v. 189 ; vi. 482  
 laugh, v. 415  
 laurel, vi. 53  
 lay, v. 486 ; ix. 343  
 lay by, iv. 401  
 leaden, vi. 221  
 leading, iv. 494  
 leaguer, iii. 276  
 leans, viii. 25  
 leas, vii. 72  
 lease, i. 189  
 leasing, ii. 18 ; vii. 222  
 leather-coats, v. 115  
 leave, i. 183 ; iii. 107 ; vi. 58 ; ix. 222  
 leaven, viii. 66  
 leech, vii. 99  
 leer, iii. 175 ; viii. 203  
 leet, iii. 341  
 leg, iv. 454  
 legerity, v. 205  
 leges, iii. 353  
 legs, vii. 140  
 leiger, ii. 146  
 leisure, ix. 268  
 leman, i. 282 ; ii. 31

- lenity, ix. 63  
 lenten, ii. 16; ix. 180  
 l'envoy, ii. 422  
 let, ii. 287; viii. 252; ix. 39  
 lethe, vii. 294  
 lets, i. 156; ix. 155  
 let slip, iv. 426  
 letters, v. 456; ix. 293  
 level, iii. 481; vi. 281  
 levelled, vii. 7  
 lewd, ii. 291; iv. 298; vi. 143  
 lewdly, v. 408  
 libbards, ii. 480  
 liberal, i. 165; ii. 269, 487;  
     iii. 31; ix. 254, 325, 417  
 liberties, iv. 14  
 liberty, vii. 62  
 liceuse, ii. 141  
 lie, ii. 398; vi. 129  
 liefest, v. 422  
 liegers, viii. 26  
 lies, v. 293; vi. 244  
 lieu, i. 14  
 lieutenantry, vii. 420  
 life, viii. 327  
 lifter, vi. 405  
 light, iii. 91; ix. 407  
 lightly, vi. 182, 183  
 lightness, vii. 360  
 light o'love, ii. 261  
 like, v. 341  
 liked, iii. 205  
 likelihood, v. 240  
 likeness, ii. 162  
 likes, viii. 383  
 liking, i. 229; iv. 478  
 lilied, i. 77  
 limbeck, iv. 108  
 limbo, viii. 186  
 limbo patrum, vi. 380  
 limbs, vi. 380  
 lime, i. 87, 168, 217; vi. 101  
 limed, ii. 62, 249; ix. 216  
 limit, ii. 151; iii. 482; vi. 246  
 limited, iv. 120; vii. 81  
 limits, iv. 406  
 Lincolnshire bagpipe, iv. 412  
 line, v. 173; ix. 227  
 lined, iii. 150  
 link, iii. 394  
 linstock, v. 176  
 liquor, i. 103  
 list, ii. 51, 101; iv. 487; v.  
     253; ix. 241, 380  
 lither, v. 342  
 little, iii. 152; ix. 182  
 livelihood, iii. 213  
 livers, iv. 451  
 livery, iv. 341; viii. 329  
 lives, ii. 180  
 living, viii. 362; ix. 365  
 loach, iv. 429  
 lob, ii. 320  
 lockram, vii. 145  
 lode-stars, ii. 213  
 lodged, iv. 150  
 loffe, ii. 322  
 loggats, ix. 259  
 longing, i. 152  
 longly, iii. 348  
 long-tail, i. 266  
 loofed, vii. 417  
 look, vi. 517  
 loon, iv. 174  
 loose, ii. 487  
 lop, vi. 285  
 lots, vii. 222  
 lottery, vii. 378  
 love, iii. 232  
 lover, iii. 167; vii. 299  
 loves, i. 239; ii. 336  
 lown, ix. 335  
 lowt, vii. 182  
 lowted, v. 333  
 lozel, iii. 473  
 lubbar, v. 28  
 lullaby, viii. 169  
 lunes, i. 277; iii. 467; ix. 214  
 lurched, vii. 153  
 lure, iii. 397  
 lush, i. 36; ii. 329  
 lustick, iii. 246  
 luxurious, v. 224; viii. 216  
 luxuriously, vii. 428  
 luxury, v. 188  
 lym, viii. 417



## M

- Mace**, vii. 322  
**machination**, viii. 455  
**mad**, v. 356  
**made**, i. 19, 235; iii. 492; iv. 32; vi. 322; viii. 449  
**made-up**, vii. 89  
**magnificent**, ii. 425  
**magnifico**, ix. 299  
**magot-pie**, iv. 153  
**Maid Marian**, iv. 481  
**mail**, ii. 422  
**mailed**, v. 413; vii. 119  
**maimed rites**, ix. 263  
**maims**, vii. 204  
**main**, vii. 273  
**main-course**, i. 6  
**main-top**, viii. 97  
**make**, i. 50; iii. 104, 178, 183; vi. 246; vii. 54; ix. 141  
**makes**, viii. 17  
**makest**, vi. 146  
**making**, viii. 306  
**male**, vi. 113  
**malkin**, vii. 145; viii. 305  
**mall**, ii. 13  
**mallecho**, ix. 204  
**mammering**, ix. 351  
**mammets**, iv. 440  
**mammocked**, vii. 120  
**man**, iii. 397  
**manacle**, viii. 10  
**manage**, iv. 194  
**mandragora**, vii. 362; ix. 363  
**mandrake**, v. 15, 441  
**mangling**, v. 256  
**mankind**, iii. 472  
**manned**, v. 15  
**manner**, ii. 400; iii. 528; iv. 451  
**marble**, iii. 544  
**marches**, v. 147  
**marchpane**, ix. 29  
**margent**, ix. 274  
**margin**, ix. 23  
**mark**, iii. 501  
**matrows**, vii. 72  
**marry-trap**, i. 211  
**marshal**, ii. 335  
**Martlemas**, v. 37  
**mary-buds**, viii. 39  
**mashed Neptune**, viii. 291  
**mass**, ix. 90  
**match**, iv. 413; vi. 486; viii. 78  
**mated**, iv. 35, 172  
**material**, iii. 163; viii. 429  
**mates**, v. 425  
**mazes**, ii. 324  
**meacock**, iii. 374  
**mealed**, ii. 169  
**mean**, i. 123; ii. 472; iii. 498; vii. 393; viii. 425  
**means**, i. 197; vi. 246  
**measure**, i. 196; ii. 466; v. 248; vi. 419; vii. 153  
**meazles**, vii. 169  
**medal**, iii. 452  
**meddle**, i. 9  
**medicin**, iv. 173  
**medicine**, iii. 237  
**meed**, i. 192, 242; vii. 17; ix. 273  
**meeds**, vi. 28  
**meest**, i. 83; ii. 110  
**meiny**, viii. 389  
**melancholy**, vi. 248  
**memorized**, vi. 333  
**memory**, iii. 128; vii. 203, 219; viii. 449  
**mend**, iv. 51  
**mends**, vi. 399  
**men of hair**, iii. 513  
**Mephostophilus**, i. 210  
**mercantante**, iii. 400  
**merchant**, ix. 52  
**mercy**, vii. 54  
**mere**, ii. 190; iii. 273; vi. 343; viii. 132, 303; ix. 331  
**mered**, vii. 424  
**merely**, vii. 178, 412; ix. 140  
**merits**, vii. 471

- mermaid, iv. 35  
 me scemeth, v. 417  
 meshed, viii. 192  
 messes, iii. 449  
 metaphysical iv. 99  
 meteor, vi. 380  
 mete-yard, iii. 408  
 mewed, vi. 130; ix. 78  
 mewly, i. 7  
 micher, iv. 455  
 miching, ix. 204  
 middle-earth, . 302  
 mills, vii. 137  
 mince, i. 279  
 mind, v. 222  
 minding, v. 204  
 mineral, ix. 229  
 minnow, ii. 402; vii. 169  
 minstrelsy, ii. 399  
 minute-jacks, vii. 60  
 misconceived, v. 358  
 miscreate, v. 144  
 misdoubt, vi. 189  
 miser, v. 357  
 misery, vii. 154  
 misprizing, ii. 248, 347.  
 miss, i. 23  
 missingly, iii. 495  
 missions, vi. 467  
 missives, iv. 98  
 mistaken, vi. 279  
 mistempered, ix. 10  
 misthink, vi. 47  
 mistress, vi. 455  
 mobled, ix. 187  
 mock, ix. 355  
 mode, v. 103  
 model, vi. 359, ix. 269  
 modern, iii. 143, 245; iv. 244;  
     vii. 471; ix. 70  
 modesty, iii. 334  
 module, iii. 292; iv. 288  
 moe, i. 49  
 moiety, iv. 464; viii. 339  
 moist star, ix. 133  
 mollification, ii. 22  
 mome, iv. 29  
 moment, vii. 352  
 momentary, ii. 312  
 monarcho, ii. 430  
 montanto, ii. 210  
 month's mind, i.  
 Montjoy, v. 195  
 mood, i. 171; ix. 342  
 moody, vii. 381  
 Mooncalf, i. 53  
 moonish, iii. 161  
 mope, ix. 222  
 mops, i. 72  
 moral, ii. 262; iii. 413; v. 254  
 more, iv. 495  
 more above, ix. 173  
 more and less, v. 14  
 morisco, v. 429  
 morning, iv. 73  
 morris, ii. 324  
 morris pike, iv. 50  
 mort, iii. 445  
 mortal, iii. 133, 214; iv. 100;  
     v. 439; vii. 152; viii. 307,  
     319; ix. 322  
 mortal-staring, vi. 249  
 mortified, iv. 172  
 most, v. 326; vii. 441  
 mother, viii. 390  
 motion, i. 132; iii. 500; vi.  
     278; vii. 150, 289, 379;  
     viii. 324; ix. 221, 302  
 motive, iii. 300; vi. 487  
 mould, v. 179  
 mould-warp, iv. 466  
 mountaineers, i. 69  
 mouse, ii. 460; ix. 226  
 moused, ii. 382  
 mouse-hunt ix. 98  
 mowes, i. 72  
 moys, v. 224  
 much, iii. 181; v. 48, 331  
 muck-water, i. 248  
 muffler, i. 279  
 mulled, vii. 208  
 multiplied, vii. 171  
 multiplying, vii. 62  
 multiplying medicine, iii. 313  
 multitudinous, iv. 117  
 mum, i. 297

mummy, ix. 371  
mundane, viii. 288  
murdering piece, ix. 241  
mure, v. 95  
murky, iv. 170  
murrain, ii. 324

muscadell, iii. 387  
muse, i. 69; iii. 261; iv. 237  
muss, vii. 427  
mutines, iv. 218; ix. 267  
mutton-laced, i. 117  
mysteries, vi. 286

## N

Nags, v. 50  
nail, v. 118  
napkin, iii. 184; vi. 23  
napless, vii. 146  
native, v. 210; vii. 171, 269  
nativity, iv. 74  
nature, i. 92; iii. 263; iv. 6;  
vii. 67  
nave, v. 52  
naught, iii. 104  
nayword, i. 239; ii. 35  
near, v. 107  
neat, viii. 381  
neb, iii. 447  
needless, iii. 126  
neelds, ii. 351; iv. 279; viii.  
316  
ne'erlegged, iii. 383  
neif, ii. 363; v. 49  
Neoptolemus, vi. 490  
nephews, ix. 296  
Neptune, viii. 291  
nether-stocks, iv. 445; viii. 388  
newness, iv. 283  
news, vii. 344  
newts, ii. 330  
next, iii. 226, 492  
nice, iii. 174; v. 12, 79; vii.  
312, 431; ix. 64, 109

nicely, v. 143  
Nicholas, St. i. 163  
nick, i. 175  
nicked, vii. 424  
nicks, iv. 66  
nighted, viii. 436  
night-rule, ii. 344  
nill, viii. 281  
nobility, ix. 139  
nobless, iv. 370  
nobody, i. 66  
noddy, i. 117; vi. 407  
noise, iv. 153  
nomination, vi. 192  
nonce, iv. 415  
nook shotten, v. 188  
no poynt, ii. 416  
northern man, ii. 486  
note, i. 44; viii. 437  
not ever, vi. 366  
nothing, viii. 80  
novice, vi. 161  
novum, ii. 480  
nourish, v. 266  
nowl, ii. 344  
nurture, i. 84; iii. 141  
nuthook, i. 211; v. 119

## O

O, v. 137  
objected, v. 299  
objects, vii. 70  
obligations, v. 456  
obsequious, i. 276; vi. 48; ix.  
138  
obsequiously, vi. 131  
observance, iii. 193  
observed, v. 92

observing, vi. 443  
obstacle, v. 357  
occupation, vii. 213, 258  
occurents, ix. 282  
odd-even, ix. 296  
ods pittikins, viii. 96  
oeiliads, viii. 436  
o'erblows, v. 184  
o'er-count, vii. 388

- o'er died, iii. 445  
 o'er dusted, vi. 466  
 o'erleavens, ix. 152  
 o'erlooked, i. 302  
 o'erparted, ii. 482  
 o'er-raught, iv. 14 ; ix. 191  
 o'er-wrested, vi. 417  
 oes, ii. 351  
 of, i. 100, 129 ; ii. 90 ; vi. 437 ;  
     vii. 375  
 off, vii. 151  
 offering, iv. 487  
 office, ii. 197  
 offices, iv. 111 ; viii. 36 ; ix. 331  
 oho, i. 25  
 old, iv. 118  
 old woe, viii. 307  
 once, i. 268 ; ii. 219 ; vi. 284 ;  
     vii. 319, 466  
 once this, iv. 32  
 one, i. 162  
 oneyers, iv. 431  
 onion-ey'd, vii. 434  
 opal, ii. 39  
 open, vi. 346  
 operant, ix. 205  
 opinion, ii. 454 ; iv. 467 ; vi.  
     425 ; vii. 272  
 opposed, iv. 501  
 opposite, ii. 46, 57 ; vii. 149  
 opposites, v. 490  
 oppositions, viii. 82  
 oppression, vii. 441  
 or, ix. 268  
 orbs, ii. 320 ; viii. 253  
 orchard, ix. 157  
 order, ii. 124 ; iii. 356 ; iv. 65  
 orderly, viii. 40  
 ordinance, vii. 180  
 ordinaries, iii. 253  
 orgulous, vi. 394  
 orisons, viii. 16  
 orphan-heirs, i. 300  
 osprey, vii. 217  
 ostent, iii. 32 ; vii. 410  
 ostentation, v. 36  
 overcome, iv. 142  
 overlust, v. 203  
 overta'en, vii. 133  
 overtopping, i. 12  
 overture, viii. 423  
 ounce, ii. 331  
 ouphes, i. 287  
 ousel-cock, ii. 341  
 out, i. 10, 151 ; vii. 206  
 out-herods, ix. 198  
 out-look, iv. 277  
 out-vied, iii. 376  
 outward, iii. 263  
 owe, vii. 185 ; ix. 294  
 owed, vii. 12  
 owes, i. 29 ; ii. 116 ; viii. 247  
 ox-lips, ii. 329

## P

- Pace, vi. 416  
 pack, v. 454 ; viii. 204  
 pack'd, ii. 290  
 packing, iii. 421 ; viii. 401  
 pagan, v. 39  
 pageant, i. 81 ; vi. 224  
 paid, i. 291 ; viii. 94, 117  
 pain, ii. 139 ; vi. 462  
 pains, vi. 145  
 painted, viii. 173  
 painting, viii. 63  
 palabras, ii. 264  
 pale, iii. 496 ; vi. 24  
 pall, iv. 100  
     VOL. ix.  
 pall'd, vii. 396  
 palmers, iii. 272  
 palmy, ix. 132  
 palter, iv. 183 ; vi. 447, 502  
 paltering, vii. 168  
 pantaloons, iii. 378  
 papers, vi. 274 ; vii. 27  
 paragon, viii. 296  
 parallel, vi. 418 ; ix. 344  
 parcel, vii. 425, 470  
 parcel-gilt, v. 30  
 pardon, i. 169  
 Paris-garden, vi. 378  
 parish-top, ii. 10

## L L

- paritor, ii. 426  
 parlous, ii. 337 ; vi. 176  
 Parolles, iii. 210, 278  
 part, iv. 31  
 partake, iii. 552 ; v. 300  
 parted, vi. 370, 464  
 participate, vii. 108  
 particular, vii. 71  
 particularly, vii. 7  
 partizan, vii. 393  
 parts, v. 489  
 pash, iii. 444 ; vi. 445  
 pashed, vi. 515  
 pass, ii. 118 ; iii. 412 ; v. 457 ;  
     viii. 420, 439  
 passages, ix. 252, 403  
 passed, i. 215 ; vi. 406  
 passes, i. 281 ; ii. 197 ; vii. 5  
 passing, vi. 102  
 passion, vii. 41, 53, 252  
 passionate, iv. 224  
 passioning, i. 186  
 passy-measure, ii. 89  
 paste, viii. 392  
 past-proportion, vi. 432  
 pastry, ix. 97  
 patch, ii. 434 ; iii. 37 ; iv. 29  
 patched fool, ii. 369  
 patches, ii. 344  
 path, vii. 269  
 pathological, iii. 179  
 patient, viii. 149  
 patines, iii. 88  
 pattern, vi. 133  
 pavin, ii. 89  
 paucas palabras, iii. 331  
 pause, iv. 16  
 pay, iv. 53 ; v. 211  
 pays, ii. 69  
 pear, ix. 243  
 pearl, iv. 185  
 peat, iii. 345  
 pedascule, iii. 379  
 peer, ix. 335  
 peer out, i. 277  
 peevish, i. 190 ; iii. 172 ; iv. 43 ;  
     v. 201 ; viii. 28  
 peize, iii. 53 ; vi. 249  
 pelican, viii. 409  
 pelting, ii. 132, 323 ; vi. 495 ;  
     viii. 387  
 pendragon, v. 317  
 pennons, v. 190  
 pensioners, i. 238  
 Pentapolis, viii. 240  
 Penthesilea, ii. 36  
 peonied, i. 77  
 perch, viii. 280  
 perdu, viii. 450  
 perdurable, v. 226  
 perdurably, ii. 148  
 perdy, iv. 56 ; ix. 210  
 perfect, iii. 488 ; iv. 158 ; vii.  
     20 ; viii. 55, 88  
 perfection, vii. 60  
 periapts, v. 349  
 period, i. 284  
 perish, v. 433  
 periwig, i. 187  
 perspective, ii. 89  
 perspectives, iv. 321  
 pervert, viii. 51  
 pewfellow, vi. 223  
 pheer, viii. 242  
 pheese, iii. 331 ; vi. 445  
 Philip, iv. 203  
 Phrynia, vii. 4  
 physick, viii. 57  
 physicks, iii. 438  
 pia mater, ii. 19 ; vi. 428  
 pick, vi. 382 ; vii. 211  
 pickaxes, viii. 99  
 picked, ii. 454 ; iv. 201 ; ix.  
     261  
 pickers, ix. 211  
 picking, v. 89  
 pickt-hatch, i. 236  
 piece, vii. 468 ; viii. 156  
 pieled, v. 277  
 pight, vi. 523 ; viii. 377  
 pilcher, ix. 61  
 piled, ii. 475 ; iii. 456 ; v. 281  
 pillars, vi. 316  
 pill'd, vi. 146  
 pin, iii. 451 ; viii. 411 ; ix. 47  
 pinched, iii. 460

- pink, vii. 397  
 pinnace, i. 220 ; v. 450  
 pioneers, ix. 363  
 pissing-while, i. 181  
 pitch, vi. 306  
 pitying, vii. 128  
 pix, v. 192  
 place, vi. 79  
 plackets, ii. 426  
 plagued, vi. 147  
 plain, i. 102  
 plainly, vii. 226  
 plain-song, ii. 341  
 plaited, viii. 350  
 planced, ii. 164  
 Plantagenet, iv. 199  
 plantain, ix. 18  
 plants, vii. 392  
 plates, vii. 467  
 platforms, v. 291  
 plausible, ix. 152  
 play, i. 5 ; vii. 477  
 play'd, viii. 159  
 pleached, ii. 220 ; vii. 453  
 plot, v. 407 vii. 184 ; ix. 236  
 plow, v. 181  
 pluck off, vi. 312  
 plummet, i. 305  
 point, i. 17 ; ii. 16, 335 ; viii. 372  
 point-device, ii. 47, 455  
 points, iii. 382 ; iv. 448 ; v. 9 ; vii. 430  
 poised, vi. 474  
 poize, viii. 379 ; ix. 352  
 Polack, ix. 130  
 pole, vii. 459  
 pole-clipt, i. 78  
 polled, vii. 208  
 pomander, iii. 524  
 pomewater, ii. 433  
 Poor John, ix. 8  
 popinjay, iv. 419  
 popularity, v. 141  
 porcupine, iv. 89  
 porpus, viii. 262  
 porringer, vi. 380  
 port, iii. 11 ; vi. 483  
 portable, iv. 162  
 portage, viii. 283  
 portance, vii. 164 ; ix. 309  
 ports, v. 97  
 possess, ii. 35 ; vi. 483  
 possessed, ii. 165 ; iii. 19 ; iv. 323 ; vii. 142  
 possession, iv. 473  
 post, iv. 12  
 potch, vii. 136  
 potents, iv. 217  
 pouncet-box, iv. 418  
 power, vi. 417 ; vii. 414  
 pox, ii. 461  
 practice, ii. 188 ; vi. 279 ; vii. 370 ; viii. 392 ; ix. 253, 420  
 practisants, v. 314  
 præmunire, vi. 344  
 prank, vii. 166  
 pranked, iii. 501  
 pranks, ii. 40  
 pray in aid, vii. 464  
 precedence, vii. 334  
 precedent, iv. 273 ; vi. 200  
 precepts, v. 105 ; vii. 75  
 precision, i. 227  
 preeches, i. 278  
 prefer, vii. 337 , ix. 254, 330  
 pregnancy, v. 20  
 pregnant, ii. 29, 52 ; viii. 97, 294 ; ix. 177, 200  
 premised, v. 487  
 prenominate, ix. 165  
 pre-ordination, vii. 288  
 presence, iii. 54 ; iv. 198, 315 ; vi. 325 ; viii. 820 ; ix. 113  
 preserved, ii. 132  
 pressure, ix. 199  
 prest, iii. 12 ; viii. 294  
 pretence, i. 154 ; iii. 479 ; iv. 124 ; viii. 355  
 pretend, iv. 126 ; v. 324, 326  
 pretended, i. 149  
 prevent, v. 32  
 prevented, v. 327  
 pricks, i. 49 ; vi. 424 ; viii. 387  
 pride, v. 315  
 prig, iii. 500

- prime, iii. 242 ; ix. 365  
 primer, vi. 284  
 primero, i. 292 ; vi. 361  
 principality, i. 143  
 principals, viii. 286  
 princox, ix. 32  
 print, i. 134 ; ii. 425  
 prize, vi. 22  
 probal, ix. 344  
 probation, iv. 130  
 process, vii. 344  
 procures, ix. 82  
 prodigious, ii. 387 ; iv. 228 ;  
     vii. 263  
 prodigiously, iv. 229  
 proface, v. 114  
 profane, v. 123 ; ix. 325  
 profession, iii. 238  
 profited, iv. 467  
 prognostication, iii. 530  
 progress, ix. 232  
 project, vii. 469  
 prompture, ii. 143  
 prone, ii. 110 ; viii. 118  
 proof, v. 89 ; vii. 267  
 propagate, vii. 8  
 proper, i. 170 ; ii. 243 ; viii.  
     340  
 proper-false, ii. 29  
 properly, vii. 224  
 propertied, ii. 79  
 properties, i. 288  
 property, iii. 242 ; vii. 309  
 propose, v. 111  
 proposing, ii. 246  
 proportions, ii. 192  
 propriety, ii. 87 ; ix. 338  
 prorogue, vii. 367 ; viii. 318  
 provand, vii. 147  
 provencial, ix. 209  
 provincial, ii. 195  
 provost, ii. 117  
 prune, iv. 408  
 pruning, ii. 446  
 Puck, ii. 321  
 pugging, iii. 497  
 pulling, i. 130  
 pun, vi. 427  
 purchase, iv. 432  
 purchased, v. 102 ; vii. 359  
 purlieus, iii. 184  
 pursued, vii. 479  
 pursuivants, v. 301  
 put, ii. 101  
 put on, vii. 275 ; viii. 105 ; ix.  
     284  
 puts forth, vii. 115  
 putter-on, iii. 464  
 putter-out, i. 70  
 putting on, ii. 171 ; vii. 165  
 puttock, viii. 11  
 puzzel, v. 284  
 pyramises, vii. 394

## Q

- Quail, iii. 128 ; iv. 486 ; vii.  
     380 ; viii. 125  
 quailing, vi. 42  
 quaint, i. 295 ; v. 440  
 quaked, vii. 132  
 qualified, ix. 333  
 qualify, ii. 169  
 quality, i. 17, 172 ; iv. 494 ;  
     ix. 181, 314  
 quarrel, iv. 84 ; 311  
 quarry, iv. 167 ; vii. 211 ; ix.  
     283  
 quart d'ecu, iii. 298  
 quarter, iv. 284 ; vii. 98 ; ix.  
     338  
 quartered, viii. 103  
 quat, ix. 402  
 queasy, ii. 235 ; viii. 375  
 quell, ii. 382 ; iv. 108  
 quenck, viii. 24  
 quern, ii. 321  
 quest, vi. 159 ; viii. 347  
 question, ii. 77, 139 ; vi. 472 ;  
     vii. 37 ; viii. 458 ; ix. 15,  
     132, 305  
 questionable, ix. 153

- questrists, viii. 420  
 quests, ii. 166; ix. 301  
 quick, v. 162; vii. 67, 473  
 quicken, iii. 344; vii. 458; viii. 421  
 quiddits, ix. 259  
 quietus, ix. 194  
 quill, v. 385  
 quillets, ii. 450; vii. 71; ix. 259  
 quintain, iii. 118  
 quips, i. 173  
 quired, vii. 184  
 quit, iv. 379; v. 182; vii. 430; ix. 270  
 quittance, v. 11; vii. 17  
 quiver, v. 70  
 quote, i. 138; viii. 196; ix. 25  
 quoted, iii. 317; iv. 262; vi. 493; ix. 167

## R

- Rabats, ii. 261  
 rabbet-sucker, iv. 456  
 rabble, i. 76  
 race, i. 26; vii. 355  
 rack, i. 82; ii. 273; vii. 450  
 racked, vii. 219  
 racking, vi. 28  
 rag, i. 283  
 ragged, iii. 135  
 rake, vii. 106  
 rampallian, v. 29  
 rams, vi. 352  
 rank, iii. 150; vi. 288, 419; vii. 292; ix. 330  
 ranked, vii. 8  
 ransom, vi. 256  
 rapt, iv. 90  
 rapture, vii. 145  
 rarely, vii. 83, 470  
 rascal, iii. 164; v. 44  
 rascal-like, v. 333  
 rash, iv. 473; v. 93; vi. 477; ix. 371  
 rated, iii. 348; iv. 282, 498  
 ravin, ii. 108; iii. 268  
 ravined, iv. 149  
 raught, ii. 434  
 raw, iii. 149; viii. 300  
 rawly, v. 209  
 rawness, iv. 160  
 rayed, iii. 390  
 read, ix. 147  
 rear-mice, ii. 330  
 rear'd arm, vii. 467  
 reason, ii. 454; iv. 266; vi. 159; vii. 211, 232; ix. 139  
 reasoned, iii. 43  
 rebeck, ix. 104  
 receipt, iv. 108  
 receiving, ii. 53  
 recheat, ii. 216  
 recking, i. 180  
 reckless, i. 190  
 recks, iii. 134; ix. 147  
 recollected, ii. 37  
 record, i. 91  
 recorder, ii. 376; ix. 212  
 records, viii. 293  
 recovery, i. 284  
 recure, vi. 205  
 red, i. 26  
 red-lattice, i. 236; v. 37  
 reduce, vi. 261  
 reechy, ii. 258; vii. 145; ix. 226  
 refelled, ii. 188  
 refer, ii. 152  
 reference, ix. 313  
 reflex, ix. 80  
 regard, v. 338; vi. 469  
 regiment, vii. 412  
 regreets, iii. 47; iv. 235  
 reguerdon, v. 312, 323  
 rein, vi. 418  
 relation, vi. 468  
 relative, ix. 190  
 relics, vii. 282  
 remembered, iii. 145; vi. 176  
 remembrance, v. 42, 112  
 remembrances, iii. 229  
 remorse, i. 92; ii. 128; ix. 364  
 remorseful, i. 178



- remotion, vii. 78; viii. 392  
 removed, ii. 111; iii. 159; iv. 486; ix. 154  
 render, iii. 185; vii. 91; viii. 102  
 reneges, vii. 344  
 repairing, v. 490  
 repairs, iii. 222  
 repeals, ix. 344  
 report, viii. 48  
 reports, vii. 371  
 reproof, iv. 416  
 repugn, v. 328  
 reputing, v. 418  
 requiem, ix. 264  
 resist, viii. 270  
 resolve, v. 273; ix. 140  
 resolved, ii. 161; v. 323; viii. 275  
 respect, iii. 90; iv. 262, 275; vi. 432; vii. 75; ix. 193  
 respective, i. 187; iv. 201; ix. 63  
 respectively, vii. 40  
 respects, viii. 349  
 respite, vi. 243  
 rest, iv. 50  
 retail, vi. 233  
 retailed, vi. 181  
 retired, iv. 333  
 return, viii. 267  
 returned, vii. 45  
 reverbs, viii. 345  
 reverence, iii. 105; viii. 94  
 revolt, i. 221; viii. 102  
 revolution, vii. 351  
 rheumatic, ii. 324; v. 45, 169  
 Rhodope, v. 287  
 rib, iii. 41  
 ribald-rid, vii. 417  
 richest, iii. 310  
 rid, i. 26  
 rift, iii. 534  
 riggish, vii. 378  
 right, v. 116, 431  
 right-drawn, iv. 297  
 rigol, v. 97  
 ring, vi. 374; viii. 176  
 ringed about, v. 336  
 ripe, ii. 335; iii. 19  
 ripeness, viii. 456  
 rivage, v. 176  
 rivalry, vii. 407  
 rivals, ix. 129  
 rive, v. 332  
 Rivo, iv. 445  
 road, i. 144  
 roam, v. 307  
 rogues, iii. 348  
 romage, ix. 132  
 ronyon, i. 283; iv. 87  
 rood, v. 61  
 rooked, vi. 114  
 rooting, vi. 149  
 ropery, ix. 52  
 rope-tricks, iii. 356  
 rose, vi. 287  
 rosemary, viii. 314; ix. 245  
 rough, v. 352  
 round, iv. 17; v. 211; ix. 197  
 rounded, iv. 225  
 roundel, ii. 330  
 rounding, iii. 449  
 roundure, iv. 24  
 rouse, ix. 140, 151, 334  
 royal, iv. 450  
 royal faith, v. 79  
 royalize, 145  
 royalty, iv. 129  
 roynish, iii. 128  
 ruddock, viii. 93  
 ruff, iii. 264  
 ruffle, viii. 156  
 ruffling, iii. 405  
 ruin, vi. 345  
 rule, ii. 34  
 rump-fed, iv. 87  
 run counter, iv. 46  
 rushes, v. 121; viii. 36; ix. 25  
 Ruth, vii. 211

## S

- Sackerson, i. 215  
 sacred, vi. 490; viii. 166  
 sacrificial, vii. 9  
 sacring, vi. 342  
 sad, i. 125; ii. 222  
 sadly, ii. 244; v. 113  
 sadness, vi. 60; ix. 14  
 safe, vii. 356  
 safe-guard, vii. 166  
 saffron, iii. 301  
 sagg, iv. 174  
 Sagittary, ix. 308  
 Saint Martin, v. 274  
 Saint Nicholas, iv. 430  
 Saint Philip, v. 275  
 sale-work, iii. 170  
 sallet, v. 474  
 salt, viii. 445  
 saltiers, iii. 513  
 Samingo, v. 116  
 sanctifies, vii. 207  
 sanded, ii. 366  
 satisfaction, iii. 440  
 satisfy, ii. 150  
 savage, v. 188  
 savageness, ix. 165  
 saucy, iii. 100  
 saw, ii. 493  
 say, v. 465; viii. 463  
 saying, vii. 86  
 scaffoldage, vi. 417  
 scald, vii. 473  
 scale, vii. 108  
 scaled, ii. 153; vi. 515  
 scaling, vii. 164  
 scall, i. 253  
 scramble, iv. 270  
 scrambling, ii. 283  
 scandal, ix. 164  
 scanned, iv. 144; ix. 217  
 scant, viii. 393  
 scantling, vi. 424  
 scapes, ii. 166  
 scared, vii. 204  
 scarfed, iii. 38  
 cath, iv. 207; viii. 213; ix. 32  
 scatbe, v. 414  
 scathful, ii. 83  
 sconce, iv. 13; v. 193; ix. 259  
 scope, vii. 8  
 scored, ix. 382  
 scotched, iv. 134  
 scrimers, ix. 252  
 scrip, ii. 316  
 scroyles, iv. 218  
 skulls, vi. 515  
 scutched, v. 71  
 scutcheon, iv. 503  
 seal, vii. 159, 452; ix. 214  
 sealed, v. 100  
 seam, vi. 445  
 sea-mells, i. 55  
 sear, iii. 461; iv. 175; viii. 10  
 season, ix. 142, 148  
 seasoned, vii. 189  
 seat, v. 152  
 seated, iv. 94  
 second, v. 111  
 seconds, vii. 131  
 sect, ix. 317  
 secure, ix. 380  
 securely, iv. 329  
 security, ii. 161  
 seel, vii. 470; ix. 357  
 seeling, iv. 135  
 seeming, i. 254; ii. 142; iii. 199; viii. 347  
 seen, iii. 357  
 seld-shown, vii. 145  
 self-bounty, ix. 357  
 self-charity, ix. 339  
 self-exhibition, viii. 31  
 self-figured, viii. 43  
 semblably, iv. 508  
 semblance, vii. 269  
 seniory, vi. 222  
 sennet, vi. 315; vii. 251  
 senoy, iii. 220  
 sense, i. 37; vi. 399; viii. 320; ix. 221, 402  
 sensible, vii. 124  
 septentrion, vi. 25

- sequence, vii. 93  
 sequestration, ix. 317  
 sere, iv. 45  
 serge, v. 465  
 sergeant, ix. 280  
 serpentine, vi. 439  
 serpigo, ii. 144  
 servant, i. 132  
 serve, iii. 235; ix. 16  
 serves, vi. 228  
 service, vi. 99  
 servitor, vi. 221  
 set, i. 132; ii. 460; ix. 233  
 Setebos, i. 26  
 set off, iv. 502  
 several, ii. 418  
 sewer, iv. 104  
 shaft, i. 266  
 shame, vi. 511; viii. 108  
 shard-born, iv. 135  
 sharded, viii. 60  
 shards, vii. 401; ix. 264  
 sharked, ix. 131  
 sheen, ii. 321; ix. 205  
 sheer, iv. 389  
 shent, i. 222; ii. 79; vi. 441;  
     vii. 225; ix. 214  
 sheriff's post, ii. 20  
 shipman's card, iv. 88  
 ship-tire, i. 258  
 shive, viii. 165  
 shot, vi. 380  
 shove-groat shilling, v. 50  
 shovel-boards, i. 210  
 shoughs, iv. 131  
 shouldered, vi. 105  
 shouting, vii. 113  
 show, vii. 425  
 shrew, iii. 392  
 shrewd, iii. 355  
 shrift, ix. 93  
 thrive, iv. 26  
 shriving, vi. 190; ix. 269  
 shut up, iv. 111  
 shy, ii. 186  
 side-sleeves, ii. 260  
 siege, i. 53; ii. 170; ix. 251, 300  
 sieve, vi. 433  
 sight-less, iv. 227  
 sights, v. 77  
 sign, vi. 319; viii. 14  
 signs, vii. 436  
 silenced, vi. 275  
 silly, viii. 111  
 silly cheat, iii. 497  
 silly sooth, ii. 38  
 silver, viii. 329  
 sincere, vi. 278  
 sinew, iv. 498  
 single, v. 21; vi. 372  
 single-soled, ix. 49  
 single-state, iv. 94  
 singularity, vii. 116  
 sink-a pace, ii. 13  
 sir, i. 205; iii. 164  
 Sir John, v. 384  
 Sir Nob, iv. 199  
 sirrah, viii. 194  
 sith, i. 241; ii. 112; vi. 9  
 sithence, iii. 228  
 sit out, ii. 397  
 sizes, viii. 395  
 skains-mates, ix. 52  
 skills, v. 426  
 skirr, iv. 176  
 Skogan's head, v. 62  
 slack, i. 269  
 slave, viii. 427  
 sleave, iv. 116  
 sledded, ix. 130  
 sleeve, vi. 503  
 sleeve-hand, iii. 509  
 sleided, viii. 293  
 slieve, vi. 497  
 slights, iv. 146  
 slips, v. 178; vii. 296; ix. 48  
 slivered, iv. 149  
 slops, ii. 251, 441; ix. 48  
 slough, v. 205  
 slower, vi. 135  
 slubber, iii. 44; ix. 312  
 smeared, v. 342  
 smilingly, vii. 214  
 smirched, ii. 258  
 smooth, viii. 252; ix. 70  
 snare, vii. 443

- sneak, v. 43  
 sneap, v. 31  
 sneaping, ii. 396; iii. 439  
 sneck, ii. 23  
 snuff, ii. 381; iv. 418; viii. 401  
 soil, v. 103  
 sold, iv. 139  
 soldier, viii. 70  
 solely, iii. 470  
 solidares, vii. 41  
 solicited, ix. 282  
 soliciting, iv. 93  
 solicits, viii. 40  
 sometimes, iv. 395  
 so much, vii. 35  
 sooth, ii. 38; iii. 508; iv. 358;  
     vi. 71; viii. 251  
 sorriest, iv. 134  
 sorry, iv. 64  
 sort, i. 169; ii. 345, 357; iv.  
     374; v. 233; 403; vi. 115,  
     425; ix. 132  
 sort and suit, ii. 181  
 sorted, iii. 404  
 sorts, iii. 118; v. 149, 207; vi.  
     34, 400  
 sot, i. 253  
 souced gurnet, iv. 490  
 soud, iii. 394  
 soul-fearing, iv. 218  
 souls, ii. 349  
 sound, i. 287; iv. 256  
 sovereignty, ix. 154  
 sowle, vii. 208  
 sowter, ii. 45  
 spanned, vi. 280  
 specialty, vi. 414  
 sped, iii. 430  
 speed, iii. 484  
 spells, vi. 286  
 sperr, vi. 394  
 spirit, v. 11; vi. 399  
 spleen, iii. 381; iv. 221  
 spleens, ii. 131; vi. 437  
 spoils, vi. 487  
 spoons, vi. 377  
 sopt, iv. 274; vii. 119  
 spotted, ii. 310  
 sprag, i. 276  
 spread, ii. 317  
 sprighted, viii. 44  
 sprights, iv. 154  
 springhalt, vi. 290  
 springing, vi. 161  
 spritely, viii. 135  
 spurs, iii. 292; viii. 85  
 spy o' the time, iv. 132  
 square, ii. 321; iii. 509; vii.  
     97, 368, 376, 425; viii. 342  
 squarer, ii. 211  
 squash, ii. 343; iii. 446  
 squiny, viii. 443  
 squire, ii. 477; iii. 514; iv. 433  
 stag'd, vii. 425  
 staggers, iii. 268; viii. 128  
 stains, vii. 282  
 stake, vii. 310  
 stale, i. 84; iv. 18; vi. 74; vii. 253  
 stalk, ii. 240  
 stamped, vii. 222  
 stand, iii. 356  
 stand off, v. 164  
 standing bowls, vi. 382; viii. 272  
 stands, vi. 216; ix. 77  
 stands upon, iv. 342  
 stannyl, ii. 45  
 star, ix. 152  
 stark, viii. 92  
 starkly, ii. 169  
 starred, iii. 282  
 starts, v. 256  
 starving, iv. 501  
 state, i. 143; ii. 43, 446; iv.  
     138; v. 112, 113; vii. 234  
 states, viii. 65  
 station, vii. 404; ix. 221  
 statist, viii. 45; ix. 268  
 statue, i. 187  
 statute-cap, ii. 470  
 staves, v. 77; vi. 248  
 stay, iv. 221  
 stays, iii. 103  
 stead, viii. 280  
 steed, vii. 132  
 sternage, v. 176  
 sticking-place, iv. 108

- stickler, vi. 521  
 stigmatical, iv. 45  
 stigmārick, v. 485  
 stile, i. 224  
 still, vi. 230; vii. 457; viii. 193  
 still-piecing, iii. 268  
 still-vexed, i. 19  
 stilly, v. 203  
 stint, vi. 280; viii. 212, 308  
 stinted, ix. 21  
 stints, vi. 489  
 stir, viii. 84  
 stithied, vi. 494  
 stithy, ix. 201  
 stoccata, ix. 61  
 stock, i. 163, 247; viii. 386  
 stomach, i. 15, 122; v. 279;  
     vi. 355; ix. 132  
 stood, vii. 211  
 stoop, ii. 30  
 stoups, ix. 279  
 stover, i. 77  
 strachy, ii. 43  
 strain, ii. 234; v. 172; vi. 423;  
     vii. 231  
 straight, ix. 256  
 strait, iv. 288  
 straited, iii. 514  
 strange, vii. 251; viii. 28, 33  
 strangely, i. 75; iii. 476  
 strangeness, vi. 443  
 stranger, vi. 311  
 strangle, ii. 87  
 stratagem, v. 7; vi. 46  
 strict, vii. 53  
 stride, viii. 61  
 strike, iv. 329; vii. 396  
 strings, vii. 421  
 strive, iii. 230  
 strong, i. 102  
 strongest, viii. 275  
 stuck, ii. 69; ix. 254  
 study, ii. 318  
 stuff, iv. 59; ix. 299  
 stuffed sufficiency, iii. 465  
 submerged, vii. 386  
 subscribe, ii. 139; vi. 489;  
     viii. 352, 422  
 subscription, vii. 403  
 substantial, v. 78  
 subtilities, i. 95  
 subtle, vii. 222  
 success, iii. 455; v. 82  
 successive, viii. 145  
 successively, v. 103  
 sudden, iii. 143; ix. 329  
 suffered, v. 483  
 suggest, i. 148; iii. 303; iv.  
     298; vii. 147; ix. 344  
 suggested us, ii. 488  
 suggestion, i. 46; ii. 398; iii.  
     271; v. 92  
 suit, iii. 139; vii. 30; ix. 27  
 suired, viii. 449  
 suits, iii. 118; iv. 411  
 sullen, ix. 370  
 sum, vii. 344  
 summer-seeding, iv. 162  
 summer-swelling, i. 144  
 summoners, viii. 404  
 sumpter, viii. 396  
 superfluous, iii. 216  
 superstitious, vi. 329  
 suppliance, ix. 145  
 supplied, ix. 378  
 supposed, v. 103  
 supposing, viii. 317  
 sure, i. 188; iii. 168  
 sure-card, v. 64  
 sur-reined, v. 189  
 suspire, iv. 245  
 sustaining, i. 19  
 swaggerer, v. 46  
 swart, iv. 37  
 swarth, ii. 35; viii. 171  
 awashing, iii. 124  
 swath, vi. 515; vii. 75  
 sway, vii. 261  
 sweeting, ix. 50  
 swell, vii. 56  
 swift, ii. 249  
 swinge-bucklers, v. 62  
 Switzers, ix. 241  
 swoop, iv. 168  
 sword and buckler, iv. 425  
 sworder, v. 451  
 sworn-brothers, v. 156  
 syllable, viii. 324

## T

- Tabard, ix. 246  
 table, iii. 30, 215; iv. 222  
 tables, v. 80; ix. 159  
 tabourines, vi. 495; vii. 444  
 tackled-stair ix. 53  
 tag, vii. 76  
 tailor, ii. 322; iii. 405  
 tainting, ix. 329  
 take, iv. 61, 278  
 take in, iii. 523; vii. 117, 182  
 take order, vi. 216; ix. 410  
 take thought, vii. 273  
 taken out, ix. 301  
 taken up, v. 82  
 takes, i. 286; ix. 134  
 takes on, i. 277; vi. 47  
 taking, iii. 253; viii. 409  
 tale, iv. 92  
 tall, i. 234; ii. 10; vi. 158  
 tallow-keech, iv. 448  
 tame, vii. 209  
 tamed, vi. 474  
 tarre, iv. 253; vi. 425; ix. 182  
 tartar, v. 164  
 task, v. 143  
 tasked, iv. 496  
 tassel-gentle, ix. 42  
 Taurus, ii. 14  
 tawdry, iii. 511  
 tawny, v. 277  
 taxation, iii. 112  
 teen, i. 11; ii. 445; vi. 213;  
     ix. 20  
 teeth, vii. 406  
 tell, v. 20  
 telling, v. 99  
 temper i. 68; vii. 254  
 temperance, i. 35  
 tempered, v. 164  
 tempering, v. 90  
 tend, vi. 443; ix. 148  
 tended, vii. 377  
 tender, ix. 149  
 tender-hefted, viii. 394  
 tendering, v. 342  
 tent, vii. 184; ix. 190  
 tercel, vi. 455  
 termagant, vii. 34; ix. 198  
 tested, ii. 132  
 testerned, i. 119  
 tetchy, vi. 227  
 thankful, viii. 329  
 tharborough, ii. 400  
 theme, vii. 370  
 theorick, iii. 293; ix. 292  
 thewes, v. 69; vii. 263; ix.  
     146  
 thill-horse, ii. 38  
 think upon, vii. 162  
 thirdborough, iii. 332  
 thirst, iv. 141  
 thorough, v. 16; viii. 300  
 though, iii. 164  
 thought, iii. 180; iv. 140; vi.  
     201; vii. 441; ix. 245  
 thought-executing, viii. 402  
 thrasonical, ii. 454  
 thread, i. 74; vii. 171  
 three-hooped, v. 455  
 three man, iii. 498; v. 22  
 three pile, iii. 497  
 thrift, viii. 105  
 throes, vii. 416  
 thrum, ii. 382  
 thrum'd, i. 279  
 thunder, viii. 303  
 thunder-stone, vii. 262  
 tib, viii. 315  
 tickle, ii. 110  
 tickle-brain, iv. 454  
 tide, vii. 295  
 tides, iv. 229  
 tight, vii. 437  
 tightly, i. 220  
 till, vii. 367  
 tilly-valley, ii. 33  
 tilth, ii. 115  
 timed, vii. 153  
 time-less, v. 357; viii. 178  
 timely-parted, v. 435  
 time of day, viii. 305  
 time's flies, vii. 60

- tinct, iii. 313 ; vii. 364  
 tinctures, vii. 282  
 tire, vi. 15  
 tired, ii. 428  
 tire-valiant, i. 258  
 tiring, vii. 57  
 tir'st, viii. 67  
 title-leaf, v. 9  
 to, iv. 84, 129 ; ix. 17  
 to bless, viii. 310  
 tods, iii. 498  
 toged, ix. 292  
 tokened, vii. 417  
 toll, iii. 315  
 tomboys, viii. 31  
 tongs, ii. 362  
 tongue, iv. 465  
 took, iv. 197  
 top-gallant, ix. 53  
 to pinch, i. 287  
 topple, vi. 417  
 topple, iv. 151, 462 ; viii. 286  
 touch, i. 89 ; ii. 346 ; iv. 156 ;  
     vi. 214, 227, 478 ; vii. 6, 80,  
     194 ; viii. 11  
 touched, vii. 45  
 touches, iii. 152 ; vii. 353  
 toward, vii. 59 ; ix. 33.  
 toys, iv. 202 ; vi. 127 ; viii. 91 ;  
     ix. 92, 154  
 toze, iii. 528  
 trace, iv. 155 ; vi. 333  
 trade, ii. 149 ; vi. 362 ; ix. 211  
 tradition, iv. 352  
 traditional, vi. 180  
 trail, i. 283 ; ix. 170  
 trains, v. 84  
 traitress, iii. 218  
 tranect, iii. 66  
 translate, vi. 489  
 translated, ii. 313  
 trash, i. 12 ; ix. 330  
 travel, ix. 181  
 traverse, v. 70 ; ix. 318  
 traversed, vii. 96  
 tray-trip, ii. 48  
 treachers, viii. 356  
 trenced, i. 166 ; iv. 139  
 tribulation, vi. 380  
 trick, ii. 203 ; iii. 215 ; iv. 196 ;  
     viii. 442  
 tricked, ix. 186  
 tricking, i. 288  
 tricky, i. 100  
 trigon, v. 52  
 trip, v. 111  
 triple, vii. 344  
 triple-turned, vii. 447  
 triumphs, i. 198 ; v. 364 ; viii.  
     266  
 Trojan, ii. 484 ; iv. 431  
 troll, i. 65  
 trol-my-dames, iii. 499  
 trossers, v. 199  
 trowel, iii. 113  
 trowest, viii. 364  
 true, i. 102, iv. 268 ; vii. 258 ;  
     ix. 64  
 true men, iv. 463  
 truncheon, vi. 510  
 trusted, iv. 93  
 truth, vi. 189  
 tucket, iii. 91  
 tucket sonuance, v. 217  
 Turk Gregory, iv. 509  
 turlygood, viii. 388  
 Turnbull'street, v. 71  
 turns, vii. 41, 212  
 turn Turk, ix. 209  
 turquoise, iii. 52  
 twangling, iii. 368  
 twelve-score, iv. 460  
 twiggen, ix. 337  
 ty'd, vi. 355  
 type, vi. 24, 230  
 tything, viii. 411

## V

- Vail, ii. 185 ; iii. 429 ; v. 12 ;  
     vii. 170 ; viii. 293  
 vailed, ix. 138  
 vailing, ii. 471 ; iii. 8  
 vain, ii. 136 ; iv. 34  
 valanced, ix. 184

- validity, ii. 5 ; iii. 317 ; ix. 72  
 valued, iv. 131  
 vanity, i. 76  
 vantage, ii. 199 ; vii. 165 ; viii. 16 ; ix. 215, 400  
 vant-brace, vi. 422  
 vaporous drop, iv. 145  
 varlet, vi. 397  
 vast, i. 24  
 vaunt, vi. 395 ; viii. 402  
 vaward, ii. 365  
 velure, iii. 385  
 velvet-guards, iv. 470  
 renew, ii. 456  
 veneys, i. 215  
 vengeance, iii. 183  
 vent, vii. 208  
 ventages, ix. 212  
 verbal, viii. 43  
 verified, vii. 222  
 verify, vii. 222  
 very, i. 167  
 vessel, viii. 307  
 via, i. 240 ; ii. 459 ; v. 215  
 vice, ii. 80 ; iii. 456 ; v. 287 ; vi. 181 ; ix. 222  
 vie, vii. 468 ; viii. 283  
 vied, iii. 373  
 viewless, ii. 148  
 villain, iii. 105 ; iv. 11  
 violence, ix. 313  
 virgin alling, iii. 444  
 virtue, i. 9 ; viii. 461  
 virtuous, ii. 357 ; iii. 213 ; vii. 43  
 vixen, ii. 355  
 vizaments, i. 207  
 voice, iii. 55  
 Volquessen, iv. 223  
 volume, vii. 187  
 voluntary, vi. 429  
 votarist, vii. 66  
 vouchers, ix. 259  
 vox, ii. 92  
 vulgar, ii. 53 ; vii. 145  
 vulgarly, ii. 190

## U

- Umber, iii. 123  
 umbered, v. 203  
 unaccustomed, v. 309  
 unanel'd, ix. 158  
 unavoided, iv. 329 ; v. 337 ; vi. 229  
 unbarbed, vii. 184  
 unbated, ix. 253  
 unbent, viii. 67  
 unbolt, vii. 7  
 unbolted, viii. 382  
 unbonneted, ix. 300  
 unbookish, ix. 381  
 unbraided, iii. 509  
 unbreathed, ii. 374  
 uncape, i. 262  
 uncharged, vii. 98  
 unclew, vii. 12  
 uncoined, v. 249  
 unconfirmed, ii. 258  
 undercraft, vii. 134  
 under generation, ii. 177  
 undergoes, ii. 393  
 undersinker, iv. 441  
 understand, iv. 16  
 undertaker, ii. 70  
 underwriter, vi. 443  
 underwrought, iv. 207  
 uneath, v. 412  
 unexpressive, iii. 147  
 unfathered, v. 95  
 ungartered, i. 131  
 unhappily, vi. 297 ; ix. 237  
 unhappiness, vi. 132  
 unhappy, iii. 303 ; iv. 58  
 unhidden, v. 142  
 unhoused, ix. 300  
 unhouse'd, ix. 158  
 unicorn, vii. 78, 274  
 union, ix. 279  
 unity, vi. 506  
 unkind, iii. 144 ; v. 331  
 unknown, vi. 465  
 unlicked, vi. 63  
 unmanned, ix. 67  
 unmastered, ix. 146



unnecessary, viii. 394  
 unowed, iv. 270  
 unpolicied, vii. 476  
 unpregnant, ix. 189  
 unproper, ix. 379  
 unqualitied, vii. 470  
 unquestionable, iii. 160  
 unready, v. 289  
 unrespective, vi. 215, 433  
 unrest, viii. 169  
 unrough, iv. 173  
 unsanctified, viii. 448  
 unsifted, ix. 149  
 unsisting, ii. 170  
 unsmirched, ix. 242  
 unsquared, vi. 417  
 unstanchd, i. 7  
 unstate, viii. 355  
 untempering, v. 251

Wafts, iv. 23  
 wage, ix. 305  
 waged, vii. 238  
 wages, viii. 300  
 waist, i. 18; ix. 142  
 waiting-women, vi. 504  
 walk, i. 300  
 walks, iv. 258  
 wall-newt, viii. 411  
 wan'd, vii. 366  
 wannion, viii. 261  
 wanton, iv. 500; ix. 280  
 ward, i. 32, 243; iii. 211; vi. 410  
 warden pies, iii. 498  
 warder, iv. 108, 309  
 warn, vi. 142; vii. 324  
 wash, iii. 395; vii. 291  
 wassel candle, v. 20  
 wassels, ii. 472; iv. 108; vii. 361; ix. 151  
 wasteful, vii. 36  
 watch, vi. 247  
 water-fly, ix. 271  
 waters, ii. 78  
 water-work, v. 32  
 wax, ii. 459; vii. 7; ix. 22

untented, viii. 371  
 untraded, vi. 492  
 untrimmed, iv. 234  
 untruth, iv. 335  
 unvalued, vi. 155  
 unwashed hands, iv. 484  
 upon, vii. 137, 234  
 up-spring, ix. 151  
 urchins, i. 24, 287; viii. 172  
 usances, iii. 21  
 use, ii. 115, 232; iii. 477; vi. 347, 427; vii. 17  
 used, vi. 330  
 usurpation, v. 10  
 usurping, ii. 449  
 utis, v. 43  
 utter, iii. 513  
 utterance, iv. 129; viii. 55

## W

waxen, ii. 322  
 way, iv. 175; vi. 362  
 weal, iv. 141  
 weal-balanced, ii. 177  
 wealth, iii. 95  
 wear, ii. 156  
 weazel, viii. 69  
 web, iii. 451; viii. 411  
 wee, i. 222  
 weeds, ii. 489  
 ween, vi. 367  
 weet, vii. 345  
 weigh, iii. 270; vi. 366  
 weird, iv. 88  
 welkin, iii. 445; vi. 258  
 well-a-near, viii. 281  
 well-appointed, v. 73  
 well-liking, ii. 469  
 Welsh hook, iv. 452  
 wen, v. 28  
 wend, ii. 179, 357; iv. 10  
 wheel, ix. 244  
 whelked, viii. 440  
 whe'r, i. 94; iv. 196  
 where, i. 155; ii. 413; iv. 13, v. 444  
 whiffler, v. 239

whiles, ii. 81  
 whip, vii. 131  
 whip-stock, viii. 269  
 whirring, viii. 295  
 whistle, viii. 429  
 white, iii. 430  
 white death, iii. 248  
 whiting, i. 261  
 whitsters, i. 257  
 whittle, vii. 92  
 whooping, iii. 154  
 why, iv. 340  
 wicked, i. 24  
 wide, ii. 268 ; vi. 451  
 wild, vii. 84  
 wilderness, ii. 149  
 will, ix. 358  
 wimpled, ii. 425  
 Winchester goose, v. 278  
 windows, viii. 37  
 winking, iv. 212  
 winners, ii. 552  
 winter-ground, viii. 93  
 wis, iii. 47  
 wish, iii. 347 ; ix. 306  
 wished, vii. 83  
 wit, viii. 307, 409  
 witch, iv. 489 ; vi. 427  
 with, i. 272 ; vii. 471  
 withhold, viii. 411  
 witnessed, v. 10  
 wittol, i. 245  
 witty, vi. 215  
 woe, i. 96 ; viii. 307  
 woman, iii. 265 ; ix. 255  
 woman-tired, iii. 472

Yare, ii. 168 ; vii. 475  
 yarely, i. 5 ; vii. 377  
 years, v. 219  
 years, ii. 477  
 yield, iii. 263 ; vii. 434  
 yellow, iii. 473

wondered, i. 80  
 woo, vii. 83  
 wood, i. 137 ; v. 343  
 woodcock, ii. 285  
 wooden, v. 353  
 woodman, i. 300 ; ii. 180 ; viii.  
 78  
 woollen, ii. 224  
 woolward, ii. 486  
 word, iv. 393 ; viii. 267  
 words, vi. 111 ; viii. 17  
 work, vi. 380  
 working-days, v. 222  
 workings, v. 82  
 world, ii. 264 ; iii. 194, 374 ; iv.  
 393  
 worm, vii. 474  
 worship, vii. 453  
 worth, ii. 58 ; vi. 446 ; vii.  
 187  
 worts, i. 209 ; ii. 327  
 wot, i. 238  
 wound, i. 49  
 wreak, vii. 203 ; viii. 207  
 wrest, vi. 461  
 wrested, iv. 270  
 wretch, ix. 352  
 wring, iii. 352  
 wrings, i. 14 ; viii. 80  
 writ, ix. 183  
 writhled, v. 294  
 wrongs, i. 282 ; iv. 341 ; vi.  
 243  
 wrought, iii. 549 ; iv. 95  
 wrung, viii. 207

## Y

yellowness, i. 221  
 yeoman, v. 27 ; ix. 269  
 yesty, iv. 150  
 yet, iv. 268  
 yew, iv. 850  
 yokes, i. 304

## Z

Zanies, ii. 18

zany, ii. 477

THE END.

---

C. Baldwin, Printer,  
New Bridge Street, London.



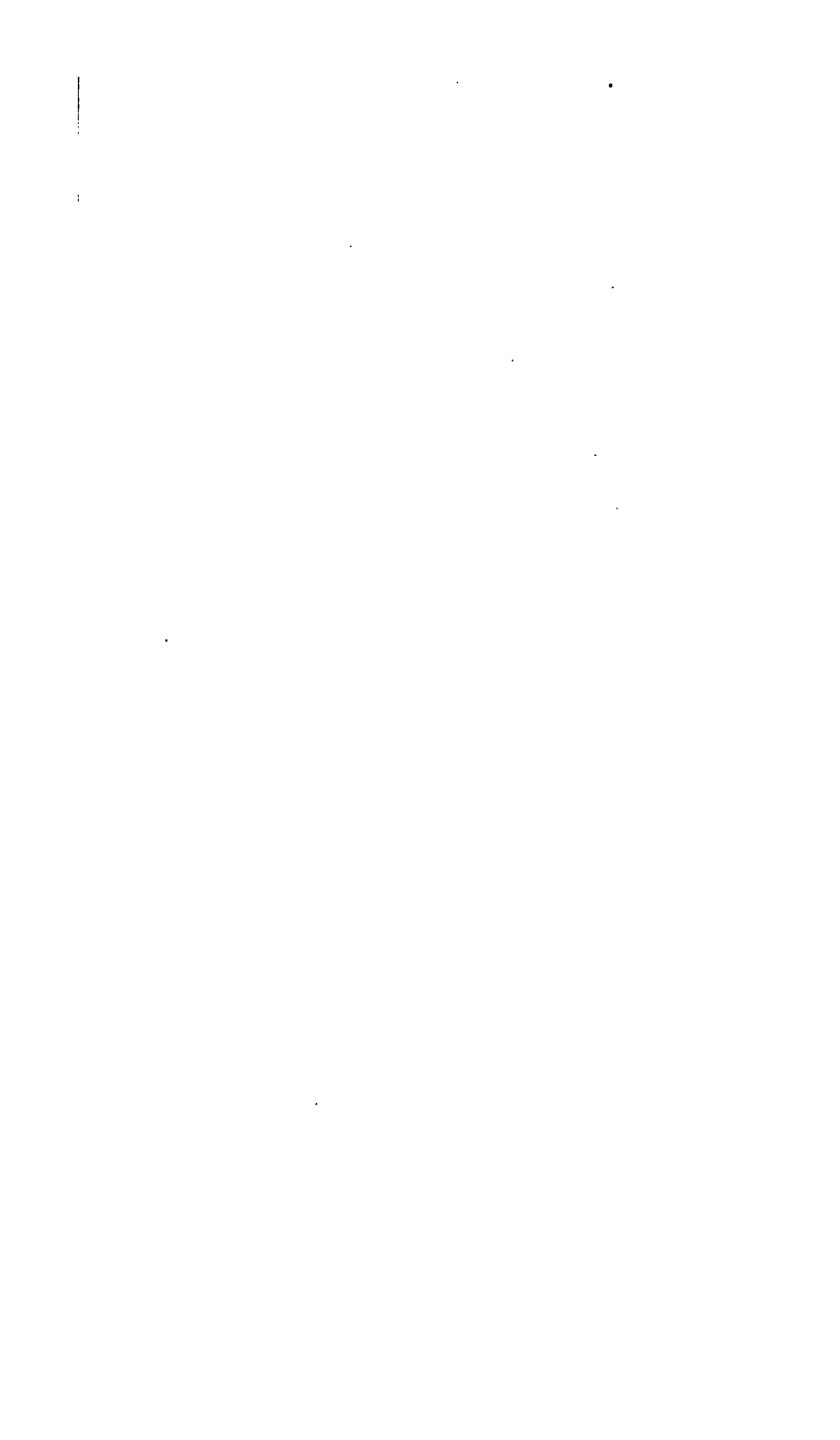


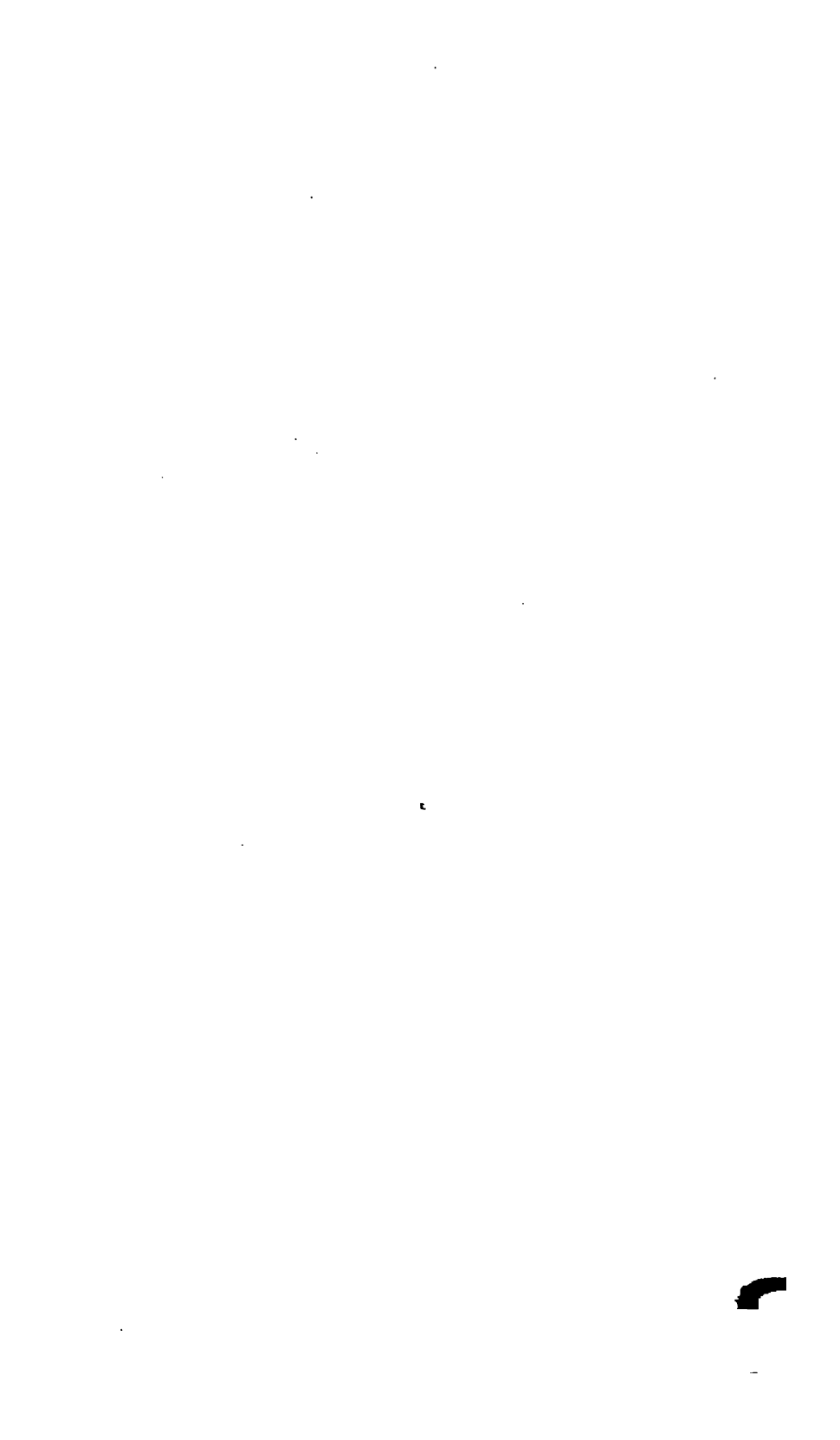


1









THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY  
REFERENCE DEPARTMENT

**This book is under no circumstances to be  
taken from the Building**

[illegible]



